

LEGENDS AND MYTHS

OF THE

ABORIGINAL INDIANS OF BRITISH GUIANA

COLLECTED AND EDITED BY THE REV.

WILLIAM HENRY BRETT, B.D.,

*Missionary in connection with the S. P. G.; Chaplain to the Lord Bishop of Guiana;
and Late Rector of the Parish of Holy Trinity, Essiquibo.*

LONDON:

WILLIAM WELLS GARDNER,

2, PATERNOSTER BUILDINGS.

{Reduced to HTML by Christopher M. Weimer, March 2003}

[Next](#)

p. v

PREFACE

THE chief object of the present work has been to preserve, and to give at one view, the more serious traditions—religious, mythological, and historical—of the four aboriginal races who live nearest the shores of Guiana.

- A few of these legends appeared in a former work on the Indian tribes. To them are here added the more copious results of systematic research, extending over many years. A metrical form has been adopted, as agreeable to the native style in former days, when their national traditions were recited with peculiar intonation—chanted, rather than told.

- The head-men, mostly sorcerers, who guarded, and from time to time recited them, have, in the vicinity of our missions, nearly all passed away. Many time-honoured legends have expired with them, as the old state of things has yielded to the spread of Christianity.

p. vi

- The foregoing remarks apply only to the more *serious* traditions. Fanciful legends, of which a few specimens are also given here, are common to all. Some are very popular, and will probably continue to be told, for the purpose of amusement, over their evening fires, as long as the native languages shall be spoken.

[Next](#)

CONTENTS.

—
PART I.

	PAGE
LEGENDS OF THE ARAWÂKS	1

PART II.

LEGENDS OF THE WARRAUS	49
------------------------	----

PART III.

LEGENDS OF THE CARIBS	87
-----------------------	----

PART IV.

LEGENDS OF THE ACAWOIOS•	123
--------------------------	-----

PART V.

FANCIFUL LEGENDS	163
------------------	-----

[Next](#)

CONTENTS OF PART I.

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	3
I. OF THE SUPREME BEING.	
• Origin of Living Creatures (Legend of the Ceiba Tree)	7
• Origin of the White Race	8
• The Fire and the Flood	10
• Ideas of a Future State	14
II. THE ARAWÂK SORCERER'S LEGENDS.	
• Arawanili and the Orehu	15
• Appendix to the Legend (Biter Bit)	23
• Arawidi (A Fragment)	26
III. HISTORICAL AND WARLIKE LEGENDS.	
• The Cannibal Mounds	30
• The Fight on the Bowruma	35
• The Fight on the Haimâra Cabura	39
• The Fight on the Waiini	44
• Alliance and Intereourse with White Men	46
CONCLUSION	47

•The Arawâks formerly inhabited the whole of the West Indian Islands. Those in the Lesser Antilies were exterminated by the Caribs, before the discovery of America by Columbus. The inhabitants of the larger island perished soon after that event, under the oppression of the Spaniards.

•The few Arawâks who dwell near the coast of Guiana and whose legends are here given are now the only known representatives of a gentle and once numerous race.

[Next](#)

p. 3

Legends of the Arawáks.

—

INTRODUCTION.

'Twas long ago! yet still I view
The scene to me then fresh and new,
•Where two fair rivers flow;
Where stately moras tower above,
And palms wave gently in the grove,
•As pleasant breezes blow.

p. 4

I see, as natives pass me there,
Bright copper skins and jet black hair;
While one whose face is kind and fair
•The forest trees lays low.

Alone that Indian came to me,
A young white stranger's friend to be;
And hoping that the white man's "word"
Might to the red men light afford.
So when, oppressed by noontide glow,
He sought my hut—too close and low;
We to the river would repair,
And talk of Christ's religion there.

There painted Caribs in our view
Would pass us in their light canoe,
•And slowly glide away.
We saw grim alligators sleep,
And languid lizards near them creep,
•In the meridian ray.
And there—while no sweet breeze above
Would stir the leaves and cheer the grove,
And water-lilies scarce could move—
•Would wait the cool of day.

There he of God and of the soul
Would question in the "Dutch Creole;"
A "*patois*" I could daily hear
From an old negress living near,
p. 5
And could reply to, *right or wrong*.
But when he spoke his own sweet tongue,
Too hard it was to understand,
Though helped by signs with head or hand!

Time passed: he heard in his own tongue
Truths which to Christian faith belong.
•*Then*, first, to God he prayed.
And I from him their legends heard,
With that old superstitious "word"
•Which he before obeyed.
Of spirits good and bad he told;
Of sorcerers and warriors bold;
But chief, *this* legend, grave and old,
•Of *HIM* who all things made.

p. 6

I. OF THE SUPREME BEING.

THERE is a mighty One above: and like Him there is none!
He sits on high, above the sky, where none can see His throne.
He was there ere He made the world, with stars, and moon, and sun;
And evermore He will be there; when each its course has run.

Our tongue gives Him no proper name, but titles more than one;
We call Him "Dweller in the Height," 1 since there He sits alone.
The "Great Our Father," 2 though to Him for comfort none have gone,
And of "Our Maker" 3 oft we speak, but *never call upon*.

That Mighty Maker all things formed; 'tis He that made them move;
And food for all things He bestows, which seems a proof of love.
••But calm He sits above the sky,
••To Him for succour none can fly,
•••He is so *high above*!

p. 7

ORIGIN OF LIVING CREATURES. (*Legend of the Ceiba Tree.*)

Here, beneath this sacred tree,
•Old men told how moon and sun,
Earth and sky, and wide-spread sea,
•Lay before the Mighty One.
High He stood, where rivers run,
Pausing, ere His work was done!

Waves, soft murm'ring, beat the strand,
•Gentle breezes sighed above.
Still no life was in the land,
•No sweet birds sang songs of love.
O'er the plain and through the grove,
Nothing then was seen to move.

Then his seat, "Komaka," 1 there—
•Wondrous tree!—He caused to grow.
'Midst the clouds its branches were,
•Earth and sea lay far below.
Sacred trees we this day know;
None such vast dimensions show.

From that bright-green throne, His hand
•Scattered twigs and bark around.
Some in air, and some on land;
•Some the sparkling waters found.
Soon He saw with life abound
Water, air, and solid ground!

p. 8

Those which fell upon the stream
•Found a pleasant shelter there:
Shining fishes dart and gleam
•Where those woody fragments were;
Others sported through the air,
Bright with wings and feathers fair.

Moving, too, on solid ground,
•Or the river's marshy strand,
Beasts and reptiles then were found,
•Spreading thence to fill the land.
Men and women upright stand,
Raised by their great Maker's hand.

—

Wild fruits first were human food;
•Water man's sole drink, they say.
No bold hunters roamed the wood;
•None would then take life away;
Beasts and birds would sport and play
With young children day by day.

On this earth our sire then came
•(Young and brave "Wadili" he),
Saw their maidens, felt love's flame,
•Took them, fair, his wives to be;
Taught the native arts you see:
Hunting, fishing, husbandry.

ORIGIN OF THE WHITE RACE.

Some addition has been made
•To that legend, grave and old;
Since our fathers here surveyed

p. 9

•Steel-clad white men, strong and bold.
They, with blood-hounds, we are told,
Hunted men—and all for gold!

"Not from the Komaka tree
•Sprang the whites," our sages say;
"They from wood cast on the sea
•Rose, amidst wild ocean's spray,
Finding land on which to stay
O'er the waters—far away."

"If from wood our race has sprung,
•Did it in these forests grow?
Did it to 'green-heart' belong?
•'Locust,' or 'balata?' No?
Did its foliage ruddy glow
With a mora's strength below?

"Ask no more, friend, you are wrong.
•Those trees give us, day by day,
Bark, or gums, and timber strong:
•Useful gifts they all convey.
But the white man's stock, they say,
Good for nought, was cast away!"

Smiles on every face appear,
•Red men, seated on the ground,
Laugh—that satire old to hear:
•Mild revenge! which poor men found,
Who escaped, in swamps around,
Spanish "arcabuz" and hound!

p. 10

THE FIRE AND THE FLOOD.

Traditions of a deluge, we are told,
In the New World prevailed, as in the Old.
Those of our Arawâks may seem absurd,
Yet stranger tales from inland tribes are heard.
And far more wild were those which (Spaniards show)
Were told by that same race in Bohio
(Or Hayti)—for their race at first possessed
Those lovely islands all, whose charms adorn the west.

'Twas said in Hayti, that from magic gourd,
By accident o'erturned, the deluge poured;
Till then that wondrous gourd enclosed could keep
The num'rous finny tribes that swim the deep.
No trace of that wild legend I have found,
Though strange were the traditions all around.
The Arawâks, peculiar, understood
That *fire* had swept the earth *before* the water-flood.

THE LEGENDS.

I.

Fire is mighty—all-subduing!
••Once its fury came,
When the Maker, roused, was viewing
••Deeds of blood and shame—
Evil raging, goodness failing—
Then on earth, his wrath prevailing,
••Came the burning flame.

p. 11

Timely warning came from heaven:
••"Fire shall sweep the land!"
One who heard that warning given
••Sought a reef of sand.
By that chieftain's wisdom guided,
Some a refuge there provided
••For their little band.

"Here," said he, "a pit preparing,
••Wives and children hide.
Timber strong, the sand-roof bearing.
••We must first provide.
Piles will keep that shelter o'er us;
Comrades, work!—the vault before us
••Must be deep and wide.

"Felling next the trees, and burning.
••All around make clear;
Shrubs and grass to ashes turning,
••Leave we nothing here—
Nothing on which flames can fasten.
Clear and burn! O brothers! hasten,
••Ere the flames appear!

••••*••*••*

Clouds of smoke, the sun concealing,
••Come, still rolling nigher;
Then fierce flames, their might revealing.
••Wrap the woods in fire.
Onward comes the blazing torrent;
That burnt "clearing" stays its current;
••*There*—the flames expire.

p. 12

Thither, from that danger flying,
•Birds and beasts repair.
In their vault those men are lying;
•Smoke and heat they bear.
While the flames around are roaring,
And the fiery hail is pouring,
•Finding safety there.

••••*••*••*

Coming forth, they see the ruin
Through the lurid flame;
Ashes, which those flames were strewing,
•Spread funereal gloom.
Blackened skeletons there lying
Show where men and beasts, when flying,
•Met their awful doom!

II.

Time flowed on. That fearful danger
•Long had passed away;
Punishment became a stranger;
•All had gone astray.
Violence and wrong abounded;
Men with evil good confounded,
•Growing worse each day.

Evil ways have evil ending.
•When a warning—new
Told them of a *flood* impending,
•None believed it true.
Till Mar•rew•na, hearing,
For his wife and children fearing,
•Made a great canoe.

p. 13

Some among his nearest neighbours
•Said he was to blame;
Others, mocking at his labours,
•Strove to give him shame.
Still they found him at it working,
Morn and eve, no labour shirking,
•Ere "great waters" came.

"Make it large, Mar•rew•na!
•Strong and fair to view:
Over forest and savannah
•Float—the deluge through!"
Thus they mocked their anxious neighbour,
Mocked him at his heavy labour,
•Laughed at his canoe!

Archéd roof he thatched above it,
•Palm leaves strong and warm;
Firm, that no fierce wind might move it,
•Ready for the storm.
"Here," said he, "my loved ones, hiding,
Through the tempest safe abiding,
•May be kept from harm."

Still he feared; and said with sorrow,
•"When this flood shall come,
We may drift (perhaps to-morrow),
•Through the salt-sea foam!"
Said a voice, "That great tree near thee,
Moor to *that*—thy craft shall bear thee
•Safely near thy home!"

••••*••*••*

p. 14

Then, with lengthened bush-ropes mooring,
•(So our legends tell),
He and his, the flood enduring,
•Weathered surge and swell
When the waters left them, stranded,
Near their former home they landed,
•Known—and loved—so well!

—

IDEAS OF A FUTURE STATE.

Columbus told how, on fair Cuba's isle,
Where, spent with toil, he sought repose awhile,
And gentle natives welcomed him to land,
A venerable elder took his hand.
Full fourscore years had bowed that old man's head,
And to the Admiral thus solemnly he said—

"Great is thy power, O chief! But be not vain;
And from all violence and wrong abstain.
For, *after death*, there are before the soul
Two ways; each ending in a final goal.
To light and life all the kind-hearted go,
The cruel and unkind to dark and dismal woe!"

Belief like that—almost as clear—I found
Among the heathen Arawâks around.
Like origin with that old man they claim,
Although their tribe may bear another name.
And scarcely different from his we deem
Their knowledge of one Lord, Eternal and Supreme.

p. 15

Why did not they then on their "Father" call,
Until the Christian teachers summoned all
To join in prayer unto the common Lord?
The reason our next legend will afford.
Here, as elsewhere, we *superstition* find,
Excluding true religion from the darkened mind.

—

II. THE ARAWAK SORCERER'S LEGEND. (1841.)

ARAWANILI AND THE OREHU.

THE shadows now lengthen, and evening steals o'er us,
•Tall forests will soon hide the sun;
Our work being done, to the river before us
•My little red Indians run.
With gay, merry shouts, and long hair wildly streaming,
•They plunge from a stump, one by one;
And little of danger from water-snakes deeming,
•Some swim the wide river alone.
'Tis a dream of the past; but how oft in such dreaming
•I view their glad sports going on!

Their gay, happy shouts, from the river ascending,
•Seem echoed from yonder clear sky;
With hundreds of voices from parrots there blending,
•As homeward green parrots now fly.

p. 16

The bright macaw's scream may be heard in the chorus,
•The toucan may add his harsh cry;
But mutely, on yonder tree, leafless before us,
•The sloth gazes round from on high.
Ah! let him beware; for now, hovering o'er us,
•His foe, the bush-eagle, is nigh!

While through the dense forest the echoes are ringing
•Of those merry boys at their play,
Sweet, silvery laughter the breezes are bringing—
•The girls are in their little bay;
••Where the water seems flashing,
••With mermaidens dashing,
•And diving, and swimming away!

And now, though from distance we hear not the dash,
We can see, far away, where the calm waters flash,
•As they catch the sun's evening rays.
'Tis the stroke of some paddles disturbing their calm,
And we see a canoe, where yon manicole palm
•Its fair, slender beauty displays,
Lowly bending, as if 'twould its Maker adore,
••While myriads more
••Wave along the green shore,
As the breeze seems to whisper His praise.

Soon we see that canoe to our landing draw near,
With two Arawák men, their wives, children, and gear;
They are soon on the bank, and assisting to land
Their two aged parents, with kind, loving hand.

p. 17

And tall is that patriarch, chief of his clan,
Though he leans on his staff as a feeble old man;
What he bears, wrapped in palm-leaves, I cannot well see,
But all shrink from its sound, as he hands it to me.

"O Maraka-kore!" for so did they call,
In their own native language, that sorcerer tall,
(Which name means "Red-rattle," denoting his trade,
Or that instrument rather, which dupes of them made);
"Say, why do you bring your 'maraka' to-day,
With its handle adorned with birds' feathers so gay,
And the stones rattling in it, the demons to scare,
Or attract to the sick, as your people declare?"

"In token that I from these things turn away,
And renounce evil spirits; I bring this to-day,
From your neighbour Cornelius we hear the 'good word';
We believe, and are thankful for what we have heard.
On myself and my wife feeble age has come on,
And we wish to be christened ere life shall be gone."

Such, in substance, he said; and I need not here tell
Of those of his brethren who gave theirs as well.

●●●●*●●*●●*●●*●●*●●*

"Pray tell me, old man," I one day to him said,
"What were your traditions respecting your trade?
Who was the first sorcerer? How came you to use
This rattle, when demons you charm or abuse?"

Being urged by his sons and some friends who were near,
He told a tradition they all longed to hear."

p. 18

THE LEGEND.

A chieftain grave, both wise and brave—

•Good Arawânili—

Stood mournful by the silver wave

•Of the wide-spread ocean sea.

His heart was sore; the plume he wore,

•As chief of Kaieri,1

Drooped—while he listened on the shore

•To the sigh of that ocean sea.

Then, in his view, bright Orehu

•(The Water-Mother she)

Rose, glistening as with drops of dew,

•Or pearls—from the ocean sea.

Her beauty rare, which glossy hair

•Enveloped, flowing free,

More lovely made those waters fair,

•And shores of the ocean sea.

"Tell me thy grief," she said, "O chief!

•The grief of Kaieri;

And I, perchance, may bring relief

•From the depths of the ocean sea!"

p. 19

"'Tis for the dead," the chieftain said,

•"For whom I nought could do,

To help them, ere their spirits fled,

•From torturing Yauhahu."

"Throughout this isle, man, wife, or child,
•By fever crushed, I view;
By demons' arrowsl driven wild,
•Dire shafts of Yauhahu!

"Were mortal foe to work us woe,
•Their deeds they soon should rue!
But none, *without a charm*, I trow,
•Can face the Yauhahu.

"Thy helping hand may save this land:
•Lady! for that I sue.
Grant me some charm, which may withstand,
•And quell the Yauhahu!"

"I hear, O chief! thy tale of grief,
•Thy people's grief," said she,
"And thou shalt thank, for their relief,
•The lady of the sea.

"Go, plant with care this branch I bear
•And rear the 'ida' tree,
Where, on yon hill, thy cottage there
•O'erlooks this pleasant sea.

p. 20

"When fruit is found, full large and round
•And heavy it will be;
Take that which first falls on the ground,
•And meet me by the sea!"

••••*••*••*

Slow from his gaze withdrew her face,
•As in the wave sank she.
The tree he reared then at his place,
•And watched—the deep blue sea!

●●●●*●●*●●*

His watch was o'er, when to the shore
•The *calabash* bore he.
The Water-Mother there, once more
•Met Arawânili.

Its rind with care he emptied there,
•Through holes like these you see.
She brought its handle, feathered fair,
•For Arawânili.

And while he wrought, she dived and sought
•The gems of ocean sea;
And stones of shining white she brought
•To Arawânili.

Tobacco, too, which none then knew,
•(Though common now) brought she:
With charms, which made all Yauhahu
•Dread Arawânili.

p. 21

To her he owed the power he showed,
•None since like him could be—
So rich the gifts her love bestowed
•On Arawânili!

●●●●*●●*●●*

Still, to this day, in stream or bay,
•The Orehu men see.
But "high above," grown old, they say,
•Rests Arawânili.

—

When Numa, as was thought,
•A kind Egeria found,
The sacred, mystic rites she taught
•The Roman people bound.
Here red men hold what (they were told)
•The Spirit of the sea,
By love constrained, in days of old,
•Taught Arawânili.

The old man said, "That word
•We sorcerers received,
Till of 'our Father's' love we heard,
•And some of us believed.
"We knew *before* that all we see
•*He* made, both great and small;
But ne'er were taught to Him to flee,
•Whatever might befall."

p. 22

'Twas so. The heathen all
•Said, "God, above the sky,
Can never listen to our call,
•He is so great and high.
"But demons who, by day or night,
•Cause pain and sickness sore,
We must propitiate, or 'fight,'
For man can do no more!"

Teach them the Saviour's word:
•That God doth condescend
To be to us a gracious Lord,
•A Father, and a Friend.
When they believe He *heareth men*,
•Though suffering, weak, and poor,
They (like Maraka-kore) then
•To demons seek no more.

—

APPENDIX TO THE LEGEND.

- Allusion was made
- To the tricks in their trade.

Which those Indian sorcerers have commonly played.

- Now their *method* we show
- In a story we know

Of what really happened a few years ago.

p. 23

Two white men through our backwoods went, the Indian life to see,
And much they wished of "piai-men" to learn the mystery.
But 'twas in vain, till one declared that he was "taken sick;"
And begged his friend to "lend a hand, to carry out the trick."

They knew a famous piiai-man lived at a place near by;
"Oh come and cure this sick white man!" He answered, "I will try."
And so he brought his implements—no matter who might mock,
He'd win the battle with the rattle Creoles call "shok-shok."

He first the females sternly bade to "take themselves away."
They all forthwith fled like the wind, too much afraid to stay.
He then made up his sacred fire, to burn the sacred weed,
His patient thought, "I like a *smoke*, but this is waste indeed!"

His incantations then commenced, most terrible to hear,
Both to the patient and the men who might be ling'ring near.
He roared, he shouted at the fiends; perhaps he dared to curse;
'Twas all in vain; the patient groaned, and said, "I'm getting worse!"

p. 24

He next inhaled tobacco smoke, much as his mouth could hold:
And blew it on the sick white man, who thought, "He's getting bold.
It may be only want of sense—to fumigate my clothes;
But must be downright impudence to blow it up my nose!"

He next on the affected part his hands began to rub;
The patient grew convulsed at that, 'twas such a ticklish job.
With strong, but stifled, laughter, soon his body shook all o'er;
That *tickling* was too much for him—he could hold out no more!

He laughed outright, then feebly tried to make that laugh a groan;
It would not do! the doctor knew the difference of tone.
He saw that he was being tricked, yet went on with his work;
Not altering a muscle, but as grave as any Turk.

According to their ancient rules, his mouth he next applied,
To suck out what was Causing pain in that white man's inside.
Then from his mouth he would have spit nail, thorn, a claw, or pin,
And said, "From this sick man I've drawn what Yauhahu put in!"

p. 25

Now when our white friend's flesh was sucked, he strove to turn away,
But "red-skin" meant to earn his fee, and would not be said "nay."
He seized him boldly *with his teeth*—it was a grip full sore—
And, with a yell, the patient fell, out on the earthen floor!

Most cool the doctor was. By signs he made his meaning plain:
"Get back into that hammock. I must operate again!"
But the other shook his head, and said that *that* would "never do!"
Then showed his friend his injured side, and said 'twas "bitten through."

But he replied, "This savage doctor knows a thing or two,
So do not quarrel with him, it would be much worse for you;
I'll tell him he has made a cure, and give a handsome fee."
So he, with cash and fame secure, walked off triumphantly.

—

From this, gentle reader, you get a small view
Of what those men make a sick person go through:
The clash of the rattle, and shouts, causing fear,
Must be most distressing and painful to hear.
Then the fumes of tobacco, and smoke of the fire,
Will scarcely allow the poor wretch to respire.

They spare not themselves! When a man's on probation,
And learning the mysteries of his vocation,
He's shut up, and half-starved; then, to take his degree,
Drinks tobacco decoction, as strong as can be,
Till he sinks in a trance: and revives—an M.D.!

p. 26

THE MORAL.

If you near red-skinned sorcerers go,
•Though all things may seem handy,
Don't let them on *your* person show
•Their "modus operandi."
Speak always truth, and *without fail*
•*To doctors*—wild or tame—
Such are the lessons of our tale,
•Which "Biter bit" we name.

—

ARAWIDI. (A Fragment.)

Our women have strong drink prepared,
•And view the gallant show—
Where, gaily crowned, our men advance;
Bright feathers waving in the dance,
•As round the house they go.

There learned sorc'ers sit or stand,
•Who chant our ancient lore:
And, as they chant, responsive song
Is heard in chorus, loud and long,
•Re-echoed o'er and o'er.

••••*••*••*

p. 27

THE LEGENDS.

"Adaili is the glorious sun"
•(Thus their first legend ran),
"But when of old on earth he came,
Then 'Arawidi' was his name:
•His fashion—that of man.

"Once, fishing on a fav'rite stream,
•He made a dam, or weir,
And said, 'This stream must not run dry,
Lest, in my visits from the sky,
•I find no fishes here.'

"The otters heard. They broke his dam,
•And let the waters flow.
Then he, compelled to seek for aid,
Its guardian the woodpecker made—
•His watchman—here below.

"One day, while passing through the sky,
•Loud tapping caught his ear.
Swift darting to that spot below,
He found a fierce and mailed foe—
•The alligator—near.

"He seized him with a mighty hand,
•Whose grip could never fail;
Then smote, to make the reptile yield,
With that hard club he well could wield,
•Upon his head and tail.

p. 28

"Oh, Arawidi, slay me not!"
•The alligator cried:
'Cease, cease to wound! Thy suppliant spare,
And I will give a maiden fair
•To be thy beauteous bride.'

"He called his friends, the water-sprites,
•The maiden to provide;
And soon a girl, of wondrous charms,
Was placed in Arawidi's arms,
•To be his lovely bride.

••••*••*••*

"The reptile's wounds were healed. Those blows
•No more his hide assail;
But still their marks are seen, 'tis said,
Indented on his battered head
•And *notched along his tail!*"

••••*••*••*

Then tales were told of others' fate
•(Wild children of the sun),
With song and dance, till evening late
•Their tuneful course would run.
And when the third day closed the feast,
When drink had failed and dancing ceased,
•Those legends scarce were done!

NOTE TO ARAWIDI.

- One apparent object of the great chain of legends, to which this belongs, was to give a mythical origin to the peculiarities of the various animals of Guiana, in connection with the deeds of the heroic personages of their national folk-lore.
- In the foregoing tale of Arawidi, those of the *alligator's* personal p. 29 appearance are accounted for. In other legends, those of monkeys, jaguars, &c., were treated of. The fragmentary tale of the "Royal Vultures," of which the following outline was told to the writer by the Arawâks of Tapacuma, will show how they dealt with *birds*—real or fictitious.
- "A bold young Arawâk hunter captures a beautiful royal vulture. She is the daughter of Anuanima, sovereign of a race which has its country above the sky. When at home there, they cease to be birds, and assume the form and habits of *human beings*. The captive, smitten with love for her handsome captor, lays aside her feathers, and appears before him as a beautiful girl. She becomes his wife, bears him above the clouds, and, after much trouble, persuades her father and family to receive him. All then goes well, until he expresses a wish to visit his aged mother, when they discard him, and set him on the top of a very high tree, the trunk of which is covered with formidable prickles. He appeals pathetically to all the living creatures around. Then spiders spin cords to help him, and fluttering birds ease his descent, so that at last he reaches the ground in safety."
- Then follow his efforts, extending over several years, to regain his wife, whom he tenderly loves. "Her family seek to destroy him, but by his strength and sagacity he is victorious in every encounter. The birds at length espouse his cause, assemble their forces, and bear him as their commander above the sky. He is at last slain by a valiant young warrior, resembling himself in person and features. It is *his own son*, born after his expulsion from the upper regions, and brought up there in ignorance of his father."
- The legend ends with the conflagration of the house of the royal vultures, who, "hemmed in by crowds of hostile birds, are unable to use their wings, and forced to fight and die in their human forms."

- The peculiarities of various birds common to the country are, in the episodes of this wild legend, whimsically accounted for. The following are instances:—
- The "kiskedee," though a valiant little bird, disliked the war, and bandaged his head with white cotton, pretending to be sick. p. 30 Being detected by more resolute warriors, as the hawk, &c., he was sentenced to wear the bandage continually. In time it marked his plumage; and the white band is still conspicuous on the heads of his descendants, They are also noted for their hostility to hawks and other large birds, whom they attack incessantly when on the wing.
- The "warracobba" (trumpeter bird) and another quarrelled over the spoil, and knocked each other over into the ashes of the burnt house. The trumpeter arose with *patches of grey*, which are still seen on the plumage of his children. The other bird, which had been *rolled* in the ashes, became *grey all over*.
- The *owl* round among the spoil a package, done up with great care, which he thought would enrich him for life. It was a magical package, prepared by the foe for some emergency, and containing *darkness*. The darkness enveloped him as he opened it, and he has never since been able to endure the light of day!
- Thus—often whimsical and puerile, but displaying much fertility and boldness of invention, with here and there touches of romantic beauty—were the mythical tales of the Arawâk race in the days of yore. When the piai system began slowly to fade before Christianity, those legends, in their pure and connected shape, were no longer preserved. Their few remaining fragments are now distorted, intermixed, and in no two districts told alike.

—

III.

HISTORICAL AND WARLIKE LEGENDS OF THE ARAWÂKS. (1865-66.)

THE CANNIBAL MOUNDS.

THERE are boats and canoes, with their gay colours flying,
Whose strange motley crews oars and paddles are plying;
They come from the sea, where a vessel is lying,

p. 31

- Which has from our city run down.
 - Their course they are steering
 - To this mission "clearing,"
- Where on our thatched chapel the cross is appearing,
- Above a small Indian town.

There is firing of guns, where our people are standing,
And multitudes welcome the Governor landing,

- Whose uniform glitters with gold.
 - His "aides" there attendant
 - In helmets resplendent;
- Their smart handsome bets, and bright scabbards dependent,
- The red men, delighted, behold.
- Then come other gentlemen, welcomed with cheering;
But most the good Bishop—all hail his appearing
- Once more—at that Indian fold.

Men of every tribe come, our summons obeying,

- And nearly two thousand there stand.
- Helped by the Archdeacon, who with us is staying,
- We keep the wild throng well in hand.
- They who stand in the front decent garments are wearing;
While those sent behind have none such to appear in,
- And—gladly obey the command.

Sun-pictures are taken, our ruler commanding

- Fair views of each scene to provide—
- In one, squalid heathen are sitting or standing,
- With Christians well dressed at their side.
- In another, a *mound* its tall head is uprearing,
A cutting runs through it, which some men are clearing,
- Whilst others are gazing inside.

p. 32

••••*••*••*

That great "barrow" was seen when we first cleared the land;
•And it differs from all things around.
For elsewhere the land is a "reef" of white sand;
•That was made up of *fish-shells*, we round.
Bones of birds and land animals also were there,
So at length I cut through it, to lay the whole bare,
•Which such mystery seemed to surround.

There, among shells and rubbish, were curious stones,
•Broken axe-heads, and implements rare.
But few cared for stones; seeing layers of *bones*—
•*Human* bones—of all sizes laid bare!
Skulls, in fragments long buried, were cast up to view,
And *all* the long bones had been split open too,
•For the *marrow*, by savages there.

Soon the news spread abroad; and our company came
•To that great Waramuri shell mound.
But, meanwhile, other mounds, whose contents were the same,
•By the aid of our Indians, were found.
None their history know—it was long, long ago—
But cannibal habits the human bones show,
•Which in those "kitchen middens" abound.

—

Our white friends have left us: their task being done,
•We see but our Indians there.
And, for our evensong, with the next setting sun,
•To the wide-gaping shell-mound repair.
We go in procession; where, taking the lead,
School-children with banners their teachers precede,
•And the old people bring up the rear.

p. 33

••••Soon, the beautiful strain
••••Of "Jesus shall reign"
•••From that grisly chasm ascends.
•••From its edges above
•••Wave the Lamb and the Dove,
••As o'er it each school-banner bends.
•••This—the emblem of *peace*;
•••May it spread and increase!
•••That—of suffering *love*,
•••Shown by One now above,
••Who to man's supplication attends.

•••And when praise and prayer
•••We had thus offered there,
••The "cutting" was filled in next day;
•••But the human bones found
•••Were not placed in the mound,
•••For all had been taken away,
Then, to seek an old man, through the village I strayed,
Who a bright feathered crown, of the toucans' breasts made,
•Gold and scarlet, was wont to display.

Some had thought that photography was "not quite right;"
And the artist's strange movements seemed magical quite
So that old man had shifted his place on the sand,
•And caused a great deal of delay;
For the camera's use he could not understand,
•Though he saw it was not meant for play.
••Some had said 'twas "a gun:"
••And—though he would not run—
To have it aimed at him seemed very queer fun;
•And he kept getting out of the way.

Yet he was a wise elder upon his own ground,
•Where no such adventures befel.
There, with his tall son, my Cornelius I found,
•And other chief leaders as well
Of the wars of their nation those old men would speak,
Legends such as in few years one vainly might seek;
•What I heard from them I will here tell.

THE LEGENDS.

"Our fathers, who at first lived here, fought with the Meyanow;
A savage race, who ate mankind, of habits vile and low.
They, long before, lived on this shore, if our old tales be true;
Who else but they would make such mounds as you have now cut through?"

It was Cornelius who told this: the truth he may have found,
For he was wise, and well he knew all the traditions round,
His ancestors "prevailed," he said, "yet some perhaps had been
Led captive by the cannibals—their bones we might have seen."
But no one knew the certain truth; it was so long ago;
And none with slayers, or with slain, would kindred claim or show.

p. 35

Then said he, "When the Meyanow had all been overthrown,
The Caribs came, and little peace by any race was known.
They seized our goods, killed all who fought, young people took away,
For food or slaves, across the seas, so ancient legends say.

"Those from the islands ceased to come; we for a time had peace;
But Caribs on the mainland seemed in number to increase.
On Orinoco numerous their warriors must have been:
Many on Essequibo dwelt, many on Corentyn.
And throughout Surinam we know they'd many fighting men;
Others, beyond the Marowin, were living in Cayenne.
But everywhere they are the same: they tinge their bodies red,
And with annatto smear their brows, which seem with blood o'erspread."

THE FIGHT ON THE BOWRUMA.

"Caribs from Essequibo banks to our Bowruma came,
In one special season; which was every year the same.
And more and more they harried sore all who were living there,
And made them cry, 'O let us die, 'tis more than man can bear!'

p. 36

"Our fathers then a war chief made, whom all men should obey.
And he, to rid them of the scourge, thought long, and found a way.
He in the forest chose a place; his men then cleared the ground,
And all the trees they cut were laid there, in a circle round,
Their branches all were outwards turned, while in the midst there stood
A strong built house, two arrows' flight from the surrounding wood.

"Now every man give heed to me! we have some months to work,
And then must *fight*, for no man henceforth shall in covert lurk!
So have your weapons well prepared: of arrows get large store.'
And each man make a *buckler*, as our fathers used before.1

"So on the day appointed, to that house they all repair,
There made to be their citadel, and for the fight prepare.
Canoes they at the river leave, for Caribs there to view,
And men to draw them to the place and give the warning due.

"And they have lured now to that spot those warriors fierce and bold:
Who chase their watchmen through the bush till they the house behold.

p. 37

The barricade there makes them pause—still they will not give in,
Pride drives them on to take the place, so they the fight begin.

"Their men who try to clamber o'er the Arawáks shoot down;
Still their resistance, which seems weak, the Caribs hope to drown,
They bend their bows, their arrows keen by hundreds seem to fly,
Our men are galled, for bucklers broad scarce put those arrows by.

"At length is heard their captain's voice—he cheers them with his call:
'O comrades! ye have bravely *borne*, now *fight*, Lokono1 all!
Fight bravely for your children dear—fight bravely for your wives;
You fight now for your parents old—you're fighting for your lives,
This day will clear those wretches from the face of this our land,
Their arrows fail! Now pour in yours, then on them club in hand!"

"Forth from the house run boys—and wives, each to her husband's side,
To hand him arrows, crouching low behind his buckler wide.

p. 38

Swiftly those arrows are poured in; they shoot with might and main,
And all the foremost Caribs are by those keen arrows slain.
The others to the river fly: but foes are there before;
And sternly in the forest they pay off the ancient score,
Till each red-painted warrior there lies redder in his gore!

—

That fight was on the Pomeroun, which we Bowruma call;
A little stream there marks the spot, well known to Indians all."

—

To tell of victory is sweet,
•Defeats few care to name;
But there invaders met defeat
•Who well deserved the same;
For where the Arapaiaco,
And fair Ituribisi, flow,
Those Caribs had spread bitter woe
•With arrow, club, and flame.

While their flotillas swept the sea
•None dared their power defy;
But every canoe would flee
•The "Carinyach!" fierce cry;
By that dread name their race they call;
On those who heard it fear would fall;
The swift might fly, the feeble all
•Would yield themselves to—die!

Their cry, denoting savage power,
•Spread horror and dismay,
On land too, at the midnight hour,
•At dawn or close of day.

p. 39

"Brave men," they sang, "our fathers were,
And we their fame and valour share;
Your lives are ours, your daughters fair
•And goods—must be our prey!"

THE FIGHT ON THE HAIMÂRA-CADURA.

The tellers of this legend were the old man and his son,
Who showed me, on the shady stream, how that fierce fight was won.

—

There is no need to tell again what has been told before;
Of how we suffered, from the Caribs, wrongs both deep and sore.

p. 40

They who oppressed our fathers here from Orinoco came,
Through Barima and Waiini, as we those rivers name.
Each year their painted warriors came, each year those rivers swept;
Poor captive women paddled them; and as they worked they wept.
Long time the Waraus, who lived there, their stern oppression felt;
Until they fled to "ita" swamps, where more secure they dwelt.

The Caribs wasted all that land; then said, "We'll plunder find,
In those parts where Mor•ca and its tributaries wind."
They came; but war canoes, too large, could not from Waiini pass:
Too little water was there then to float them through the grass.

"O friends! ere next wet season comes we must for them prepare!"
So spake our chief, and chose that hill, to make a refuge there.
Then from all parts his brethren came until they mustered strong,
To save their wives and children dear from violence and wrong.

"Now make a camp upon the hill, where women may abide;
We, who are men, will meet our foes down at the river's side."

p. 41

So to the river down they went, and there the captain made
A massive log of heavy wood, which in the stream he laid.
He fixed it tightly in each bank; the spot we now can show—
Just *there*—it near the surface crossed—not two hands'-breadth below.

"Now let each man prepare his club, his arrows, and his bow,
And each a pole, with hook at end—its purpose I will show.
Some go to warn our brethren dear, who near the Waraus dwell;
While some as scouts must watch for foes, and of their coming tell."

As our good chief had told his men, e'en so it came to pass,
When next, in those great swamps, the water overtopped the grass,
Many canoes, with painted crews, all warriors stout and strong,
Slow winding through those narrow streams, came paddling along.

They stopped at every village there, but could no people find;
No people, and of property but little left behind.
That all had down Mor•ca fled, by certain marks was shown,
And sore displeased those Caribs were, because the birds had flown.

p. 42

Yet still they paddle on and on, but no canoes can see;
Until a fishing craft appears, with young men two or three.
"O strive to catch that light canoe, which skims along so fast;
These men we'll chase unto their place, and plunder gain at last!"

They raise on high their dreadful cry: "Carinyach!" echoes round,
As if yon Waram•ri hill hurled back the hateful sound.
Onward they race until their "chase" is seen to disappear
Up this small stream; and, without pause, the Caribs enter here.
And here they have to wind about beneath the trees so high;
Yet still they onward rush and shout, nor think an ambush nigh.
The small craft slackens speed at length—it is not understood—
But they tear on with all their strength, and *strike the sunken wood*.

That first canoe is broken: overthrown are all her crew!
And as they rise, with savage cries, keen arrows strike them through.
Their comrades hasten at their cry, that they may help afford;
And forthwith, on the next canoe, a second shower is poured.
A third, a fourth, a fifth, a sixth—the small stream winding round—
Allows no sight of that fierce fight, they only hear the sound,

p. 43

"Now, forward with your long hooked poles! let no foe get away!
They came without our asking, but we'll press them sore to stay!"
They grapple with those great canoes, they drag them to the land;
And there the brunt of battle is, all fighting hand to hand.
Some use the single-handed club, some that broad hardwood blade,
Two-edged, "sapak•na" called, which by both hands is swayed.

With the last boats the chieftain came—Manarwa¹ he was called;—
His men could not retrieve the fight, the slaughter them appalled.
And so, with two or three canoes, vowing revenge, he fled,
While our men held the battle ground, and buried there the dead.

—

Not long ago a portion of this river's bank gave way,
Exposing groups of human bones—sad relics of that fray.

p. 44

THE FIGHT ON THE WAIINI.

Ere long the Caribs came in force, that they avenged might be,
And our men, hearing, went to meet them on the Waiini.
The Waraus would not help us fight, for they were sore afraid;
But they would act as scouts and spies, so giving useful aid;
Until we drew our foes again into an ambushade.

Again we won the victory, again o'erthrew our foes,
As each side fought with deadly hate, no cry for mercy rose.
One champion on our side there was, Bohirasiri named
(In old times oft his praise was heard, for in our songs he's famed);
The Carib chieftain in the face with three-pronged shaft he shot;
Struck down his warriors all around, and dragged him from the spot.
The barbéd weapon from his face the wounded chieftain tore;
But cruel was the gash it made, and he could fight no more.

Our men, when all was over, and our foemen crushed and slain,
Said, "What must be Manarwa's doom? shall he alive remain?"

p. 45

So warriors and elders grave in council met next day,
Where the old chieftain, wounded sore, was asked what he could say.
"Oh why have you, these many years, vexed cruelly this land?"
To which he could no answer give, as most may understand.
But *this* he said, "Lo, here I stand!—Arise, some one, and slay!
I'm in your power. But if you spare, and let me go away,
My people all will grateful be, and, for their leader's sake,
Will not again invade your land, but peace for ever make."

Our race is not bloodthirsty. They resolved, our old men say,
To take the Carib at his word, and let him go away.
Four of his men alone still lived, they were with him set free;
And their old chief the promise kept, which gained his liberty.

Perhaps those Orinoco Caribs found our swampy land
Was not so easy, as it seemed, to ravage and command;
Perhaps they learned what men can do who slaves will never be:
Rememb'ring, too, that o'er picked men we'd gained the victory!
But still that act of clemency, we think, availed us more
Than if we'd slain ten thousand warriors on that bloody shore.

Whatever cause may be assigned, we found their inroads cease,
And since those fights, of which I tell, this region has had peace.

p. 46

ALLIANCE AND INTERCOURSE WITH WHITE MEN.

The Dutchmen to our fathers said,
"Make peace with us, and let us trade,
••In firm alliance joined,
In peace and plenty all may live,
While you to us assistance give,
••Guarding the woods behind.
Use your *stone* implements no more,
Of *iron* tools we have great store,
••Which you will better find,
Clothes, which your women ought to wear;
Combs, shining bodkins for the hair;
Beads, looking-glasses, bright and fair,
••To please the female mind."

Our fathers to them made reply:
"Your goods are pleasing to the eye,
But men such things may dearly buy
••With loss of liberty!
We all are hunters, free and brave;
No Arawâk must be a *slave*,
Make *that* your law, you then will have
••Faithful allies and free!"

We thus maintained our liberty;
The Dutchmen all declared us free,
••And well observed the same.
But Christ's good word was never brought
To us, nor were our children taught,
••Till other white men came.

p. 47

From them (Moravians), in Berbice,
Our brethren heard the word of peace,
Till trouble made their missions cease.
••*We* still were left alone.
At length to Essequibo came
The English: and the Saviour's name
••To red men there made known.

To us, then, came that Saviour's word,
Which most opposed, but some few "heard,"
••And helped to spread it round.
To our old foes, the Caribisce,
We paddled you, with words of peace,
••Which there acceptance found.
Then, with the red cross waving free,
To Waraus went, along the sea,
••To plant it on new ground;
That all red men might Christians be,
••And blessed peace abound!

CONCLUSION.

Thus Sacibarra¹ (such his name,
Ere it "Cornelius" became)
••Would speak, when growing old.
Good chief! who, long before, to me,
Of that "High" Lord "whom none can see,"
••Their ancient legends told.

And came *alone*, Christ's word to hear.
•Till others rallied round;
Who helped a mission church to rear,
•With cross and belfry crowned,
Reflected in the waters clear,
With palms and feathery bamboos near,
•Where he had cleared the ground.

All those who then met there, save one
(Whose hand now writes), are dead and gone.
The mission crowns a neighb'ring hill.
That river's banks are hushed and still.

No children now, with sportive grace,
•There swim from shore to shore;
But still the bamboos mark the place
•(Long since with "bush" grown o'er)
Which still one mem'ry loves to trace,
Where the chief sought his Maker's face,
•And told their ancient lore.

And *all* who told, in their sweet tongue
•(Most sweet, as all allow),
These tales, which to their race belong,
•Are still and silent now.
They wait us on that other shore,
Their voices here are heard no more!

Now turn we to the wilder lore
••Of the uncouth Warau.

[Next](#)

Footnotes

1 Aiomun Kondi.

2 Ifilici W'acinaci.

3 W'amurreti-kwonci.

p. 7

1 The Ceiba, or silk-cotton tree.

p. 18

1 Literally, "island." Some one of the Antilles. This most ancient legend is the only one I know in which their former possession of the West India islands is mentioned.

p. 19

1 "Yauhahu simaira," a common expression denoting severe pain.

p. 26

1 The Arawâks have various dances. In one, the men challenge each other to give and receive alternate lashes round the bare calf or the leg, with a severe whip called "Maquarri," which is the name of the dance. This is a sort of funeral game, or commemoration of some departed male relative or friend, held some time after his death. It differs from the purely festive dance mentioned above.

p. 36

1 The crew of the first canoe which approached the fleet of Columbus on the shore of the southern continent were Arawâks, armed with bows and arrows, and *bucklers*. I have heard no other legend, however, of any aboriginal tribe, in which the latter are mentioned.

p. 37

1 Arawâks *call themselves* "Lokono."

p. 43

1 A common name or title among Carib chiefs.

1 Lit., "beautiful hair:" name given in infancy.

CONTENTS OF PART II.

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	52
MYTHOLOGICAL TALES	53
I. LEGEND OF OKONORÓTÉ	55
II. LEGEND OF THE DROUGHT	60
III. LEGEND OF THE GREAT WATERS	62
IV. LEGEND OF KOROBONA (1)	64
LEGEND OF KOROBONA (2)	66
LEGEND OF KOROBONA (3)	69
LEGEND OF KOROBONA (4)	72
V. WARAU IDEAS OF DEPARTED SOULS	74
VI. LEGEND OF ABORÉ (the Warau Father of Inventions) •	76
• SEQUEL TO THE ANCIENT LEGEND	84

•The Waraus (Guamons, or Guaranos) were dwelling where they now are at the time of the discovery of the southern continent. The early Spanish explorers, and Sir Walter Raleigh, who followed them, gazed with wonder at their fires, seen at night half way up the trees, as their expeditions passed by.

•The writer, searching for some traditions or their ancient faith or history, came, to his surprise, on the wildly romantic mythological legends which are here given.

[Next](#)

p. 52

Legends of the Waraus.

—

INTRODUCTION.

WHERE Orinoco, through his delta wide,
By numerous channels, seeks the ocean tide;
Where, annually, his waters flood the ground,
And wide lagoons, with muddy isles, abound,
The fan-like branches of the ita palm
By thousands wave above his waters calm.
Those stately trees supply the rude abode
Which the poor Warau makes above the rising flood.

That race, of old from other regions driven,
Could not have lived, but for that shelter given.
Unwarlike, they could not their foes withstand,
But had to yield to them the higher land.
On fish and crabs those Waraus chiefly live,
Which in abundance there the waters give.
Their palm-tree¹ pith a kind of bread affords,
Its leaves give thatch and cords, the split trunk serves for boards.

p. 53

Yet some provision grounds those Waraus have,
Where land appears above the tidal wave;
And from their swampy refuges they come,
Beneath our rule to find a peaceful home.
>From Orinoco to Moruca's stream,
More numerous than other tribes they seem.
And farther east, where its swamps abound,
Even in Surinam, the Warau race is found.

We called the tribes—a mission space to clear
At Waramuri, for the Waraus near.
Unkempt, unclad, their women there we found;
Their naked children wallowed on the ground,
With filth and ashes grimed—sad sight to see:
We wondered how such way of life could be!
Most wild and gaunt the men, who took no care,
And only wished to be—just what they were.
Lower than others, as he would allow,
And satisfied to be so, was the poor Warau!1

—

MYTHOLOGICAL TALES.

THEIR ancient belief we had long wished to hear:
Some had said 'twas "romantic," while others said "queer."
••But, from shyness or fear,
••Till the twenty-first year,
Of their most knowing sorcerers none would come near.
Then, at last, a friend told me to send for "McLeod,"
p. 54
Who to be their *most learned* by all was allowed.
••And that Warau of fame
••(With the highland Scotch name),
After long hesitation, consented, and came.

His visit to us was a favour most rare:
So myself, our good teacher, and other friends there,
With honour received him, and offered—a chair.
••But he sat on the ground,
••With his Waraus around,
Whose costume was most "light and airy" we found.
••They—with long, matted hair,
••And bare skins—squatted there,
While their chief a striped shirt condescended to wear.

••Their traditional "word"
••A good friend there had heard;
Partly Warau was he, and to him we referred.
For a mixture most strange through some tales seemed to run;
Their most serious matters so blended with fun,
That (though none of the red men there thought it absurd)
We could scarcely believe it the "Old people's word."

"Oh tell me, McLeod, did not slaughter and woe
First cause the Waraus to that swamp-land to go?
Did you not live inland, where the clear waters flow,
Ere the fortune of war sternly drove you below?"

"Stern foes have indeed caused the Waraus to fly:
••But they first lived on high,
••Above yonder blue sky,
Ere they came down the good things of this world to try.

p. 55

Such, such is the tale of our forefathers given,
Who thus rashly lost their high station in heaven!"

••We opened our eyes;
••But he, calm and wise,
Superior smiled, and enjoyed our surprise.
Then resumed: "What I tell you, you will not believe,
Yet hear now the legend our elders receive."

LEGEND OF OKONORÓTÉ.

"Say, Okonoróté, thou archer so gay,
With bright feathered ornaments, whither away?
Let the birds now beware of thy clear, glancing eye;
For thine arrows bear death to all creatures that fly!"

"With my arrows so keen I pursue a rare bird,
Of whose lovely plumage we often have heard;
That bird I must find, though I cannot tell where;
But its flesh I must eat, and its plumage must wear."

So Okonoróté went forth on his way,
To seek that rare bird with its plumage so gay.
He could only shoot *birds*, for above the blue sky
Were no living creatures, save those that could fly,
And the young Warau race, who in that high abode
Had been placed by their Maker, the Wise and the Good.

That search he engaged in for many a day;
But still, as it saw him, the bird flew away,
Till (surely some evil one brought it to pass)
He saw it alight in a clump of high grass.

p. 56

Then, lying flat down, he slid over the ground,
Like tiger or snake which some victim has found;
The distance diminished, yet still he crawled on,
Saying, "Oh for one shot ere the bird shall be gone!"

At length he had crawled within shot of that bird,
When lo! it flew up, as some movement it heard.
With keen arrow transfixed the bright beauty was slain,
And, with quivering wing, fluttered down to the plain.

Glad Okonoróté sprang up with a bound,
And, shouting for joy, made the meadows resound.
"No longer," said he, "need I rise with the sun
To pursue this bright bird, for my prize now is won!"

••Then he searched all the ground—
••Walked around and around;
Strange!—arrow and bird were nowhere to be found!
••Such a loss who could bear?
••He looked everywhere,
Till he saw a deep pit, and said, "Both must be there;"
And the sides being steep, he approached it with care.

But gone was his arrow for ever and aye;
Gone too that bright bird with its plumage so gay.
And he, fascinated, unable to move,
Saw daylight *beneath*, him, as well as above!
••There, far, far below,
••He could see forests grow;
Wide plains, and savannahs, where rivulets flow.
And he looked down for hours those new wonders to view,
Thinking, "All is a *dream*, sure it cannot be true!

p. 57

••"Some charm fills mine eye,
••Or do I espy
On the green plains below, *living creatures* pass by?"
•He could see there the deer and the peccary go,
The choice paca, and others, which now we all know;
••While birds which soar high,
••Rising near to the sky,
And some, nearer earth, his clear vision could spy!

••••*••*••*••*

"Now hear, Waraus all! You know what I have seen;
And many here present to view it have been.
Prepare a rope ladder; I must go below
And see if those creatures are useful or no.
If it be as I hope, 'tis our people's great gain,
And if I lose my life, one man only is slain."

Oh, great was their fear lest his life he should lose;
But Okonoróté none e'er could refuse.
So all to the woods, picking cotton, would go,
For forests of cotton were there, as we know.
(Perhaps they used "bush-ropes" the cotton to aid).
It took many months, but the ladder they made.
It was lengthened above when too short it was found,
Till it grappled the trees upon this lower ground;
And it then, tight above, with strong braces was bound.

Bold Okonoróté, determined to go,
Strong-limbed, and brave-hearted, then ventured below.
'Twas a perilous venture, to come from above
By a ladder so frail, which light currents could move.

p. 58

And when he was down, he stood gazing around
In utter amazement at all things he found;
The fire, so abundant, he saw with surprise,
The quadrupeds strange, and their wonderful size:
For all seemed most wonderful then to his eyes.

He must have seen wild beasts devouring their prey,
For jaguars and snakes then had all their own way.
And he thought he would venture to taste some large game,
So he shot a young deer, and soon kindled a flame,
In the Indian style, with two pieces of wood;
And the ven'son he found to be excellent food.

Ascending again!—Oh, what labour and pain
To the quick-heaving chest!—to the limbs, what a strain!
It was hard to come down; but to climb up again!
••(Though we came from the sky,
••I had rather not try:
Some people turn giddy when mounting too high.)
It was done but *that once*, as you'll find by and by.

A portion of game he brought up from below;
Not much, but sufficient his people to show:
His words (and its flavour) put all in a glow.
"Oh! we cannot stay here; for there is little good
In the small birds around us: but animal food
••We know to abound
••On that lower ground,
Which Okonoroté for Waraus has found!"

So they asked no permission, but said, "We will go!"
And came down the rope ladder to this world below.

p. 59

All things then were young—no old people were found;
Small children they carried, and all reached the ground
In safety, save one—a poor woman, the last,
Who got wedged in the hole which the others had passed.

Her husband below her sore trouble could view,
And climbed back to give help, but could not get her through;
Then, his head turning giddy, he went down below,
Where his people all thought it a terrible blow,
And in clamorous talking gave vent to their woe.
They all asked how it happened. He could not tell how;
So the thing was mysterious to ev'ry Warau.

Then the women, upbraiding, would ask, "Is it right
For that man to come down, and not stay up all night?
Brave Okonoroté! he climbed up before;
Will he not go up now, with a man or two more,
Since the husband, resigned, has quite given it o'er!"

They all shrunk from the task, for a man there had said,
Whom they straightway discovered to have a wise head,
"Supposing you reach her, and can pull her through,
Will she not be the death of you all, if you do?
••You will find it no fun—
••She will come with a run;
Consider how you, in that case, can hold on?
You must be swept off, and our best men be gone."

●●●●*●●*●●*●●*●●*●●*

p. 60

So the woman remains (though the ladder gave way),
And will always remain there, our old Waraus say,
She fills up the hole; and, good friends, that is why
We never can get a *fair peep though the sky!*"

●●●●*●●*●●*●●*●●*●●*

He paused. Some were laughing, and all the rest smiled
At a "descent from heaven" so grotesque and wild,
Then the old Warau said, "You all think I 'make fun;'
But it is in *this way* that the legend must run,
And so I must tell it. If not, I have done!"

Being soothed, he resumed, in a different tone,
For the course of his legends more serious had grown.

II. LEGEND OF THE DROUGHT.

"See the Warau race begin
Life in this new world below.
With their bows the hunters win
Plenteous food—no want they know;
Yet they feel within them grow
Anxious dread of future woe.

Safety, which in heaven they had,
Here on earth cannot be found;
Good is mingled here with bad;
Savage beasts of prey abound.
Reptiles coil in trees around,
Or lurk, deadly, on the ground.

p. 61

One thing then filled all with fear,
Scanty water and unclean!
'Twas not as we now see here,
Where large streams have long time been;
Streamlets small, in marshes green,
Then were all that could be seen.

"Oh, where shall we water find,
Till the wished-for rain shall fall?
Other woes we bear, resigned,
But this thirst consumes us all!
Let us now, both great and small,
On our mighty Maker call.

"We forsook our Father-friend:
We forsook His place on high;
Death by thirst He now will send;
Through his wrath these pools are dry.
To Him, brethren, let us cry,
He may hear above the sky!

"O Karima (Father) Thou!
We Thy place no more shall see.
Once in heaven each Warau
Happy was near thee to be.
But we have forsaken thee,
Thence proceeds our misery!

"Ka-id•mo (Master) Thou!
All things are at Thy command;
Seeking water vainly now

p. 62

We may roam through this dry land.
Must we perish 'neath Thy hand?
Wretched, miserable band!"

Kanonatu, throned on high
(So Waraus the Maker call),
Heard, and from the dark'ning sky
Caused the welcome rain to fall;
Made the rivers great and small,
Which abundance bring to all.

Women then, with happy glee,
Filled their vessells to the brim:
While the men saw joyfully
Glitt'ring fish in rivers swim..
Strange it seemed, and, like a dream,
Food and drink in every stream!

—

From my tale you now have heard
How Waraus came from on high.
What remains still of this "word"
I will tell you by and by.
Now the sun hath left the sky,
And your hour of prayer is nigh!

III.

LEGEND OF THE GREAT WATERS.

Years rolled on, and men, grown hateful,
•Ceased their passions to restrain;
Took their Maker's gifts; ungrateful,

p. 63

•Thanked him not for sun and rain;
But forsook Him once again,
When they ceased to suffer pain.

"Kanonatu," seeing slaughter,
•Acts of rapine, deeds unclean,
Sent their punishment by *water*,
•Which had once their blessing been.
Floods, obeying Him, were seen
O'er the hills and valleys green.

Eight poor men, in that disaster,
•With six women, trembling stood.
Pausing in His wrath, the Master
•Saw their hearts still true and good,
Bade them take the "bahbi" wood,
Safe to float amidst the flood.

Evil spirits of the waters
•Saw them then float past undrowned.
They were saved that sons and daughters
•Might again on earth be found,
And from them mankind abound,
Fish, and hunt, and till the ground.

••••*••*••*••*

He who saved them had provided
•Land, to which they might repair.
Streams appeared as floods subsided,
•One small lake shone bright and fair.
Yet of that he said, "Beware!
Shun its waters, bathe not there!"

p. 64

Well our sires obeyed the warning;
•Some to guard that lake they chose,
Lest some bather, danger scorning,
•There should meet with deadly foes.
Ages pass. No Warau goes
Where those waters calm repose!

IV. LEGEND OF KOROBONA.

Two Warau maidens sweetly sang,
•"O waters calm and clear!
We love our happy walks to take
By thy sweet margin, woodland lake,
•And find our pleasure here."

Those maidens, from the hills at first
•That guarded spot would spy.
Then, though their brothers said, "Beware,
The lake is fatal, bathe not there!"
•They dared to venture nigh.

At length fair Korobona said
•(The elder sister she),
"We, by an idle threat restrained,
>From these clear waters have refrained;
•Come, sister, bathe with me.

p. 65

"For what is here to do us harm?
•We maidens are alone.
Waraus, with superstitious awe,
Both old and young obey the law;
•Intruders here are none."

Straight she plunged in; for scant attire
•Our maidens wore, I trow;
Though wild beasts' teeth, with woven seeds,
And shining stones (they had no beads)
•Adorned each young Warau.

Then both, through waters fair and clear,
•Began to dive and swim;
The elder sister, void of fear,
Went first; the other followed near,
•Obeying every whim.

Before her Korobona saw
•A rod of charmed wood.
Oh that some power had stayed her hand,
And forced the maid to let it stand—
•Her safeguard while it stood!

But, wild with glee, she shook the rod,
•And broke the mighty charm.
They saw a man-like form arise,
And Korobona was his prize,
•Held by a powerful arm.

p. 66

(A water spirit, 'neath the wave,
•Lay bound by mightier power;
Till some one, swimming in the lake,
Should dare that charmed rod to shake.
•*That* was the destined hour.)

"O Warau maid!" the spirit said,
•"Thy sister there may go;"
But *thee I hold*. O woman fair!
Thou for a time my home must share,
•And come with me below."

II.

Sad Korobona weeps at home
•Upon her sister's breast.
It had been comfort in her woe
That her four brothers did not know:
•*Now* she is more distressed.

••••*••*••*

O Korobona! time has passed;
•Thou art a mother now!
And lo! thy brothers, as they stand,
(The eldest with his club in hand),
•To slay thine infant vow.

"Kill not my baby girl," she cries;
•"Slay *me*—the mad and wild!
But she a gentle maid will be,
And serve you all most lovingly.
•O spare the helpless child!"

p. 67

Why should I dwell upon this woe,
•With greater far to tell?
Their hearts were softened by her prayer,
They gave the infant to her care:
•Though grieved, they loved her well.

••••*••*••*

Of that young child we hear no more,
•And think she must have died.
Meanwhile the spirit of the lake
Most strangely would his pastime take,
•Near that bad waterside.

A snake immense, from tree to tree
•Disporting he was seen;
Or, in his human form, would stand
Where gentle ripples mark the sand,
•Beneath the branches green;

And sometimes as a man above,
•With serpent form below;
Until the keepers said, "What hand
Can this dread 'Wahma's' power withstand?
•His nature who can know?"

And Korobona hears the tale
•Of him who fills her mind;
Then, heeding not her sister's prayer,
Steals to the lake, and watches there,
•Resolved the truth to find.

p. 68

And long she waits beneath the trees
•Filled with strange hope and fear;
Whilst he, who can her presence spy,
In serpent form eludes her eye,
•Yet still is drawing near.

His head seems like a floating seed,
•By gentle breezes blown;
The tail, like filmy scum, is near
(Thus, seeking prey, such snakes appear),
•No other part is shown.

••••*••*••*

p. 69

Why, Korobona, dost thou stoop,
•That floating seed to view?
He cries, triumphant, "Thou art mine!
Unto thy fate thyself resign!"
•And captures her anew.

III.

The hapless Korobona now
•Lives in the woods alone;
Another babe there hides from view;
For if her fault her brothers knew
•Blood only could atone.

She weepeth sore for woes in store,
•Which she can well foresee;
But that fair boy her tears now warm,
Who shares in part his father's form,
•Her greatest grief is he.

She, in the day which gave him birth,
•At first essayed to fly,
But soon returned to that deep glade,
In which the helpless one was laid,
•Drawn by his feeble cry.

And by her sister, kind and true,
•Who o'er her errors wept,
That secret (soon to be revealed,
For eyes and ears cannot be sealed)
•Hath faithfully been kept.

••••*••*••*

One, passing by, the infant's cry
•Heard, and upon her came.
Then told her brethren, hunting near;
And soon she saw the four appear,
•All wild with rage and shame!

Two of them dragged their sister home;
•Two turned the child to slay,
There lying, helpless, in their view:
They with an arrow pierced him through,
•And left him where he lay.

"The child is dead," the slayers said,
•"The mother mad and wild!"
They let her go to make his grave.
But knew not that the care she gave
•Revived that hapless child.

••••*••*••*

He grew far more than other babes
•In wisdom and in size;
And, still concealed in some thick tree,
Till he his mother's form could see,
•Would shun all other eyes.

With food she daily sought the woods
•Where he was doomed to stay,
And there held converse with her child;
Till sorrow, by their talk beguiled,
•Would seem to pass away.

p. 71

But Korobona quite forgot
•That some her track might know—
Her track—by those small footprints shown!
Each brother then, her secret known,
•Prepared the shaft and bow.

"Oh, why," she said, "these arrows made,
•And these stone weapons too?"
The brothers gave her short reply,
Then through the woods they saw her fly,
•And hastened to pursue.

••••*••*••*

"Oh, hide me, mother, from their eyes,"
•The wretched victim said;
"Alas! why didst thou give me birth?
For I have found no place on earth,
•And now shall soon be dead!"

The mother, clinging to her son,
•Then screened him from his foes,
And left small space at which to aim,
Yet to its mark each arrow came
•From their unerring bows.

They cut him into pieces small,
•She cursed their cruelty:
"Vile slayers of the innocent!
The woes you fear will now be sent—
•And come through *you, not me!*

p. 72

"See here your Korobona lie!
•This spot shall be her tomb,
Where this poor blood o'erspreads the ground.
Think on it when your woes abound,
•And Waraus meet their doom!"

IV.

Of her who watched her outcast dead
•(In mournful "Bible word"),
And "suffered neither bird nor beast"
Upon the loved remains to feast,
•My Warau never heard.

He never heard! yet in his tale
•We seemed the like to bear,
How vultures and wild beasts could see
A mother in her misery,
•And none would venture near;

While food her loving sister brought;
•She, that the heap might bloom.
Laid bright green leaves and flow'rets red
Upon the body of her dead,
•Which had no other tomb.

There, sweet and fragrant, still was found
•That spot, by blood defiled.
A mighty wonder happened then,
For that great change which waits all men
•Touched not the serpent child.

••••*••*••*

p. 73

At length that heap, with flowers bedecked,
•Began with life to heave:
She seemed these words to hear, "Thy son
Shall now avenge his murder done:
•O mother, cease to grieve!"

And first a head and shoulders rose,
•Slow growing from that mound:
She saw a mighty form appear,
Well armed, to fill all foes with fear,
•With limbs complete and sound.

With weighty club the warrior stood,
•With bow and arrows keen;
White down adorned his short black hair,
His skin like copper shone, more fair
•Than with Waraus had been.

And with vermilion were besmeared,
•Like blood, his cheeks and brow.
Thus the first CARIB stern arose,
A warrior strong to smite his foes,
•Dread sight to each Warau!

••••*••*••*

The brethren four their warriors called,
•Appalled that sight to see;
But few to face his club would dare,
All those who did he slaughtered there,
•And forced the rest to flee.

p. 74

No Warau could his strength withstand;
•Their arrows turned away.
Their warriors fled to save their lives,
While he their daughters took for wives.
•And all their goods for prey.

And as his children still increased,
•They took the Warau's place.
Invincible, from Wahma sprung!
Though still (by mother) they belong
•To *our* despised race."

—

And now my tale is done at last;
•My people's fate you know,
Who from the heavens, in days long past,
•Came down to earth below,
And since to swamps were driven, where now
You may behold the poor Warau!"

V. WARAU IDEAS CONCERNING DEPARTED SOULS.

When Waraus were, as we have shown,
•Oppressed by stronger foes,
The fears which they through life had known
•Beset them at its close.
Each charged his children when he died
To place his weapons at his side.

p. 75

"Lay bow and arrows in my grave,
•That I may keep at bay
The souls of foemen fierce and brave,
•And all who bar my way.
My soul, thus armed, none dare withstand,
To keep it from the spirit land!"

How different was the legend told
•On Trinidad's fair isle;
Where Waraus gathered fruits of old
•And rested there awhile;
Where souls of good men they could find
In glittering humming birds enshrined!

Those birds, like flashing jewels seen,
•Bedecked each lovely bower.
As ruby, topaz, emerald green,
•They kissed each fragrant flower,
And saw fair hills and forests rise
Around their blissful paradise.

But Chaymas dared those birds molest,
•Then—sank beneath the ground!
And now, where happy souls had rest,
•The lake of pitch is found.
Wild Warau myth of ages past—
To English readers told "at last!"[1](#)

p. 76

VI. LEGEND OF ABORÉ (*The Warau Father of Inventions*).

In those Warau traditions it moved our surprise,
That beneath their coarse veil of mythology lies
A lesson, which Christians deem holy and wise.
For those *first* legends show how mankind suffer woe,
Who their Maker forsake, in their own way to go,
And they differ in this from most others we know.

•••Ere McLeod went away,
•••Our good teacher one day
Said, "I ask one more story, you must not say nay,
Of all Warau legends you are the narrator;
Pray tell of Aboré, your first navigator."

So the old man his store of strange legends thought o'er,
And told *this* of which fragments had reached us before.

•••"In this world, we know
•••That for weal, or for woe,
Good spirits and bad ever move to and fro;
And all our old men will most strongly avow
That some help, but more hinder, the suffring Warau."

THE LEGEND.

•••"Aboré, away!
•••No longer delay,
Nor, loitering, stay to waste here half the day.
Men must hunt for wild bees while the sun says they may."

p. 77

She who thus chid the youth was a fine, handsome dame,
Who from childhood had reared him.—Wowtáh was her name.

Aboré the clever, Aboré the brave,
Had served her caprices like some household slave.
To follow her wishes the youth was content,
Although his keen mind on inventions was bent.
Bows, arrows, and such things he strove to improve;
But she was most jealous lest aught he should love
More than her, and from all his works sent him away,
To search the dense forests for bees, day by day.

"Sometimes he had ventured resistance to try,
But Wowtáh had quelled that by a glance of her eye;
And he had to obey, though he could not tell why.

That day through the forest quite gloomy he went,
To search out the honey for which he was sent,
When he saw, sitting down on the root of a tree,
A young Indian maid—fair and graceful was she.
"Oh, who can she be? I ne'er met her before;
She must be some stranger come down to our shore."

He passed without notice, as good Indians do,
But she said, "Aboré! thy parents I knew,
And this day I am glad their tall son here to view.
•••But what canst thou see
•••In that huge hollow tree,
Where serpents and scorpions hiding may be?"

p. 78

•••"I search these old trees
•••For the nests of wild bees,
That I may with their honey my kinswoman please."

"Aboré I the truth will appear by and by.
Wowtáh is a *spirit*. Such also am I!
We spirits assume any figure we please;
We change as we like, and we do it with ease.
•••Some appear as bush-hogs,
•••Some as jaguars or dogs;
While some, as large snakes, love the rivers and bogs:
But Wowtáh chose to be the great queen of the frogs.
•••By day or by night,
•••It was then her delight,
With a terrible croak, other creatures to fright.
(Sometimes to Waraus she would cause some alarm.)
A strange taste it was, though it did little harm."

Then the kind spirit told him how, "when a young boy,
He was seen by Wowtáh, and became her chief joy;
How she, in the form of a woman, deceived
His parents, and was in their cottage received.
How his parents soon died, and no mortal knew how,
But Wowtáh was suspected by every Warau."

She told him how "soon, from an infant in arms,
He had grown a tall youth through Wowtáh's mighty charms.
How, save to fetch honey, he scarce left her side,
And how he would soon have to make her his bride."

Then, pondered Aboré, "This tale may be right;
When Wowtáh is much pleased she will croak with delight.
She croaks at the honey, she croaks upon me;

p. 79

But bride to Aboré she never will be!
Oh, tell me, kind spirit, and I will obey;
Shall I go back and slay her, or flee far away?"

•••"O seek not to slay!
•••But heed well what I say,
'Twould be vain to shed blood, nor canst thou flee away,
Having *grown 'neath her charm*, still her slave thou must be,
Unless thou canst flee from her o'er the wide sea!"

She paused. The young man wished her still to go on,
But when he looked round the good spirit was gone.

The honey he found, and soon robbed the poor bees
(Where bees have no stings one can do that with ease),
Then returned to the house; where Wowtáh kindly spoke,
And welcomed him home with her most gentle croak.
As she had been cross in the morning, at night
She became doubly kind, just to put matters right.

But the young man was gloomy, and wrapped up in thought;
He said to himself, "Into bondage I'm brought,
But with the first dawn will escape far away,
And if this bad spirit can find me—she may!"

From morning till night then he marched through the wood,
But with the next daylight before him she stood!

•••Again he would roam,
•••And again be brought home;
He could flee to no place whither she would not come;
And the moment he caught the stern glance of her eye,
He was forced to return, though he could not tell why.

p. 80

Since, baffled and shamed, he could not get away,
He made up his mind his hard mistress to slay;
•••And he felt no alarm
•••At the thought of the harm,
For the death of his parents his vengeance would warm.

Then a cocorite palm he found, somewhat decayed;
It suited his purpose, and forthwith he made
A deep cut, that its fall might no more be delayed.
A small prop he then placed its great pressure to bear,
And removed that support when he saw her come there.

•••It fell on her head,
•••And he thought she was dead,
Saying, "Now I am free from the life I have led!"
•••But she from the ground
•••Rose, uninjured and sound,
For she could not be killed, as Aboré then found.

Almost in despair, he then thought on the day
When the good spirit said to him, "Seek not to slay!"
And then he remembered her words, "The wide sea;"
Oh, how can I cross it, that I may be free?"

He thought on all ways which the Waraus then knew
To float on the deep, and found none that would do.
There were then logs of wood on which men used to go,
With their feet hanging down in the water below;
And rafts of light branches, which sometimes were made,
When over smooth streams they their children conveyed.
•••But rafts of light wood
•••Could by no means have stood,
Or danced over the waves of that great rolling flood.
And he saw that for his purpose they were not good.

The half of a gourd he could readily float,
But its shape, he soon found, would not do for a boat.
>From an oblong seed-pod his best model he drew,
Which he strove to improve by all methods he knew.

He formed a large vessel of wax—which, though drained
Of its former contents, in abundance remained;
He improved on its shape till our people might view
What they call "woibáka," but others "canoe."
•••Then his frail craft be tried
•••At the next "waterside;"
But his mistress came there, and severely she eyed—
Then broke it, and scattered the wax far and wide!

Determined to go, though in waxen canoe,
(He dared not work in *wood*, which far better would do).
He sought a young cousin, whom "brother" we call,
And begged him to help him, whate'er might befall.

•••"Aboré, with thee
•••I will brave the salt sea.
I should fear to remain, lest she next bewitch me!
We will work in the bush, where no Warau can see."

They must have used then a stone chisel or axe,
To cut wood, to make paddles, or strengthen the wax.
Food, and gourds to hold water, they had to provide,
Though forced, for the time, their equipment to hide.

Aboré then thought, "If Wowtáh chance to spy
Our flight, she will stay me with her evil eye.
I must prevent that, or, at least, *I will try*."

p. 82

So he took her a nest of fine honey to see;
Which was deep in the heart of a large hollow tree;
He'd before taken care a great wedge to prepare,
Which he drove tightly in, and Wowtáh was kept there,
Whose great love of sweets led her into the snare.

•••"Now, now we must fly—
•••To look back is to spy,
And be fixed by the power of that evil eye!
•••Brother, off and away;
•••Let us launch while we may!
We must pull for our lives now by night and by day."

"Ho, Waraus!" he then to his countrymen cried,
Who that waxen craft with astonishment eyed;
"*This, this* is the shape which your vessels must have,
With *this* they will readily dance o'er the wave.
Observe well *this form*, you will all find it good;
Make your woibákas so, friends; but make them of *wood*."

•••Thus be quitted the strand
•••Of our poor Warau land.
Men and women, regretting, were ranged on the sand.
And thus they beheld, from the wild ocean shore,
Their last of Aboré—they saw him no more!

••••*••*••*••*

•••Now, when he was gone,
•••Wowtáh, quite alone
In that huge hollow tree, began loudly to moan.
Some passers-by heard her, and, finding her plight,
p. 83
They would not let her out, for they said, "She's served right.
•••The young man of most brains
•••(For none like him remains)
She has driven away; let her die for her pains.

•••"The things he could make,
•••Which this female would break!
>From her he was right his departure to take.
•••We have seen his canoe,
•••And know what he could do;
Which, but for her malice, he *would have done* too.
•••He said he knew how
•••To clothe every Warau;
Not in such strips of bark as we're forced to wear now,
With a few shells and teeth strung to make a small show;
But in fair woven fibres from shoulder to toe.
And now—how to make such, we never may know."

No mercy was shown, though she still made her moan;
And she found by the silence the people were gone.
She knew that, as woman, she could not get free;
But near to her feet a small op'ning could see;
So, *again as a frog*, through that crevice crept she.

••••*••*••*••*

•••That was long, long ago;
•••How long none can know;
But ever since that she has gone to and fro.
Of late in the swamps, o'er our evening fire,
We talked of Aboré, when nigher and nigher
She came. We all knew by the sad croak she gave;
And we said, "She still grieves for her runaway slave!"

p. 84

SEQUEL TO THE ANCIENT LEGEND.

We offered our thanks to our old Warau friend,
And thought that his story there came to an end—
As doubtless it did, in the ages long past,
But he said, "Waraus heard of Aboré at last.

"He went o'er a smooth sea; and, ere long, be found land—
Some island—and landed upon that new strand.
There, discarding the wax, he a craft made of wood,
And visited places, just as he thought good.

At last he arrived where white people abound,
Whom poor and distressed above all men be found.
They did support life, he could hardly tell how;
Far more wretched were they than the lowest Warau.
When he saw them his heart with compassion flowed o'er,
And he said, 'I will make my abode on this shore.'"

So he made up his mind the white people to raise;
And the way he has done so deserves their best praise.
•••They, squalid and bare,
•••Had no garments to wear,
Till taught by Aboré good clothes to prepare.

He taught the white people to weave and to sew,
To be skilful in wood and in iron, we know,
•••From a nail to a gun.—
•••(Ah, you may think it fun—
But you *owe to Aboré* the things you have done!)

p. 85

•••And to this pray attend!
•••To the *whole world a friend*,
The good things he had made in large ships he would send.
He thus obtained wealth, though he cared not for pelf,
But strove to help others while helping himself.
He improved the rough plan of his first waxen boat
To the huge ships we see now—great monsters afloat—
Which bring you all things, from a pin to a coat.

'Tis said that Aboré still lives, though no tree
That grows in our woods can be older than he.
The magical power which, when he was young,
That spirit imparted, has made his life long,
If he were to return she would claim him again;
So he's *forced* in the white people's land to remain.

Yet presents he used to send every year;
>From the time the Dutch told him they found Waraus here.
Those presents *they* gave in their colony's name;
That was nonsense! *We knew* from Aboré they came.
But they all at once ceased, and *some must be to blame*.

We think that in Georgetown they still are received;
That he would cease to send them cannot be believed.
Knife and gun, ammunition, a cutlass and hoe,
Rum, needles and pins, with some coarse calico,
Were once freely given to each. Alas! *now*
There is *payment* demanded from ev'ry Warau!"

The presents here mentioned, as every year made,
Were the price of assistance to Indians paid.
When slavery ceas'd their help was not required,
So the custom of annual "presents" expired.

p. 86

No loss to the Indians, but great moral gain;
For now they must *work* for the goods they obtain.

•••Such opinion may be
•••Held by you or by me,
But with that the old Warau would never agree.

We gave him some clothes; he had earned them full well;
Having come six days' voyage these legends to tell.
And we strove in his language Christ's words to explain,
•••That some better gain
•••He might thereby obtain;
But in Warau traditions he chose to remain.
He returned to his place near the Barima's shore,
And we saw old "McLeod" at our missions no more.

••••*••*••*••*••*••*

The creed of his race he had shown in these tales;
Shown, too, how their faith in strange spirits prevails.
In *their* service alone the Waraus used to live;
But now to their Maker due worship they give.
•••Though the bones which we found
•••In the cannibal mound
Made them think Waramuri a weird haunted ground;
Now around that huge heap Christian Waraus abound.

And civilisation first showed itself there,
In their women's neat hair and the clothing they wear.
•••For much better off now,
•••As all races allow,
Than his forefathers were, is the Christian Warau.

[Next](#)

Footnotes

p. 52

1 The mauritia (or morische) palm, called by the Arawâks "ité."

p. 53

1 Warau—pronounce the latter syllable like "row," a quarrel.

p. 75

1 C. Kingsley's "At Last," chap. viii. One can imagine the delight with which the author of "Westward Ho," with the tropical scenery he had long read and dreamed of in all its glorious reality around him, must have listened to the legend of "the humming birds"—the sweetest myth of the western world.

CONTENTS OF PART III.

	PAGE
I. HISTORICAL SKETCH	90
• Struggles with Early Colonists	92
II. WARLIKE LEGENDS.	
• The Carib War-path	95
• The War on the Orinoco	99
III. MYTHOLOGICAL LEGENDS OF THE ANCIENT WORLD •	102
• 1. The First People	103
• 2. The First Cultivation	104
• 3. The Rock and the Wood	106
IV. LEGEND OF AMALIVACA	110
LEGEND OF MANAROWA (1)	115
LEGEND OF MANAROWA (2)	117
CONCLUSION	120

•The Caribs, when discovered by Columbus, were in possession of the smaller West Indian islands, and had begun to attack the larger.

•Of their origin nothing certain is known. Humboldt states that the opinion common amongst Europeans in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries was that they came from the vicinity of Darien, and that more recently they were supposed to have come from the northern continent.

•But the constant tradition of the *Caribs themselves*, both in the islands and on the main, claims *Guiana* as the cradle of their race, and the *Orinoco* as the point from which they started on their career of conquest.

•A comparison of their language with that of the Orinoco Tamanacs, and with that of the Chaymas to the north of that river, will confirm, as far as language can, the truth of their tradition.

[Next](#)

Legends of the Caribs.

—

I. HISTORICAL SKETCH.

FROM Orinoque, in days of old,
The Caribs (so their legends told)
Came forth, to ravage and command,
And spread their power o'er sea and land.

By conquest they the isles possessed,
Those lesser gems which stud the West.
Where no male Arawâks remained,
They made, of ev'ry isle thus gained,
•A cannibal stronghold.
Then, 'gainst the larger islands went—
Or to the southern continent—
•Their warriors strong and bold!
Famous for valour and for wiles,
Those seas, for near five hundred miles,
•Their red Vikings would roam;
And warlike women guard their isles
•While they were far from home.

When white men came, and conquered all,
The milder race was doomed to fall:
In Cuba—as in fair Hayti—
Enslaved by Spanish cruelty,

p. 91

•Or slain—*all* passed away!
But Caribs made a fiercer stand:
Fighting till death, that for their land
•Invaders dear might pay.
None thought of yielding—few of flight;
Then women, maddened with the sight
•Of their brave husbands slain,
Would rush on pikes and swords—to fight
•The battle o'er again!

Meanwhile their race upon the "main"
Had fought, supremacy to gain.
And this became their nation's boast—
"From Orinoco to the coast,
We hold the tribes in terror all,
And lord it over great and small!"

All those who near the ocean dwelt,
Friendship for English Raleigh felt.
"A naked race," wrote he, "but I
Have met none braver 'neath the sky."
•They fought a common foe:
So on Caronit Corentyn,
And Essequibo wide between,
•His boats might freely go—
E'en to white Rupununi's wave:
For Caribs loved that warrior brave
•Who wrought the Spaniards woe;
And long they kept the flag he gave,
•That they his ships might know.¹

p. 92

STRUGGLES WITH EARLY COLONISTS.

Where Caribs held the sovereign sway,
White colonists they kept away.
The Spaniards and the Portuguese
Fell, by their weapons and disease.
The Dutch, with Arawâks allied,
Might in their settlements abide,
On Essequibo and Berbice;
Importing negroes, they had peace.
But from the Surinam, men say,
The English twice were driv'n away—
And Frenchmen likewise from Cayenne—
By those same "brave, though naked men."
One story of those times will show
How they could strike a fatal blow.

"Bretigny—man of evil fame—
First Governor to Cayenne came.
•Frenchmen were there before,
Living as Indians there in peace—
Their wives and language 'Caribisce';
•Thinking of France no more.

"Stern their new ruler, harsh his deeds,
For trifling acts the white man bleeds;
•Most cruel was his sway.

p. 93

The natives, too, he dared oppress.
Then Caribs vowed, in stern redress,
•That tyrant chief to slay!

"But Indian women often love
The European far above
•Their own red countrymen.
So Cortez found in Mexico.
And thus Bretigny came to know
•His danger in Cayenne.

"Soon as, from female lips, he heard
The Carib plan, he gave the word
•To 'seize all Caribs' there.
Each casts himself into the wave,
And in a shark will find his grave,
•Ere bondage he will bear.

"Ho! hasten, Frenchmen, all of you;
Bring quickly forth my large canoe—
•Myself will take command.
Upon those wretches we must fall,
And slay forthwith, or drown them all,
•Ere they can reach the land!"

"Swim now, ye Caribs, for your lives!
Or you your children and your wives
•Will nevermore behold.
That great canoe can swiftly run;
Her crew have halberd, sword, and gun;
•All Frenchmen, strong and bold!

p. 94

"They gain the shore. Then, in pursuit,
Bretigny lands—for without fruit
•He will not turn again.
'Tis evening. Still he searches there;
And finds an Indian cabin, where
•He may all night remain.

"Ah!—little does Bretigny know
The tactics of an Indian foe!
•The trees have eyes to see
Where he abides; and all the night
The Carib warriors, armed for fight,
•Are coming noiselessly.

"With morning light they all appear,
Hundreds of painted warriors near,
•Each with his bended bow.
Vain will the sword and musket be
Against their rapid archery;
•And that the guardsmen know.

"Then, roused from sleep, Bretigny sees
Their forms, red gleaming through the trees,
•Surround him everywhere.
Wrapped in his cloak, he silent stands
To meet his fate from Carib hands
•By club and arrow there.

"They slay his guards, then rage around
Wherever colonists are found;
••Destroying all white men.

p. 95

The Frenchmen come again, but fail;
'Tis twenty years ere they prevail
•And settle in Cayenne." [1](#)

••••*••*••*

At length each colony became
Too strong to dread the club and flame;
While the fierce Caribs had, we know,
A native and more savage foe.
On Orinoco fierce the strife—
Many a warrior lost his life.
Then the brave Eastern clans would go
To fight and crush that native foe.

—

II. WARLIKE LEGENDS.

THE CARIB WAR PATH.

THE way they marched to all was known,
Custom had made that track their own.
'Twas to those rovers mere child's play
To plunder there, sometimes to slay,
•And often to enslave.
And all the peaceful tribes, who dwelt
Around—the heavy hand had felt—
•Of Caribs, fierce and brave.

p. 96

Their large canoes were often seen
As they sailed round from Marowin
And Surinam to Corentyn,
•Then towards that river's head.
Above the falls they cross Berbice,
And march where all is perfect peace
•(For peaceful are the dead).
That region they have swept quite bare,
And all the people who lived there
•Are captive, slain, or fled.

O'er Essequibo then they go;
Plunder Macusis, or, below,
•Sweep the Brazilian plain.
Or towards those mountains bend their course
Where noble rivers have their source—
•The Pacaraima chain.

Then, northward of that mountain line,
With the Caroni men they join.
There many rivers have their rise.
Descending one, they soon surprise,
•Near Orinoco's tide,
Some peaceful village; or destroy
A warlike band, and thus annoy
•Their foes who there reside.

On rafts concealed they float near shore,
With grass or branches covered o'er.
Sometimes on fallen trees they glide,
Such as come downward with the tide.
Woe to the victims they surprise!

p. 98

All adults slain, each girl a prize
•Must in their hands remain.
Then with the plunder of the place,
Their own far distant homes to grace,
•They eastward turn again.

••••*••*••*

Once from those parts a message came
That tarnished was their ancient fame,
And from their nation's warlike name
•The glory had been rent.
To reassert the Carib might,
Her thousand warriors for the fight
•Then Essequibo sent.
That number largely was increased
By Caribs who lived farther east;
By Surinam's bold fighting men,
By warriors even from Cayenne;
•And they all westward went.
For sore was then the nation's need,
And every Carib man made speed.

Gay ornaments they cast aside,
War's stern equipment to provide.
Weapons and hammock each man bore,
Cassava bread, and meal in store;
With paint each face was reddened o'er,
•To terrify their foes.
All left their families that day
The stern war summons to obey.
Burning their enemies to slay,
•None could in peace repose.

p. 99

THE WAR ON THE ORINOCO.

Now when they reach Caroni's banks,
They find additions to their ranks.
From fair Barahma, Waiini,
And Amac•ru, men they see;
•Some from Bowruma's head.
All come to fight the Cabré race,
In Cabré blood wash out disgrace,
•And thus avenge their dead.

By desultory fights enraged,
Both sides in earnest had engaged.
The Cabrés made their clans unite
Under one leader for that fight,
•And dealt a deadly blow.
The Caribs, who till then believed
Themselves invincible, received
•A total overthrow!

Most of them were in battle slain,
Many were drowned, and few remain
•To tell how went the fight.
But there is one 1 remembers well,
Who has been spared that he may tell
•Of the succeeding night.

p. 100

He then was forced to climb a tree,
That thence he might the better see
The savage victors eat the slain;
And there the wretch had to remain
•Till morning, legends say.
The chieftain, Tep, released him then,
And bade him "bring his countrymen
•For food some other day."

Ah! better had the victors spared
That horrid deed and taunt, which, heard,
Inspired with deadly hate their foe,
Who vowed to strike a mortal blow.

They vowed, and had it in their power,
Their strength increasing every hour.—
•Allies by hundreds came.
At length ten thousand men, they say,
The Caribs mustered for the fray,
•To wipe away their shame.

In deadly fight they met again;
Each meant to conquer or be slain.
•The Caribs victors were.
Their fury nothing could withstand—
Though Cabrés met them hand to hand,
•And fought with wild despair—
Nor thought of turning from the fight:
They found the memory of that night
•Was heavy then to bear.

p. 101

They saw the numbers of their foe,
Which seemed continually to grow;
And so—returning blow for blow—
•They fought; and perished there!

Their warriors then in battle fell:
And stern the fate, as legends tell,
•Of *all* who bore their name.
For, soon as that grim fight was done,
Extermination was begun;
•Soiling the victor's fame.

The conquering Caribs then could go
Where Orinoco's torrents flow;1
Where castellated rocks are seen,
O'er the vast foam, with summits green;
Whose graceful palms and forest trees
Seem shadows, till the wished-for breeze
•Disperse the mists around.
Returning home, each Carib brave
Would pass by many a bloody grave:
But, from those falls to ocean's wave,
•*No living foe* was found!

p. 102

III. MYTHOLOGICAL LEGENDS OF THE ANCIENT WORLD.

THE Caribs now from foes are free,
Enjoying feast and revelry.
A large canoe is brought on shore,
And with "paiwari" running o'er.
Gay feathers crown each warrior's head,
Each has his body tinged with red;
And each, with strip of cotton dressed,
Disposes it o'er back and breast.

Their women, who most wild appear,
Less clothing than their husbands wear,
•Yet each herself adorns.
For anklets, woven bands we see;
Another band below each knee.
(Pins *now* through lower lips project,
As if each would her face protect,
•But *then* they all wore thorns.)
Some stain their skin with spots of blue,
And thus, attractive to the view,
They watch the dance, and join it too.

Men beat the drum, or sound the flute
•(The thigh-bone of some human foe);
But all at length are hushed and mute,
•And empty is the large canoe.

p. 103

The feast is o'er; but old men stay,
And pass in talk another day.
Of wise old chieftains, warriors bold,
And battles in the days of old,
They tell. While some, from eastern streams,
Discourse on these more ancient themes.

1. THE FIRST PEOPLE.

From on high mankind descended;
•Not (as some would say) for food:
They to *cleanse this world* intended,
•That it might be fair and good,
Bright and free from soil or stain,
As the moon, or starry train.

While they toiled, the clouds receded,
•Which had borne them from on high:
Vainly for their help they pleaded;
•None restored them to the sky.
Thus mankind remained below,
In a world of toil and woe.

••••*••*••*

As they wandered, pangs of hunger
•Forced them clayey earth to take;
Which, that they might starve no longer,
•Making fire, they tried to bake.
But their cakes, when they were "done,"
Were like sand, or crumbling stone.

p. 104

Tamosi1 had there provided
•Wild fruits, suiting beast or bird.
By those creatures kindly guided
•To the trees which each preferred,
Men partook: but still would sigh
For the food they left on high.

2. THE FIRST CULTIVATION.

Tamosi, the Mighty Maker
•(Whom no mortal eye can see),
Made, that man might be partaker
•Of His gifts, a wondrous tree.
Though on earth huge trees have grown,
None like that was ever known.

High o'er all its head uprearing,
•Cloudlike mass of brilliant green!
On its noble branches bearing
•Fruits, which none before had seen.
Each a different kind would bear;
Beauteous clusters, high in air!

Lower down—its trunk surrounding,
•Plaintains grew, bananas sweet:
All choice plants were there abounding
•Which we now (in gardens) meet.

p. 105

Golden maize, so fresh and fair,
Waved its plummy tresses there.

Sweet cassava one might find there,
•With the bitter, 'neath the fruits;
Yams, potatoes, every kind, where
•Widely spread its mighty roots.
There was found, in pristine state,
All that men now cultivate.

••••*••*••*

'Twas Maipuri, that way roaming
•(Whom some white men "Tapir" call);
From the river's margin coming,
•He observed it first of all;
In the woodlands, where it grew;
While no other creature knew.

Daily, through the forest stealing,
•He devoured its fruits which fell;
Its existence still concealing:
•What he fed on none could tell.
Men, who saw him fat and sleek,
Sent forth scouts the truth to seek.

First, "Woodpecker." He kept tapping
•(From long habit) each old tree.
Shrewd Maipuri heard him rapping,
•And another way went he.
But the Rat, with silent toil,
Tracked his steps—then *shared the spoil*.

p. 106

Shared it—till some food, delicious,
•Sticking to his lips was found;
And mankind, become suspicious,
•Made him show that feeding ground.
All exclaimed, "O noble tree!
Precious gift of Tamosi!"

••••*••*••*

Then an oracle commanded—
•"Cut it down!"—They wondered all;
Yet sharp stones, as fate demanded,
•Caused it in ten months to fall;
Crashing, thund'ring to the ground,
While they fly, or tremble round!

Then, a fair division making,
•For his field each man provides;
Slips and cuttings freely taking
•From its branches, roots, and sides.
"Gaining thus at once," 'tis said,
"Precious fruits and daily bread."

3. THE ROCK AND THE WOOD.

Pleasant as the breath of morning
•Was the life which all lived then.
But misfortune came; a warning
•Of still greater ills to men.
'Neath the roots of that great tree
Some a sacred grot could see.

p. 107

Saw they there the Water-Mother
•Bathing in her loved abode?
That it was her form, none other,
•Soon the swelling waters showed.
Men had all been swept away
By a gushing flood that day—

But a rugged rock, befriending
•(By what power none can know),
Closed the fountain. They, attending,
•Saw it stop the mighty flow;
And drew near that rock, which then
Gave forth oracles to men:

Saying, "Though I from the waters
•Save you, there may come a day
When yourselves, your sons and daughters,
•In a flood will pass away.
Listen, then, mankind, to me,
That *your years like mine* may be.

"In yon wood are spirits dwelling,
•Who will tempt you day by day.
If you dread the waters swelling,
•Answer not, whate'er they say!
You are safe while you obey,
Heeding well your rock-stone grey.

"And if age bring evils on you,
•Wrinkled skin, and whitening hair,
You at will may cast them from you,
•Youth renewing, bright and fair:

p. 108

As the serpent glideth clear
From the slough he scorns to wear!"

••••*••*••*

Time has passed. Deteriorating,
•Men grow careless day by day.
Till their hearts, long hesitating,
•Voices from the wood obey.
Heeding what those demons say,
They despise their rock-stone grey.

From the grove then comes, beguiling
•(Sent by man's malignant foes),
Yarrekáru.¹ Men, all smiling,
•See, as towards the rock he goes.
None prevent; whilst he, alone,
Undermines their guardian stone.

As the shades of night close o'er them,
•To their hammocks all repair.
Little reck they that before them
•Stand grim death and dark despair.
From the grove come, mockingly,
Cries of "Waters cover me!"

They respond, "O friend, we hear them!"
•Laugh, and turn to slumber on;
Till the rush of waters near them
•Terrifies the stoutest one.

p. 109

And these words, in solemn tone,
Issue from the outraged stone:

"Lo! the swelling floods before you,
•See their *waters cover me!*
Soon they will be closing o'er you;
•I no more your help can be.
Yet had you but faithful been,
Death no man would e'er have seen!"

••••*••*••*

Swell the mighty floods, prevailing,
•Death's approach in them they see.
Loud their cries, but unavailing,
•"Climb the hill!" or "Climb the tree!"
Tempests rage and torrents flow,
O'er mankind wild waters go!

Yet to three or four is given
•Safety till the floods subside,
For a "komoo" palm (by heaven
•Made to grow) surmounts the tide.
All whom that tree does not save
Sink, as rocks, beneath the wave.1

p. 110

Thus they—while, round the evening fire,
•All in their hammocks swing.
Some curious youth might then inquire,
•"Who made some wondrous thing?"
"What mighty hand could ever trace
Those figures on the lofty face
•Of rocks, which now our eyes
View—near the Orinoco head,
And elsewhere (they are widely spread)—
•With wondering surprise?"

And then some western sorcerer old
Would to the young the tale unfold
Of him who held high place, we see,
In Tamanac mythology.
No hand but his, they think, could trace
Those carvings of an ancient race,
•Which vanished long ago;
Where savage Indians, in their place,
•Now wander to and fro.

IV. LEGEND OF AMALIVACA.

WHILE the deluge was subsiding
•From some land of unknown name,
O'er the mighty waters gliding,
•Great Amalivaca came.
Sailing on where now are seen
Widespread plains and forests green.

Ocean waves he had crossed over,
•Sailing in his large canoe;

p. 111

From that other side a rover,
•Seeking lands and people new.
Doubtless sent our race to raise,
Helping men in many ways.

In the sculptures I am showing,
•Now so high, his work you see!
Waters at that height were flowing,
•So he carved them easily.
Carved them from his great canoe,
Taught mankind to carve them too.

Each device and time-worn figure
•Had, of old, its well-known lore;
Voiceless all—they spake with vigour
•To the *eye* in days of yore.
But our wisest all allow
None can read their lessons now.

••••*••*••*

When the mighty floods were failing,
•And the land again was seen,
There were not (as now) prevailing
•Widespread plains and forests green.
Wildly rugged all the ground,
Then Amalivaca found.

But his brother gave assistance,
•And by that good brother's aid,
Overcoming all resistance,
•Smooth and gentle slopes he made.

p. 112

Many rocks and cliffs, men say,
By their power were charmed away.

Thus the earth for habitation
•Much more suitable was found:
Then said he, "Communication
•There must be with all around.
In a forest path or road,
Each perforce must bear his load.

"But when a *canoe* is bearing,
•Heavy burdens light become;
So let each man make his 'clearing'
•Near some stream, and fix his home.
All around us streams we see;
On them let your traffic be."

Men, who heard him thus advising,
•Said, "Amalivaca, hear!
With the falling tide, or rising,
•Easy is our course, and clear.
We the current then obey,
Going with it either way.

"When we pass the tidal power,
•Going up, no help is found:
Heavy is the work each hour,
•Weariness and toil abound.
Now exert thy wondrous skill—
Strive to remedy this ill."

p. 113

Then he spent much toil and trouble
•On great Orinoco's flood;
Strove to make *its current double*;
•Grand idea—wise and good!
But that stubborn stream, they say,
Would persist in its own way.

With a double current flowing,
•One side up, the other down,
We might either way be going
•Swiftly from each little town.
Would the river not do so?"
Orinoco answered, "No!"

Then he strove the tides of ocean
•To the upper stream to bring;
But the river, with emotion,
•Said, "You seek a fatal thing:
If the tide should higher go,
All will be submerged below!"

Water seems a yielding creature,
•Mov'd by passing breeze or shower;
None can change its stubborn nature
•Who has not its Maker's power.
This Amalivaca learned;
And from fruitless labour turned.

••••*••*••*

When he from this land departed,
•Having done what he could do,
[p. 114](#)
Some with tears, and all sad-hearted,
•Watched his lessening canoe.
And from that time nevermore
Comes he to this Western shore!

When the black-robed teachers found us,
•We inquired "if they had seen
Him, who left such marks around us,
•Who had our Great Teacher been;
Who those high rocks sculptured so?"[1](#)
And we grieved when all said, "No!"

—

The Caribs, in their conq'ring hour,
Had reached the zenith of their power.
A few years pass; and then we see
Those who were near the Caroni
Beneath the monks live peacefully;
Till revolution shatters all,
And in the crash those missions fall!

[p. 115](#)

LEGEND OF MANÁROWA.

I.

SWEET is his Essequibo home:
Yet still Manárowa will roam
•To gain more power and fame.
Though, from that river's sources—south—
To Dutch plantations near its mouth,
•The tribes all fear his name.

From Orinoque to Corentyn,
Fighting and plund'ring he has been,
•The bold Manárowa!
The Indians round him own his sway.
And slaves, as tribute, to him pay:
•All, save the Tarumá.

They on that stream above are found;
But he, to reach them, must go round,
•Ascending the Rewa.
For the great Essequibo Fans,
Never yet passed, like mighty walls,
•Confront Manárowa.

The chief has pondered long, and said,
"Those Tarumas we must invade,
•And take them by surprise.
O'er those grim cat'racts we will haul
Our light canoes; and on them fall,
•As coming from the skies!"

Now he has scaled one wat'ry wall,
Where a small island in the fall
•Precarious footing gave.
With toil they hoist and carry o'er
Their craft; which float where none before
•E'er danced upon the wave.

With that great fall they scarce have done,
Ere they come to a *greater* one.
•No footing there is found.
Their chieftain says, "We now must clear
A pathway through the forest here,
•And drag our vessels round."

Thus they, still toiling day by day,
O'er falls and rapids work their way
•With labour most severe.
They pass the mouth of Cuyuwine—
Some woodskins are before them seen;
•"The Tarumas appear!"

The rocks are high, the Caribs nigh,
No power is theirs to fight or fly;
•They sink beneath the tide.
The Caribs line each rocky shore,
But those poor Tarumas no more
•Will be by them espied!

"Have we," the chief exclaims, "thus far
Come through such perils to make war
•On an amphibious race?"

p. 117

Themselves and woodskins they now hide,
In caverns deep beneath the tide:
•And thus elude our chase!"

Abandoning that river then,
The Carib chieftain leads his men
•By land, to hunt their prey.
Returning homewards (says our tale),
With captives, to the Dutch for sale,
•By a less dangerous way.

••••*••*••*

To all on Essequibo known,
The tale had to a legend grown,
•Of that "amphibious race"
Eluding him, "who ventured o'er
A path no mortal man before,
•Or after, dared to trace!"

Thus they, for near one hundred years:—
A white explorer¹ then appears;
•Who to the Taruma
Crosses, o'er every dangerous fall,
Giving thar highest, worst of all,
•Its name—"Manárowa."

II.

The rule of Holland passed away,
"Stabroek"² now owns the British sway.
•Manárowa has come
p. 118
The British governor to see,
With his red-coated soldiery,
•And hear the fife and drum.

Stout Caribs, chosen from his band,
Attendant on their chieftain stand,
•Each with his feathered crown,
Red paint, and scarf, of cotton made
(Six yards), o'er back and breast displayed,
•With tassels hanging down.

The governor receives him well;
For one is there the tale to tell
•From Aruabisi shore;
"How Arawâks and Caribisce
Had both prepared to break the peace,
•And fight it out once more.

"But when the British magistrate
Had called their chiefs—to mediate
•At 'Henrietta' there,
All Caribs, by Manárowa,
Were ordered (and his word was law)
•From fighting to forbear."

'Twas so. An aged man told me,
When *he* made peace, I went to see
•(Though then a little thing),
His stately form I viewed with awe,
And white men said, 'Manárowa.
•The Caribisi King!'"

p. 119

In Demerara 'twas the same;
When he before white rulers came,
•The savage he could hide.
Young officers, prepared to laugh,
Found him no object for their "chaff,"
•But calm and dignified.

Some wished for an experiment,
And gained the governor's consent
•To test the Carib's nerve.
A well-rammed cannon, placed near by,
Was, without warning, fired, to try
•If he would shrink or swerve.

It startled *some of them* (the "bang"
Shook the whole house with fearful clang);
•Manárowa was calm.
Nor limb nor muscle moved he then.
The governor said, "Gentlemen,
•For, nerve—who bears the palm?"

Loaded with gifts, see him return
(Allies of white men such can earn);
•And his glad tribe behold
A crescent on his breast appear,
Not silver, such as "captains" wear—
•Manárowa's is *gold!*

Yet glory is but for a day,
Prosperity will pass away,
•Old age must still come on.

p. 120

And when Great Britain, with a frown,
Viewed the slave-trade, and put it down,
•His business was gone.

(Then to the governor, a slave—
A Carib—for a present, gave,
•As chiefs of old would give.
Refused, he clave the young man's head,
Turned to his men, and sternly said,
•"Let no more captives live!")

And when, for such, a sale was found,
In Surinam, upon new ground;
•Manárowa was dead.
Small-pox and *rum* consumed his clan;
He saw them dying, man by man;
•Grieved, and his spirit fled!

CONCLUSION.

THE remnant of his once great clan,
•Which held its head so high;
Then withered, as by deadly ban,
•Brazilians forced to fly.
For they an English teacher heard,
And learned from him the Saviour's word.

They came to Georgetown with their grief,
•For who such grief could hide?
And there I saw their youthful chief
•Walk by his pastor's side,
With that broad crescent on his breast

p. 121

•His grandsire wore of old.
In sad procession came the rest
•And their sad story told.
Macusis mingled with the band,
All driven from Macusi land.

And here it boots not to relate
•How war almost befell;
Nor that good Christian teacher's fate,
•Which mission records tell.
His work and he have passed away;
Both will be found another day!1

On other rivers Caribs live;
To whom we long have sought to give
•The knowledge of our Lord.
And courteous they have ever been
To us amidst their forests green.
Some think their ancient ways the best,
But many Christians are, professed,
•And learn the Saviour's word;
Which taught and held in Christian love
(That *gentle* power—all powers above)
Is mightier than their club of old,
Wielded by warriors strong and bold;
More piercing than their arrows keen,
More glorious in its triumphs seen,
•Than white man's conquering sword!

[Next](#)

Footnotes

p. 91

1 Bancroft (1769) mentions it as still preserved by them.

p. 95

1 In 1664, under M. de La Barre. The English had by that time made a settlement on the Coma, or Surinam, which, in 1667, was exchanged with the Dutch for "New Holland," the present New York. Essequibo and Berbice (now English) were colonised by the Dutch in the early part of the seventeenth century, and remained in their possession nearly two hundred years. Demerara was also founded by them, though at a much later period.

p. 99

1 Humboldt's account, Some of our Caribs say that *two* men were thus spared.

p. 101

1 *The great cataracts (or Raudales) of Atures and Maypures.*

As the Caribs themselves have always been accused of cannibalism, it is but fair to the survivors of that race in Guiana, to say that all those whom I have spoken with deny that their fathers ever were guilty of it, save in mimic action, as a vaunt or threat, to terrify a foe.

Humboldt, who treats the subject fully in his "Narrative," acquits the continental Caribs of the charge, while admitting the cannibalism of the Cabrés (as stated above), of various other inland tribes, and of the *Caribs of the islands* in former days.

p. 104

1 "Tamosi Kabo-tano" (Ancient one of Heaven), The Supreme Being.

p. 108

1 I-arreka-ru (Acawoio, "Iwarreka"), the *monkey*.

p. 109

1 There is an episode, usually given here, of a "cocorite" palm, which mankind strove to ascend, because its top reached the heavens. A poor woman, not in a condition to climb, led the way. When halfway up she was turned into stone by terror and exhaustion. None could help her, and none could pass over her. All who tried to do so became rocks likewise. The terrified survivors then climbed the komoo, and were saved.

p. 114

1 Humboldt, who records the legend of Amalivaca, considers those *rock-carvings* to be "traces of an ancient civilisation, which may have belonged to an epoch when the tribes, which we now distinguish by various names and races, were still unknown."

Whether the mystery attached to those rude sculptures will ever be solved, *even in part*, it is at present impossible to say. In the interest of science, it is desirable that a collection of photographs of the most remarkable—not only on the Orinaco, but (if possible) from the Rio Negro to the Corentyn—should be made and compared.

p. 117

1 Mr. C. B. Brown, 1870.

2 The present Georgetown.

p. 121

1 Rev. T. Youd. Founded Pirara Mission, 1838. Driven from it, 1839. Died (at sea), 1842.

CONTENTS OF PART IV.

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	125
I. MYTHOLOGICAL LEGENDS	126
<i>The First Man and Animals.</i>	
1. Primitive State	126
2. The Monkey's Exploit	127
3. Mishaps	131
4. End of Primitive State	133
II. HISTORICAL AND WARLIKE LEGENDS	135
<i>Their War with the Caribs.</i>	
1. First Inroad of the Caribs	135
2. The Surprise on the Cuyuni	137
3. Siege of the Fortified House	138
<i>Civil Strife.</i>	
1. The Aged Friends	141
2. The Massacre and the Pursuit	143
3. The Duel	146
4. Blood Feuds and Dispersion	151
III. KANÁIMA.	152
Blood Revenge (1)	155
Blood Revenge (2)	158

•The settlements of the Acawoio clans extend from the vicinity of Mount Romima eastward to the Berbice, and to the Orinoco on the north.

•Closely connected with them—in language, and probably in origin—are their neighbours, the Macusis

and Aracunas, with their various branches and subdivisions.

•Of the history of those races we know very little beyond what their family traditions may supply. Schomburgk thought that the Macusis formerly lived on the Orinoco. He states also, on historic evidence, that the Arecunas formerly dwelt on the Uaupes, or Ucayari, a tributary of the Rio Negro. All beyond is enveloped in the mist of ages.

[Next](#)

p. 125

Legends of the Acawoios.

—

INTRODUCTION.

WERE that which seems a dream accomplished now,
And mortal man to tread Roráima's brow,
He, from that mighty wall, the homes would see
Of scattered clans—a people wild and free.
From one old parent stock those races all
Have sprung, which we the "K•pohn-y•mu" call.

One, whose forefathers were their chiefs of old,
At my request, their ancient legends told;

p. 126

Their quaint mythology—(its op'ning page
Like some sweet idyl of the "golden age"),
And old-time wars, 'twixt those whose children come
To find, on mission land, a peaceful Christian home!

I. MYTHOLOGICAL LEGENDS.

THE FIRST MAN AND ANIMALS

1. PRIMITIVE STATE.

FIRST, my Acawoi narrator
•Told how beasts and birds were made;
How the Mighty, their Creator,
•Gave them Laws to be obeyed.
Made them of *one speech* to be,
Bade them live in unity.

That there might be no oppression,
•Man was made, and placed o'er all.
That first man, of wise discretion,
•"Makonáima's son" we call,
Just, as well as kind, was he:
All obeyed him lovingly.

Ere the sun's bright rays were burning,
•All dispersed in forests near;
With the cool of day returning,
•Glad his loving call to hear.
Each one of his food would bring;
Homage paid to man—their king.

p. 127

No great trouble or disaster
•Could oppress them or annoy;
For the man, their gentle master,
•In their good placed all his joy.
Surely, we no more shall see—
In this world—such unity.

••••*••*••*

Then, 'tis said, great Makonáima,
•Made for them a wondrous tree,
Capp'd with clouds, like high Roráima,
•Bearing fruits abundantly—
Every kind—the meed to be
•Of their love and loyalty!

2. THE MONKEY'S EXPLOIT.

What the Caribs may tell of that wonderful tree,
With our own native legend would mainly agree;
But we say that "Ahkoo"1 the noble tree found—
That our *first man alone* brought it down to the ground,
And the animals helped him in planting around.

For the beasts and the birds were industrious all,
Till "Iwarreka" (so the brown monkey we call)

p. 128

•••To the spirit of play
•••And sheer mischief gave way;
Then he plagued and tormented the rest all the day.
•••His work was not done,
•••For he thought but of fun,
And into the wildest excesses would run.

He grinned when they begged him to let them alone,
So they to the master complained—every one.

•••He pulls at our tails,
•••Or nips with his nails,
And will bite us severely when any trick fails."

So the master passed sentence on that wicked elf—
"Iwarreka, leave us, and work by thyself;
It will keep thee from mischief to go to yon spring,
And thence, in a basket, fresh water to bring."

••••*••*••*••*••*

When the tree was cut down, the good master soon found
Swelling waters within: and he saw there abound
Those fishes which now swim in rivers around.

•••"Though more labour for me,
•••This a blessing will be,
To have fishes in fresh water, as in the sea.
"I will spread them," said he; "every river shall share:
For all rivers have equal right to my care."

•••Then, addressing the well,
•••He said, "Wilt thou tell
For what purpose thy wonderful waters now swell?"
And he found that those waters, ere next rise of sun,
O'er the world, all around, were preparing to run.

p. 129

Then with dexterous hands a wide basket he made,
Which, inverted, he over the hollow stump laid;
And such was its virtue that, while it remained
As he placed it, the fountain within was restrained.

••••*••*••*••*••*••*

Iwarreka, meanwhile, obedience shirking,
•••Had given up working,
And near to the spot at that time he was lurking.
He, seeing the basket thus placed with such care,
Said, "The choicest of fruits our sly master hides there.
•••I will take while I may,
•••Now they all are away,
Such a fine chance as this will not come ev'ry day."

So, with a light spring, on the margin he stands;
The basket he raises with pilfering hands—
One moment, no more—for a terrible flood
Bursting forth, sends him rolling in water and mud.
•••With splutter and scream,
•••He is borne down the stream:
A warning to all the dishonest, we deem.

His screams are sufficient the others to scare,
They all come in affright, and the master is there;
But more for themselves than the monkey they care.

••"See the water!" they cried,
••"Pouring over the side.
See! the fishes are all swimming down with the tide.
See, the stump and the roots are all forced from the ground,
And the land disappears as the waters flow round.
O man, our good leader! we cleave to thy side,
And thou for the safety of all must provide."

p. 130

So the man leads the way, till before him he sees
A tall hill, with high rocks; and some cocorite trees.
Then says, "We may find a last refuge in these.
••You, who rest in a tree,
••Here may climb up with me;
And in yonder high cave all the others must be."

So the birds fly up first; and then up the tree go
The opossum, coati, and others you know.
Black monkeys and brown soon the master surround,
All striving to get farthest off from the ground.
There the queer spider monkey, with long limbs, is seen.
"Sakuwinki's" lithe form, and his fur olive green;
The red-bearded one, which "Arowta"1 we call;
The marmosets small—and, in fact, monkeys all,
There sit, in the palm, to be kept safe from harm,
With their tails round their neck, curled, to keep themselves warm.

Such a rain then succeeded as none before knew,
Nor has such been experienced by me or by you.
Fierce lightning, loud thunder; no sight of the sun
Till three or four nights into one night had run.

••••*••*••*••*••*••*

The man sat with patience, for, do what he would,
He knew that he never could stay that great flood;
But he let fall the seeds of the cocorite tree,
To tell, by the splash, where the water might be.
He at length found it lower; at last it seemed gone;
Then they ate of the palm-fruits, and welcomed the dawn.

p. 131

3. MISHAPS.

Thus the man, beasts, and birds were preserved, as we see,
Though cold, wet, and hungry, of course they would be.
But *some* met with *troubles*, of which, sages say,
Their children bear tokens to this very day.

And first, the "baboon," as your creoles now call
The great howling monkey, the reddest of all.
His voice, we are told, ere he climbed up that tree,
Was more pleasant to hear than his person to see.
He began *first* to roar, as he felt his heart fail,
When those waters were wetting his feet and his tail,
And he knew they would drown him if they should prevail.

•••With his cries sore distressed,
•••All began to protest,
But he louder and louder his terrors expressed.
Though his throat did not burst with the strain of those cries,
It *then grew* to be twice its original size!
And its shape we may see when his sons meet our eyes.

••••*••*••*••*••*••*

The man bore up bravely, our old legends say,
But his flock, grown unruly, gave trouble that day;
•••Few cared to obey,
And each, like the monkey, desired his own way.

He bade all keep their places till he should have found
If danger awaited them on the damp ground;
•••And the trumpeter bird
•••With the others then heard,
Yet he would not from getting down first be deterred.

p. 132

"Yahgahmi, beware!" said the man, with a frown,
As into a nest of fierce ants he flew down.
Alas, for the bird! for that raverious swarm,
Ere the master could capture him, did him great harm,
•••Each leg was a stick
•••(Though once fairly thick),
For those ants had deprived it of all they could pick.

Having cleared off the ants, the long-suffering man
Said, "I'll kindle a fire, if I possibly can."
The sticks which he carried, though not kept quite dry,
Would, by friction incessant, yield fire by and by.
It was kindled at length; and then, while he looked round
To see if of fuel some kind might be found,
The "mar•di" 1 pecked up the red coal from the ground.
•••And away the bird flew,
•••So that no one then knew;
But, in time, his misfortune they plainly could view;
For his throat, much inflamed, took a fiery glow
From the coal he pecked up (for an insect) below.

••••*••*••*••*

The man looked for his fire; and before him then stood
The first alligator, come forth from the mud.
That reptile was then well-conducted, they say,
And had come his respects to the master to pay.
But the rest, who disliked him, said "*He* took the fire!"
And the man, cold and weary, gave way to his ire.
Forcing open his mouth, to search there (he was wrong),
Found his tongue in the way—and he pulled out the tongue!2

p. 133

O sad were the mishaps of that fatal day—
The reptile, disgusted, went (*tongueless*) away;
And *from that time* made war on all creatures, they say.
He never could need a memento of wrong,
When he thought of his huge mouth, bereft of a tongue.

4. END OF PRIMITIVE STATE.

Then the birds and beasts, rebelling,
•Soon forsook their guardian mild;
Pride of freedom in them swelling,
•In the forests all went wild.
There their children bear, we see,
Tokens of their ancestry.

Though no ants their limbs assail now,
•Thin-legged "*trumpeters*" are bred;
On bright embers none regale now,
•Still *marudis'* throats are red.
Alligators—wanting tongues—
Show (and share) their father's wrongs.

Still *red howlers* loudly bellow,
•(As their father did from fear)
Night and morn; each horrid fellow
•Frightens all weak creatures near.
Monkeys, still by mischief led,
Like their sire, a "ducking" dread.

Free as air then roved those creatures;
•(Save their wild notes, all grown dumb),

p. 134

Till they saw, with savage natures,
•Beasts of prey and hunters come:
Felt their bloody, cruel reign,
Wished their guardian back again.

—

Wondrous deed and strange adventure
•Of that good man I could tell;
But their length might meet your censure.
•So I cease while all is well.
Yet must say that every day
Bad men sought the good to slay.

Envy made their hatred stronger:
•He was forced to leave them there.
Yet, when they were suff'ring hunger,
•Sent for them his bread to share.
They, partaking of his food,
Sought again to shed his blood!

Then, a precipice ascending,
•On that cliff immense and high
(With a faithful few attending),
•He was seen beneath the sky.
Evil men he left below!
Here to suffer want and woe.

And he left no track behind him,
•All who sought to climb would fall;
None could follow there to find him,
•'Twas like high Rorairna's wall!
Nay, since none now know its name.
Some may think that cliff *the same*.

p. 135

II. HISTORICAL AND WARLIKE LEGENDS.

THEIR WAR WITH THE CARIBS.

SEEK you to know the story of our race?
Its origin no living man can trace.
We only know our ancient dwelling-place.

My ancestors once dwelt, our legends say,
Where Masaruni cuts his rugged way
From mountains, where stupendous rocks abound,
By falls prodigious, to this lower ground.
North of that river my forefathers dwelt
In days of old, and no great evils felt.

'Twas by the Caribs they were forced to flee;
Though small the Carib gain, as you will see.
That race then lorded it o'er all the land,
And all the other tribes had felt their hand.
Not yet our Acawoios, who were sure
That they, 'midst rugged mountains, dwelt secure.

1. FIRST INROAD OF THE CARIBS.

Great was the horror, when a cry
At night proclaimed the Caribs nigh!
•They came, a num'rous train;
And ravaged through the neighb'ring land,
Where our bold brethren made a stand;
•Some Caribs there were slain.
Nought could their comrades' wrath assuage,

p. 136

Who killed their captives in their rage;
•Then, seeing boys remain,
They maiméd some, and some *impaled*,
To show their vengeance had not failed.

Our warriors met, an angry train,
That ere the Caribs came again
•They might for them prepare.
And our old chief said, "Brethren, see!
'Tis *here* their next attack will be;
•This place must be our care.
Help me this house to fortify
With palisado, strong and high,
•That we may keep at bay
Those murderers, until you come
With men from ev'ry distant home
•To sweep them all away."

'Twas done. All joined to fortify,
With palisado strong and high.
•Then the far-seeing chief
Said to his neighbours, "There must be,
For us, and for each family
•Whose danger causes grief,
From this house down to yon ravine,
A passage which cannot be seen—
•A passage underground."
They made it, working day by day,
Some dug, some bore the earth away;
While others propped the roof, they say,
•To make it safe and sound.

2. THE SURPRISE ON THE CUYUNI.

While they were all assembled there,
A breathless scout bade them "Prepare!
For, Caribs now are on their way,
They come, the whole of us to slay!"

Then said the chief, "Who could have thought
Of such good news as now is brought?
•Since *all are here* to-day.
Arise I we need no longer talk;
We'll save the Caribs half their walk,
•By meeting them midway!"

Our warriors to Cuyuni go.
And from its banks behold the foe
•Coming before the breeze.
Their frail but numerous barques draw nigh;
Our men with hate those foes espy;
•Yet close amidst the trees.
They hide themselves and see them land.
Their foes, reclining, on the strand,
•Then eat and take their ease,
No scout; no watch! They know no fear.
Nor think a deadly ambush near!

Hark, that fierce cry! As up they start,
At each man flies a fatal dart:
•One half their death-wounds bear.
The others, with a dreadful cry,
At once to their flotilla fly;
•*Their weapons all are there!*

No valour can regain the day.
•Death falls in every blow;
Their men will for no mercy pray,
•And ours no mercy show.
Soon, half in water, half on land,
Two hundred corpses line the strand.

Our warriors, bloody from that fight,
•Then up the river go;
To bathe in water clear and bright:
•For there clear waters flow,
Though with dead bodies—sickening sight—
•And blood, defiled below.

3. SIEGE OF THE FORTIFIED HOUSE.

Again the Caribs, strong and bold,
Returned, as our old chief foretold;
•Who, speaking to his men,
Said, "For each warrior we have slain,
He sure, when they shall come again,
•The Caribs will bring *ten*.
And I, to meet them, can rely
•On none but you, who live near by."

It was so. When the foe drew near,
To help him he saw few appear.
"This place is lost," the chieftain said,
•"But they shall surely pay
Full dearly, with their warriors dead,
•For what they get this day!"

p. 139

Then to the women: "Ye shall live;
•Wait till the fight is high.
And *foes engaged*, then, when I give
•The signal, quickly fly!
Fly through the tunnel's friendly shade.
Fly silent through each forest glade;
•Utter no timid cry!
Thither we soon shall follow you,
But first, what this small band can do
•'Gainst numbers—we will try!"

••••*••*••*

The Caribs to the assault drew nigh
And scanned the place with curious eye,
•But saw their leaders fall.
From bulwarks strong swift arrows flew.
How fatal soon those Caribs knew—
•Tipped with "wourali" all!

To storm the place, forth from the bush
Came their best men with furious rush.
Their shocks soon made the timbers shake.
•Which some began to hew.
Those who an entrance strove to make
•By climbing, our men slew;
Yet still the place they tried to take.
•The many from the few!

Some dug beneath the wooden wall,
And made a hole through which to crawl;
But those who entered that way, *all*
•There entered but to die!
Amazed at such resistance, then

p. 140

The Carib chiefs called off their men
•Not to retreat or fly—
But said, "Our warriors brave are slain
By foes who still untouched remain.
•A safer course we try!"

Then flaming arrows swiftly poured
Upon the loop-holed sides of board,
•And that thatched roof on high.
Soon roof and sides were in a blaze,
And they their joyfur shouts could raise
•Of "Victory!" the cry.

They burst the enclosure, waiting there
The shrieks of agony and fear.
Had any wretch rushed forth in pain,
They would have thrust him in again.
But quiet, save the fiery roar,
•They round all things remain.
Our men had gone down through the floor,
And soon would reach Pur•ni's shore,
•Not to return again.

The Carib warriors then perceived
Their hopes of vengeance all deceived.
•The fire in vain might roar—
The flaming house burned to the ground;
But no charred skeletons were found.
•The passage—covered o'er
With burning timbers—none could heed.
All said, "'Tis sorcery indeed,
•Such as none knew before!"

p. 141

The chiefs then—while the numerous dead
They buried—to their warriors said,
•"Brave Carinyach, give ear!
Demons unhurt can warriors slay,
And heavy is our grief this day,
•Our loss of men severe.
We have no wounded. All are dead!
Some were but scratched, yet fire has fled.
•No longer we stay here!"

So when our warriors came, they found
But blackened ruins on the ground:
And many new-made graves around,
•Filled with the Carib dead.
Then our men followed on their track,
But they delayed not, hastening back.
Nor chief, nor warrior, then would stay;
So to this day our people say,
•"They burned the house—and fled!"

CIVIL STRIFE.

1. THE AGED FRIENDS.

WE kept away the foreign foe;
Yet from ourselves were doomed to know
•An evil greater still.
And that great evil to our race,
We to one man's transgressions trace,
•His hatred and self-will.

p. 142

On the Pur•ni, loved of all,
Dwelt one whom we will "Koé" call;
•Too long his other name.
A chief was staying at his home,
A friend from Masaruni come,
•In rank and years the same.

There the loved guest fell sick and died;
And Koé's fortitude was tried
•The heavy grief to bear.
With his old friend two sons had come:
When they were gone he left his home,
•And went to live elsewhere.

The two young men, who went their way,
At sunset on the second day
•To Masaruni came.
They told their elder brother there,
And had his furious wrath to bear,
•Reproach and bitter blame.

"Our father there is dead, you say?
Then Koé took his life away
•By poison or by charm!
If I am chieftain, here this day,
My warriors shall with me straightway
•Avenge this grievous harm."

Then long the younger brothers prayed,
To turn him from his wrath, and said,
•"Koé is not to blame:

p. 143

He grieved when our good father died;
If you assail him, you provide
•For all deep grief and shame!"

Still he with causeless anger burned.
And would not from his wrath be turned,
•And so—our troubles came!
Ekahruwa, so he was called.
From no fierce crime would shrink appalled.
•But breathed forth death and flame.

2. THE MASSACRE AND PURSUIT.

"Alas! why are we captives here?
Why forced to bear, by fate severe.
•The plunder of our home?
Why have we seen our fathers slain?
No Caribs sweep the land again—
From *our own race* this bloody stain
•And misery have come!"

Five youthful maidens thus bewail
Their heavy lot: until words fail.
•And tears alone remain.
But their stern captors cry, "Beware!
And patiently your burdens bear,
Or you the bloody fate shall share
•Of those before you slain!"

••••*••*••*

p. 144

Ekahruwa, by sorcery led,
Had vowed to cleave the hoary head,
•As a most righteous deed.
Of Masaruni men a band,
The desperadoes of the land,
Hastened to march 'neath his command,
•With secrecy and speed.

And they to Koé's place had come:
There, finding he had left his home,
•Stern was their leader's eye.
The neighbours spoke, he would not heed,
But said, "Has he escaped indeed—
The hoary wretch I doomed to bleed?
•Then *you* for him must die!"

So cruelly those men he slew,
And would have killed the women too:
•Then said his men, "Refrain!
Ten men this day we've helped you slay;
It is enough—we will not stay.
Take now the girls and spoil away,
•And hasten home again!"

••••*••*••*

Some of their number nevermore
Shall see wild Masaruni's shore;
•For far and wide have spread
Tidings of that flagitious deed,
And all Pur•ni men make speed
•To view their slaughtered dead.

p. 145

Young men to save the maidens fly,
And every forest path they try,
•Like dogs to hunting bred.
And when the murderers' track is found,
They shout the news to all around;
Then on in silence, save *one sound*,
•Their rapid Indian tread.

••••*••*••*

'Tis evening of the second day,
The ravagers are on their way;
•They hear a deadly groan.
The hindmost falls, and his death cry
Warns them that some dire foe is nigh:
•And soon that foe is shown—

For arrows rattle through the bush,
And arméd men with furious rush
•(To captives welcome sight!)
Dash forth, and let the maidens free,
Who now their hateful captors see
•In swift and headlong flight.
Each for himself will now provide,
And though their chief would stem the tide,
•None dare await the fight.

Then to his foes he calls, "Draw nigh
One at a time to fight; and I
•The whole of you will slay!
Which of you can compete with me
In swiftness, strength, or archery,
•In sport or bloody fray?

p. 146

"Now hear, Pur•ni people, all!
Nine men I've seen around me fall,
•By your sharp arrows slain.
Put them against the men I killed;
Still is my vengeance unfulfilled,
•And I must *come again*.
I come—and that old man shall die;
If him you screen, or aid to fly,
•None living shall remain!"

The threats Ekahruwa had made,
The arrogance he then displayed,
•Left them astonished quite:
When, darting through the forest glade,
•He vanished from their sight.
No living foe they then discern,
And soon the cheerful watch-fires burn;
•The maidens rest all night.
Then, with the spoil, all homeward turn,
•Glad of the morning light.

3. THE DUEL.

Ekahruwa soon came again,
And at his back a numerous train
•From red Roráima's wall.
They came to shed that old man's blood:
Pur•ni men against them stood,
•Prepared to stand or fall
In his defence. While, man by man,
Our countrymen of every clan
•Came, and the chieftains all.

p. 147

The chiefs to mediate drew near,
Called on the aggressor to appear,
•And asked him what he knew.
"No evidence," said he, "I show;
By dreams and secret arts, I know
•That he my father slew."

It matters not what you may say,
My men support me here this day;
•They all believe as I.
I stand here with my numerous band;
Koé must perish by my hand,
•Or I myself will die!"

The old man's family then said,
"Think not that you his blood can shed,
•While we alive remain!
We are prepared with you to fight
Singly, and thus defend the right,
•Upon this grassy plain."

Then said the other, "Fight and die!
Yet in his blood shall Koé lie!"
•He paused. For forth there came
The man whose blood he longed to shed;
The old man with the good white head,
•Whom none but he would blame.

He said, "O K•pohn-y•mu all!
No man for me shall fight, and fall
•By this proud boaster's hand!

p. 148

I here forbid my friends the fight:
This hand, though weak, may do me right;
•A fair field now command!"

Him no entreaties could dissuade.
"Tis better thus to die," he said,
•"Than see my people slain."
So each,—with bow and arrows keen,
And club,—is placed upon the green.
•Few there from grief refrain—
When the old man, upon the field,
Lays down the club he once could wield,
•But ne'er shall wield again,
They see him but one arrow take,
And, till his foe should onslaught make,
•There tranquilly remain.

Ekahruwa begins the fight:
Shifting his ground from left to right,
•His well-aimed arrows fly.
Yet nothing by their flight he gains,
For well that aged man retains
•The keenness of his eye.

Some with his bow he puts aside,
From others swerves, and they go wide;
•Till, with a savage cry,
The strong man says, "My arrows sent
Are from their course by *sorcery* bent!—
•My club I now will try."

p. 149

Swift he comes on, with fell design:
•But midway checks his speed.
He sees the sting-ray's deadly spine1
•On the opposing reed.
And as he notes behind the reed
•The glance of that firm eye,
He for the first time doubts indeed
•Which of the two must die.

He then retires, and shifts his ground;
•Firm the old man remains.
The foe makes feints, and circles round;
•He still his place retains.
From side to side the foe may fly;
•He "covers" him with steady eye.

Once more Ekahruwa retires;
•Pauses; regains his breath.
Then cries, while rage his soul inspires,
•"To one, or both, come death!"
Straight he comes now, with flying bound;
•The arrow leaves the string;
One piercing shriek thrills all around,
The strong man lies upon the ground,
•Reached with his last death spring.

••••*••*••*

p. 150

Shot through the breast, he groans and dies;
•The chieftains all draw near;
Where, o'er the corpse, a brother sighs,
•Then says, "All men, give ear!
I stand to clear this old man's name,
Though it be to my brother's blame.

"I well know how my father died,
And often have I vainly tried
•To stay this growing ill.
Yet for my brother came to fight,
For, though his deeds were far from right,
•*He was my brother still!*

p. 151

"He now is in fair battle slain:
And ere we home return again,
Listen to me, Pur•ni men,
•To all of you I call!
My brother did to death consign
Some of your men, in number *ten*:
While of his men you killed but *nine*.
•*Himself* you've now seen fall!
The *deaths art equal*. Let each side,
If any wrong remain, confide
•In these good chieftains all.
My brother's corpse I bear away;
Peace be between us from this day!"

4. BLOOD-FEUDS AND DISPERSION.

The wise young chief a peace had made,
And for a time the mischief stayed;
Yet civil strife was but delayed;
•At length its fury came.
Men saw war-parties raging go,
'Twixt plain and mountain, to and fro:
Till none security could know,
•All dreaded blood and flame.

Our family went north, they say,
Since they their brethren would not slay;
And crossed the hills; till, far away,
•Barahma they could see.
Some sought the Demerara Fall,
The Arawâks there welcomed all,
p. 152
And gave to them a warrior tall,
•Their guide and chief to be.
The Caribs thence had swept away
An ancient race, as old men say:
But our men kept all foes at bay,
•And lived there peacefully.

At length some warriors order made
With those who in their country stayed:
One sturdy chief made all afraid:
•"Pi•pu" (stump) his name.
But bad men then *Kanáima* sought,
And secretly their murders wrought.
For never can such men be brought
•Their bloody feuds to blame.

—

III. KANÁIMA.

FROM the base of high Roráima
•To the widespread Eastern sea,
Votaries of dread Kanáima
•Track their victims secretly.
Deadly vow must each fulfil,
Real or fancied foe to kill.

He who that dread vow is taking,
•Family and friends must leave;
Wife and children all forsaking,
•No discharge can he receive.
Still around his victim's way,
Hovering night and day to slay.

p. 153

If the victim, warned of danger,
•To some other place should fly,
Soon th' assassin, though a stranger,
•Will to that retreat draw nigh.
Patiently he bides his time,
Waiting to commit the crime.

Stealthily each step he traces,
•Hiding till he strikes the blow.
Poison in the mouth he places
•Of his victim, lying low.
Then, if found with swollen tongue,
None will know who did him wrong.

When the grave has closed upon him,
•The destroyer hovers round:
Dread Kanáima's spell is on him;
•By it he must still be bound,
Till he pierce, with pointed wood,
Through the grave, and *taste the blood*.

Stern Kanáima thus appeasing,
•Who withdraws his direful aid,
All his horrid influence ceasing
•When that off'ring has been made.
Uncontrolled, the votary then
Goes, and lives with other men.

One, who passed us on the water,1
•Had his victim lately slain;
p. 154
There, triumphant, fresh from slaughter,
•He was hast'ning home again,
Feathered crown adorned his head—
Bright red spots his skin o'erspread—

Spots, to show that, nightly ranging
•(So their sorcerers declare),
He, into a jaguar changing,
•Could his victims seize and tear.1
As the "were-wolf" of the East
Prowls, on human flesh to feast.

••••*••*••*

Should the victim 'scape him living,
•Or, if dead, be borne away;
He, no horrid off'ring giving,
•Finds Kanáima on him stay,
Still the spell upon him lies;
Mad, he wanders till he dies.

One, who sank with forests round him,
•To our Mission hill was borne;
First, an ocelot, which found him,
•Horribly his head had torn.
Head and hands he raised in pain,
Scared the beast, then sank again.

Sank—for life no longer striving,
•Christian Indians found him then,
Arawâks, his strength reviving,
•Bore him to his countrymen,
Healed and fed, Kanáima still,
Christians all he vowed to kill!

p. 155

BLOOD REVENGE.

I.

"Even where just law commands it,
•Awful doom is 'Blood for blood.'
But where *private hate* demands it,
•As th' avenger thinketh good,
Bloody work, from sire to son
Handed down, is never done.

For some old offence or error,
•For some grave ancestral wrong,
We must live in constant terror—
•For some deed committed long
Ere we drew the vital breath,
We are doomed to cruel death!

••••*••*••*

From the Masaruni river
•Wahmoro, good chieftain, came;
Hoping thus his name to sever
•From his brother's life of shame.
Men by poison lost their lives,
And that brother took their wives.

Soon, with wives and children, flying
•From his foes, to Wahmoro,
He found safety, there applying;
•Yet in his old ways would go,
Spake of things which should not be
To his nieces, secretly.

Following his evil nature,
•'I,' said he, 'the chief must be.

p. 156

Men approve my strength and stature,
•*You*, as *wives*, shall live with me.
If your father bar my way,
Father, brother, I must slay.'

Deeply Wahmoro was grieved,
•When those words his daughters told.
Then this message he received
•From his uncle, grey and old,
'By thy brother doomed to die,
At the point of death I lie.'

He (with words which blast like lightning)
•Had addressed old Orubu:—
'With a man whose hairs are whit'ning,
•What hath this young wife to do?
Ill this woman suiteth thee,
Give her therefore unto me.'

'Ill it suits,' replied the old man,
•'Thus to give one's wife away;
He who seeks must be a bold man,
•Though my hair be turning grey.
She, who children bears to me,
Must I give her up to thee?'

Then the bad man said, 'Forgive me
•'Twas in jest I spake to thee;
No annoyance I will give thee,
•Faithful friend I mean to be.'
Yet, with poison, he, false friend!
Brought the old man to his end.

p. 157

Dying, but to vengeance wedded,
•'Wahmoro,' the old man said,
'Take my bow and shaft spear-headed,
•With them lay my murderer dead.
That, sad duty falls on thee,
Head of all our family.'

To the chieftain's son, then leaning
•O'er his hammock, thus he said:
'Take this club; full well its meaning
•He will know; then cleave his head.
Ere he do the same to thee
As to others and to me.'

They, the proffered weapons taking,
•Held them in the murd'rer's view.
Stern he eyed them, never quaking,
•Though his doom full well he knew.
'Strike!' said he, 'for Orubu,
I shall have avengers too!'

Swift his household, armed, to save him,
•On the two assailant's pressed;
But the wound that arrow gave him
•Nailed one arm across his breast.
By the club he then was slain,
Fiercely battling on the plain.

Vainly his brave sons, defending,
•Two young striplings at his side,
As they saw their sire contending,
•O'er his body fought—and died!

p. 158

Neighbours then, who saw that fray.
Bade the chief *the whole* to slay.

'Heard ye not his threat? Take warning!
•Slay his broods ere they can slay.'
But the chief, such slaughter scorning,
•Bade each mother 'not delay.'
'Here,' said he, 'you cannot stay;
Rear your sons—but far away.'

II.

"Years rolled on, still coming, going,
•Then the impostor¹ summoned all.
Said that he 'the Lord' was showing,
•'Christ, on whom the white men call.'
Wahmoro's whole family,
With their tribe, went forth to see.

Disappointed, and returning
•To their fair Barahma home,
After God their hearts were yearning,
•Till they said, 'Once more we'll roam

p. 159

To Bowruma's giant tree:
'Neath its shade our rest shall be.'

Simple teaching there was given
•To three races, dwelling near,
Of that Lord, who came from heaven;
•Each, in its own tongue, could hear.
We besought that *we* might have
That which you to others gave.

In our tongue, through kindred nations,
•*Printed* truths then wide we spread.
Men (drawn by the illustrations)
•Came from Masaruni head.
Came from fair Cuyuni banks,
Learned to pray and give God thanks.

Others then Christ's Church were rearing;
•Your good bishop, chief of all,
Went with us, the red cross bearing,
•Past the Demerara fall.
Went as far as he could go,
Where Berbice—where Wai'ni—flow.

Macusisand Arec•nas,
•Tribes to whom our tongue is known,
Came to us with Patam•nas,
•Showing how that seed had grown.
Still they came, inquiring train;
With them *children of the slain*.

Came his sons, now tall of stature,
•Came his grandsons, active band.
p. 160
Sorcerers said, 'Revenge is nature.
•We will guide some vengeful hand.
They who strive Christ's words to spread,
Now shall suffer *for the dead*.'

One, from Wahmoro descended,
•Seemed to bear a special doom;
Stealthy foes his steps attended,
•Dangers round him still would loom.
When he sought a distant home,
Thither would the assassin come.

Hunting once, he ceased his labour,
•Tired, beneath a tree to stand;
From behind—a deadly neighbour—
•Sprang 'Kanáima,' club in hand.
From the club and knife he fled,
Ere that foe could strike him dead.

Swift he fled, (who would have tarried?)
•Found his foe run swifter still;
Empty was the gun he carried,
•How could he expect to kill?
Yet he turned upon the foe,
Struck, *for life*, one random blow.

As he swerved, his foeman, springing,
•Aimed the death-blow—missed his aim;
And the gun-stock, swiftly swinging,
•Full against his body came.
Prone he fell, but was not dead:
Twice the other struck—and fled.

Oh, what else in that great danger,
•Could the destined victim do?
p. 161
You would strike if some fell stranger
•Sprang upon, to murder you.
And, *like me*, would grieve, I know,
From the hour you struck the blow!"

••••*••*••*

Wan and haggard were his features;
•Telling his own secret woe.
Brave he was, but hunted creatures
•Evermore expect a foe.
Many live in constant fear,
Thinking a "Kanáima" near.

Counsel, which to him was given,
•Here I need not tell indeed.
Sweet the lesson brought from heaven,
•Not to "break the bruised reed:"
Taught by Him, who all the opprest
Calls, to "*come*" to Him and "*rest*."

[Next](#)

Footnotes

p. 127

1 "Ahkoo," the *agouti*, or *acouri*. This little animal takes the part which, in the corresponding Caribi legend, is given to "Maipuri," the *tapir*. The *tree* itself, the source of all cultivation, is the same in both; and the *monkey*, though in different ways, releases the pent up waters of the flood.

Though differing widely now, the ancient traditions, as well as the languages spoken by these two nations, and some others, now widely spread, point to a common origin at some remote period.

p. 130

1 "Arawata," in the Caribi; Spanish, "Araguato."

p. 132

1 A bush fowl, called by the Acawoios "Okura."

2 The tongue of the alligator, previous to this calamity, is supposed to have been long and flexible.

p. 149

1 Arrows thus pointed are believed by the natives to inflict greater agony than any other weapon; and the terror they inspire is often heightened by superstition.

p. 153

1 Archdeacon Jones and myself, on the Upper Demerara, in 1865. That "Kanáima" murderer, we found, had followed his victim and friends from the vicinity of Roráima to Georgetown and back, killing him on his return.

p. 154

1 A set of jaguar's claws, hung up in sorcerer's hut, have the same threatening signification.

p. 158

1 In 1845, all the Acawoios, and many Caribs, went to that man, near the river Cako. We were unable to stop the movement. They were so numerous that food could not be got, so the imposture collapsed under the weight of too great success. The man was not an Indian, and his ultimate object was never known.

To "Capui" (the moon), one of the leading Acawoios, he gave a "commission" as from the Lord. It had a *leaden seal* attached, and was written in hieroglyphic characters, invented, of course, by himself. Those were the days of "Joe Smith's" early Mormon successes, and our impostor seemed to imitate him as far as he could.

CONTENTS OF PART V.

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	166
LEGEND OF THE BAHMOO AND THE FROG •	167
LEGEND OF THE HAIARRI ROOT	172
LEGEND OF THE GREAT SERPENT'S SKIN •	173
VARIOUS LEGENDS	175
THE SORCERER'S DAUGHTER	176
THE DEMARENA	178
ORIGIN OF THE AMAZONS	180
• The Ancient Legend (1)	180
• The Ancient Legend (2)	181
• The Ancient Legend (3)	183
• The Ancient Legend (4)	184
THE KANIÁMA FATHER	187
LEGENDS OF THE SKY	188
• OROAN	189
• SERIKOAI (1)	191
• SERIKOAI (2)	192
• SERIKOAI (3)	194
• SERIKOAI (4)	196
• SERIKOAI (5)	198
THE OLD MAN'S FALL (1)	200
THE OLD MAN'S FALL (2)	201
CONCLUSION	206

[Next](#)

p. 166

Fanciful Legends.

INTRODUCTION.

HOIST again the red cross! Let us voyage once more

•••Where the wild torrents roar,

•••As we haul the boat o'er:

And our red men all point as they paddle away,

To where the grim cayman is lurking for prey,

•Midst the sandbanks and rocks by the shore.

We encamp ere the sun quits the evening sky,

•••Or the night-birds flit by

•••With their strangely-weird cry:

And our Indians join in our evening prayer,

Make their camp-fires and sup—to their hammocks repair,

•And tell tales till the moon riseth high.

Oh, strange are the legends in which they delight!

•••Some tell how each sprite,

•••In the "merrie moonlight,"

With his comrades (as animals) joins in the dance.

Such are not malignant, though sometimes, perchance,

•Human beings they sorely affright.

p. 167

Of some pillar-like rocks, which the traveller sees,
••They will say, "They were trees
••Which once waved in the breeze."
And of others, like men or strange animals shown,
Say, "They once lived and moved, but are turned into stone,
•Having failed the Great Spirit to please!"

And he who would win those wild people should know
••How their strange legends go,
••And how their thoughts flow.
His teaching more readily they will receive
When they find that he knows what their old men believe;
•And thus his good seed he may sow.

BAHMOO AND THE FROG.

"OH, what mean these croaks, like a concert of frogs,
Such as we, oftentimes, near our marshes and bogs,
•May hear at still evening's close?"
"Tis the chorus to one of our popular tales,
Levelled at a division of race which prevails,
•And pretending to show how it rose."

THE LEGEND.

"Come with us, O Bahmoo, to hunt the huge frogs,
Which are found nowhere else in our rivers and bogs:
Good food; though in size they approach the bush-hogs:
•Some excellent sport you may find."

p. 168

••••Thus our young men addressed
••••Their friend Bahmoo, a guest,
Who had come to their "place" of adventures in quest,
••••And, perhaps, of a wife to his mind.
For, as you may know, our young men often rove
A long distance in search of a girl they can love.

And now these young hunters set forth on their way;
Each one with his weapons and ornaments gay.

"Take a cudgel, O Bahmoo!" said they, "if you go,
For those creatures are sturdy, and take a hard blow."

••••Then answered Bahmoo,
••••"I leave weapons to you,
And tell you beforehand what *I* mean to do.
••••The first frog that is found
••••Upon yon marshy ground,
I will jump on his back, and will twist his neck round,
And so kill him without more ado!"

••••*••*••*••*••*

Now the chief of those frogs was a spirit, they say,
Who o'erheard Bahmoo's boast, and forthwith, in the way,
Full of fun, near the river, he squatted or lay.
There he seemed half asleep; while around him awoke
A deafening chorus of croak upon croak.

Our young men, well used to it, were not afraid,
But Bahmoo half shrunk from the row those frogs made,
•It was such a wild hullabaloo.
••••As from each monstrous throat
••••Pealed the long rolling note;

p. 169

••••And he heard it resound,
••••Far and near, all around,
•"Boro-ohk," dying off in "boro-oo!"

When the boaster looked grave, it was thought a good joker
And his comrades enjoyed it. Although no one spoke,
•He knew they were laughing aside.
So he ran at that first frog, and sprang on his back,
And, to twist round his head, threw his arms round his neck,
•And then—found himself in the tide!
For the frog-chief, returning his ardent embrace,
Said, "Come, my dear friend, with me, home to my place,
•Just to *see* it, if not to abide."
••••Then he sprang off the ground,
••••And with wonderful bound
And a splash, that was heard a long distance around,
•They plunged in where the deep waters glide.

Bahmoo tried to escape, but the frolicsome sprite,
Which possessed that huge frog, in his paws held him tight;
•And, when they emerged from below,
He said, "Mount on my back, it is much the best way,
And we will enjoy ourselves this pleasant day,
•As over the river we go.
We will sing, as we swim along, merry and gay:
And my people, as chorus, shall join in the lay,
•Each chanting his loud "boro-oo!"

So each neighbouring frog lifts his head from the tide,
And the others respond from the banks, far and wide;
••••At the voice of their king
••••They all merrily sing—
•"Boro-ohk, boro-ohk, boro-oo!"

p. 170

But meanwhile, Bahmoo's comrades, pray what have they done?

Well, at first I must say that they thought it no fun:

- To see their friend caught by the frog.

But as soon as they saw him upon the frog's back,

With loud peals of laughter, they cried, "Twist his neck,

- And bring him here dead as a log.

- Then, when he is dead,

- And you've done what you said,

Of all our bold hunters we'll make you the head,

- Our champion in forest and bog!"

- 'Twas severe, I must own;

- But 'tis very well known,

That to braggarts *who fail* little mercy is shown.

And so Bahmoo, when mocked by the frogs' "boro-oo,"

Heard his comrades laugh loudly, and join in it too.

At length he arrived at the opposite shore;

The frog had sung merrily all the way o'er

- (Such a jolly old frog none e'er knew).

"You see I have carried you safely," said he.

"How pleasant to swim in such good company!"

- Then o'er his head Bahmoo he threw,

Saying, "Though it be painful to part, I must go,

For your people are killing mine yonder, I know.

- Adieu, my good Bahmoo, adieu!"

He then dived below; the man saw him no more,

But remained there alone on that desolate shore.

[p. 171](#)

When the young men had finished their frog-hunt, they hailed

For Bahmoo to swim back; but entreaties all failed

- To draw him from that other side.

He dreaded their laughter, and would not again

- Adventure himself in the tide,

Lest that frog he should meet. So he had to remain,

- And there for himself to provide.

"And that is the reason," our old people say,

"Why his children are separate from us this day."

••••*••*••*••*••*••*

"His children? Why, where could Bahmoo find a bride?"
"Well, most likely he'd found one ere quitting our side,
•••Who would not quite approve
•••That the man of her love
Should be there day and night quite alone.
•••She might not have a boat,
•••But a 'woodskin' will float,
Which her woman's wit would most surely provide;
And, paddling herself, she would be at his side.
•Woman's love greater wonders has done,
•••And few things, we find,
•••Will deter woman-kind,
When once it has thoroughly made up its mind,
•As the wisest of Indians own."1

THE MORAL.

When tempted to boast of what you "*mean* to do,"
Pray remember the frog, and vain-glorious Bahmoo.

p. 172

LEGEND OF THE HAIARRI ROOT.

AN old man, who often caught fish in the river,
•Would take his boy with him his fortune to try;
And the father, with wonder, observed that wherever
•The boy swam about, there the fishes would die.

But as, after cooking, he safely could eat them,
•He took the lad with him to bathe day by day:
Till the fish knew his plans, and, resolved to defeat them,
•They made up their minds the young swimmer to slay.

They cared not attack him, of course, in the water;
•To venture *there* near him would never have done.
But they chose an old log as the scene of the slaughter,
•Where he, after swimming, would bask in the sun.

There the fish which had spines all sprang rapidly o'er him,
•And each struck his spine in the youth as he lay;
But, worse than all wounds from the others before him,
•And *fatal*, was that of the deadly sting-ray.

When the father his son through the forest was bearing,
•The dying youth saw his blood drop on the ground;
And he said, "Father, watch for strange plants here appearing;
•My blood will take root, and avengers abound."

••••*••*••*••*

Thus was found the *Haiarri*, which, washed after bruising,
•In pools or small streams, makes the fishes our prey.
Think on what *the fish gained*, when the roots you are using,
•Or when anger tempts you a foeman to slay!

THE GREAT SERPENT'S SKIN.

I.

THE birds with mankind once their forces combined
•An immense water serpent to slay,
Who was fond of all creatures—and those he could find
•Would embrace, in his own pressing way.
Beasts and birds, human beings, with him all *went down*;
So the men came to kill him from each little town.
Their gay feathers and paint made a glorious show,
And each warrior was eager to strike the first blow;
•While the birds came to help in the fray.

They all promised his skin to whome'er should begin,
•And make him come out of his pool;
But every warrior they asked to step in
•Said he fought "*upon land*—as a rule."
Then came forth the cormorant chief, who could see
In the deep the snake's neck round the root of a tree.
Darting down, he drove through it an arrow he bore
(Which had a line tied to a tree on the shore),
•Emerging triumphant and cool.

Then, with many a shout, the men capered about,
•And began *very gently* to haul;
Then more strongly; but still the snake would not come out—
•He seemed fixed there, like any stone wall.
When forced out at length by his horrible wound,
His tail made the warriors all scamper around,
While the birds in wide circles seemed whirled by the wind.
But he had to give in; and was finally skinned,
•Midst the shouts and wild cries of them all.

p. 174

That struggle took place on the Cako, men say;
Where the snake's length is marked on the rocks to this day.

When the cormorant chief claimed the skin as his prize,
The chief or the warriors affected surprise,
And said, "We might *give* you the skin, as you say,
But how are you going to bear it away?
•••••Just try, if you please!"
•••••"With much pleasure and ease!"
•••••The bold water-bird said;
•••••Then he lifted the head
As a sign to the others, who knew what he meant,
And swooped down on the skin with a rapid descent;
Each seized on its margin, beginning to fly,
And the skin, like a banner, went streaming on high!

But the warriors, disgusted, used very strong words,
And have, since that time, become hostile to birds.

III.

The birds flew to a place quite secluded, and there
Their leader said, "Comrades, this spoil we will share:
So let each take the part which he happened to bear."

Now the skin was most brilliant, red, yellow, and green,
Black and white, in such patterns as never were seen.
So, delighted, each bird took what happened to come,
Which he placed on his shoulders to bear safely home.

Then a wonder ensued! Birds of soberest hue
Became of those colours, white, yellow, and blue!
Parrots then were first seen dressed in red and in green,
p. 175
And macaws in such plumage as never had been,
Scarlet, purple, and gold! But what more need I say,
When we see them fly past us in beauty each day?

As it happens with men—when brave warriors who toil,
And go through all the danger, get *least of the spoil*—
Even so—to the champion, who thus adorned all.
The *snake's head*, with its sombre tints, happened to fall.
But he seemed quite contented, whatever befell,
Saying, "For an old diver it does very well!"

—

VARIOUS LEGENDS.

WHILE resting from our toil by night,
•We hear strange stories told;
And tales of beasts and birds delight
•Young hunters, keen and bold.
From whom each wild bush note is heard,
For well they mimic beast and bird.

Of him who on the cayman's back¹
•Crossed and recrossed the tide;
Or one who from a jaguars track
•Would never turn aside,
They tell; or praise to him afford
Who caught great snakes with slender cord.²

p. 176

••••*••*••*

Of mermen or mermaidens wild
•We hear, in legends grave:
How handsome youth, or maid, or child,
•They draw beneath the wave!
Or snatch them from the bank above,
•Some say, "through envy," some, "through love."

••••*••*••*

Some tell us of Peaima's l hair,
•And him who dressed his head;
But stripped: then on it, raw and bare,
•Poured pepper seeds—and fled.
"With growing peppers crowned," they say,
"The monster sought the man to slay!"

Wild is the tale—its sequel long,
•Yet Indians laugh to find
The man outwit, with lying tongue,
•The monster's simple mind.
'Tis ever so. In heathen lore
Are heathen morals—and no more.

THE SORCERER'S DAUGHTER.

THE chief of our sorcerers stood by the water,
•No mightier wizard existed than he;
And he looked with compassion upon his fair daughter,
•As love-sick and sad as a maiden can be.

p. 177

"Oh, father!" she cried, "he has no one to cheer him,
•That lonely young hunter—so brave and so free!
Make me *like to his dog*, that I may venture near him;
•I die for his love—while he looks not on me!"

"Take this skin," he said sadly, "and draw o'er thy shoulders;
•A dog in the eyes of thy loved one to be;
Its wonderful magic deceives all beholders!
•Be rid of thy madness—then come back to me!"

••••*••*••*••*••*

Then the young man, beloved of the sorcerer's daughter,
•Would start with *four* dogs through the forest to roam,
But would come back with *three*: for the struggle and slaughter
•One never would join in, but always ran home.

With the sweet eventide to his cottage returning,
•He round the place swept up as clean as could be;
Cassava bread baked, and the fire brightly burning;
•And said, "Some good neighbour has done it for me."

When they all had denied it, he said, "'Tis some spirit,
•Who, seeing me lonely, thus strives to be kind."
Then he saw gazing at him that dog void of merit,
•Whose look was so strange that it puzzled his mind.

The next day, as he the swift game was pursuing,
•He counted his dogs, and he round there but three;
Then he said, "Till I find what your comrade is doing,
•I leave you here tied to the trunk of a tree!"

p. 178

Then—silent and swift—to his cottage returning,
•He round a small crevice—peeped through the thatch wall,
And saw, baking bread on the fire brightly burning,
•The lovely young damsel, whose hand had done all.

With exercise flushed, all her features were glowing,
•Her form bending lithe in its fine symmetry;
As she listened to hear distant barking, not knowing
•That he whom she loved all her movements could see.

And there hung the charmed skin, the whole secret revealing;
•He sprang in and seized it with heart light and free;
"No longer," said he, "this fair maiden concealing,
•Thy magical charm shall have power o'er me!"

And into the flames he then thrust it; the rather
•That she strove to take it, her beauty to hide.—
Then she wept. But he said, "Now return to thy father;
•I follow, to claim thee—my beautiful bride!"[1](#)

—

THE DEMARÉNA.

SOME tell of him, of human birth,
•Who saw in troops advance
The sons and daughters of the earth,
•And joined their mystic dance.—
Danced at an elfin maiden's side,
And wooed her for his fairy bride.

p. 179

Then said her father, "None would dare
•(No man has been so brave)
Deep in the earth our home to share,
•Or 'neath the shining wave.
Dar'st thou?" "I dare!" the young man cried,
"With this fair Demaredu bride!"

The chief replied, "So let it be!
•He must be fond and brave,
Who dares to join our family
•Beneath the earth or wave.—
To him and his, but none beside,
•Give we a Demaredu bride!"[1](#)

p. 180

ORIGIN OF THE AMAZONS.

(An Ancient Legend of the Inland Mountain Tribes.)

I.

OF the fierce "Worisiana"

•(Such their nation's name)

I can tell the ancient story:

How their warlike strength and glory

•First began in shame.

For a chieftain's wife, "To-eyza,"

•Faithless dared to be,

Caring nothing for disaster;

Haughty was her lord and master,

•Haughtier was she.

At the women's place of bathing,

•Thus To-eyza said:

"Some call marriage a protection;

I esteem it base subjection;

•Better far be dead!

"Such as we, by parents given,

•Nought of love can know;

All our days we spend in sorrow;

'Work to-day,' and 'work to-morrow,'

•Ever 'work'—and woe!

"Spurn with me this shameful bondage!

•Yon black jaguar see—

See, in that disguise, my lover!

Men like him can soon swim over,

•And will set us free!

"Call his name! Let Walyarima
•Be our signal cry;
Ye who seek emancipation
From your husbands' domination,
•Now behold it nigh!"

II.

But three men saw Walyarima
•From a neighbouring wood.
Saw and heard, and told the story—
Told their chief, "To-eybor•ri," [1](#)
•How the matter stood.

To the women, on the morrow,
•Calm, the chieftain said,
"Toilsome hunting is before us,
Hunger may be hanging o'er us:
•Make cassava bread."

When for roots they all departed,
•To the stream he went;
Bade some striplings there "keep moving,"
While, concealed, the rest (approving)
•Heard his stern intent.

Those who bathed cried, "Walyarima!"—
•Called the hated name,
Spread their long hair on the water;
[p. 182](#)
While each bow lay near for slaughter;
•Walyarima came.

As he came, the chief, to meet him,
•Dashed into the tide,
Sent his mighty arrow through him;
While the others, swimming to him,
•Smote him—as he died.

Grimly, his remains they bore then
•To the women's shed—
To the ridge within, suspended,
Left them (for a taunt intended)
•Hanging overhead.

••••*••*••*

Came, in Indian file, the women:
•Each her burden bore;
Sternly then their husbands eyed them,
Shrinking from the sights beside them,
•On the roof and floor.

Last of all came in To-eyza:
•Blood fell on her hand,
Firm she stood, her high head rearing
(E'en the chief admired her bearing)
•Beautiful and grand!

Then said he, "We go a-hunting;
•Speed, and make the bread—
Bake to-night: we cannot tarry,
Bread for five days we must carry."
•"Be it so," she said.

p. 183

"Bring the meat; and strong paiwári,
•More than e'er before;
We your wives will then provide you,
And, that night, will dance beside you,
•If we dance no more!"

III.

In the heart of proud To-eyza
•Burned a raging flame;
For that drop of blood inspired her,
And the demon power, which fired her.
•On the others came.

"For revenge only hearts are burning—
•All our hearts," said she.
"Savage insult men provide you!
Ask no questions—I will guide you;
•You shall all be free!"

••••*••*••*

From his hunting came the chieftain;
•Laden were his men.
Beasts and birds they brought home twenty,
Smoked or fresh. Then all was plenty—
•All was feasting then!

For the women of paiwári
•Had abundant store—
All the men had drunk, and rested;
Till the thirsty ones requested
•To be served with more.

Then a calabash each woman
•Filled up to the brim,
[p. 184](#)
To her husband meekly handed,
(So To-eyza had commanded)
•Fatal draught to him!

She had mixed cassava juice there,
•Bringing death to all;
Soon, in agony appalling,
Vainly for assistance calling,
•Down the warriors fall.

••••*••*••*

"Now rejoice!" exclaimed To-eyza;
•"Women, ye are free!
Nevermore shall husbands rule you,
Beat, oppress, and then befool you,
•If you follow me!"

Some, *with boys*, had fled; the others
•Through the midnight hour
Danced, with simulated gladness;
Every bosom filled with madness,
•By the demon's power!

IV.

Winding through the woods in order,
•See a female band,
Hammocks, food, and weapons bearing,
For a weary march preparing,
•To some distant land.

p. 185

To their leader, tall To-eyza,
•All obedience pay.—
Sometimes fighting, sometimes flying,
Mainly on their bows relying,
•They must win their way.

Many a discontented woman
•With them gladly goes.
They proclaim emancipation;
Call themselves the "Woman's nation;"
•Husbands treat as foes.

Driving off the men, or slaying,
•To their wives they say,
"With your daughters we receive you;
If you keep your sons, we leave you
•Here, with them to stay."

On they march, and others follow,
•Swelling thus their band;
O'er those females madness creeping;
Like an epidemic, sweeping
•Women from the land.

••••*••*••*

But, meanwhile, the poisoned victims
•Kindly friends had found;
Shuddered at the bones before them,
Scared the vultures brooding o'er them;
•Placed them in the ground.

Then they followed up those women,
•Made the hindmost fly;
Swiftly chased to overtake them,
But their captives none could make them,
•They preferred to die.

p. 186

Soon they came to dark green forests,
•Saw their bravest fall;
In their blood the strong men weltered,
Shot by female archers, sheltered
•By each leafy wall.

Then they paused; a wise man saying,
•"What have we to gain?
Of what use to man is woman,
Who regards him as a foeman?
•Let them march again!"

So those women, still proceeding
•Tow'rds the setting sun,
Passing safely through all dangers,
Made a settlement as strangers,
•All their journeys done.

••••*••*••*

There their haughty queen, To-eyza,
•Gave them maxims clear:
"We will welcome men as lovers,
If they come as errant rovers;
•*None must settle here.*

"Of their children born amongst us,
•Send the boys away;1
p. 187
But whenever girls we bear them,
Joyfully we all must rear them;
•Our successors they!"

••••*••*••*

Ages since have passed; their children
•Still observe those laws,
Tell the tale of Walyarima,
'Midst the mountains of Parima:
•Still maintain their cause.

—

THE KANÁIMA FATHER.

As a "Kanáima tiger"¹ dire,
•Old Tounawai was seen,
Lurking, with eyes that shone like fire,
p. 188
•Amidst the branches green.
His son came hunting there alone,
His "old-time arrows" tipped with *bone*.

Without success the monster sprung;
•An arrow pierced his jaw;
As from his mouth the weapon hung,
•He broke it with his paw.—
The young man, as Kanáima fled,
Picked up his splintered arrow-head.

••••*••*••*

Next day came home the guilty sire,
•And said, with many a groan:
"O son, my mouth seems all on fire!"
•The son drew thence a *bone*.
Which fitted (so the legend said)
Into that splintered arrow-head.

Then spake the broken-hearted son:
•"We leave thee here this day;
I have a wife, while thou hast none:
•To gain her thou wouldst slay—
Slay!—with the dread Kanáima charm,
A son—who never did thee harm."

—

LEGENDS OF THE SKY.

SOFT moonbeams tip the trees above,
And our red camp-fires light the grove
Beyond; each glade seems, like the tomb,
In deep, impenetrable gloom,
Save where the fire-fly sheds his light,

[p. 189](#)

Pale flashes, quickly lost in night.
On every side strange sounds are heard
From insect, reptile, beast, or bird;
But louder than each forest noise,
Resounds the chat of men and boys.

Some talk of stars, so bright and fair
From east to west, soft gliding there.
Some—of the meteors flashing high,
Like arrows flaming through the sky,
And some, perchance, recall to mind
A tale of heaven's most awful kind,
Whose gleaming light trails far behind.[1](#)

And now, our camp-fires waning low,
Anew replenished, brighter glow;
While from the trees large dew-drops fall,
Which our red friends "star-moisture" call.

Then, as fresh light springs from the fires,
Of some grave elder one inquires:
"O father! tell of Oroan,[2](#)
The friend of darkness, foe of man."

LEGEND OF OROAN.

THEN tells he how fierce "Oroan,
The dark-browed enemy of man,
•Seizes the *sun* on high.

p. 190

And strives to quench the solar fires,
Till, scorched and blackened, he retires,
•Some other time to try."

Or how, "upon the *moon* his power
He turns, to rend her, or devour.
Then her bright features none can trace,
For blood besmears her beauteous face,
•And darkens all the sky;
Till from the tribes of men below,
Loud cries and prayers upwards go:
'Cease, Oroan, to work us woe,
And spare the light on high!"

"They rouse the spirits of the air,
Who to the sufferers' aid repair,
•And force the fiend to fly.
Her darkened face from blood they clear,
Till its bright beams again appear,
•And nations cease to cry."

—

Then, while the constellations bright
Fill the high heavens with glorious light,
One, pointing to the eastern sky,
Exclaims, "Behold Serikoai!"

p. 191

LEGEND OF SERIKOAI.

I.

IN days when spirits talked with men,
•And all the world was young,
Wawaiya, lately made a bride,
Saw a young tapir by her side
•Walk quietly along.

"Oh, what art thou," the woman said,
•"Thus walking here by me?"
"They call me 'Wailya,'" he replied,
"With changed form I seek thy side,
•For thou art fair to see!"

She, when her husband went to hunt,
•Would to their field repair;
And daily, as she went and came,
Through forest path, it was the same—
•She met the tapir there.

And pleasantly the creature spoke,
•And well she loved to hear;
Till, through his artful, glozing word,
Serikoai, her once-loved lord,
•Became to her less dear.

Then boldly the seducer said,
•"Come, run away with me!
Far, far away we both will fly,
And, where this wide earth meets the sky,
•My country thou shalt see.

p. 192

"'Tis there I reign in manly form:

- There thou shalt be my bride!"

"Alas!" she cried, "if I should fly,

My husband, brave Serikoai,

- Would slay us side by side!"

"I charm thine axe," the sorcerer said,

- "And it shall speak to thee.

Heed well what that good axe shall say,

And see thou do it. That same day

- Thou shalt be safe with me!"

II.

"Wawaiya," said Serikoai,

- "Come where our pear-trees grow.

In yonder old provision ground

Last month I saw young fruits abound;

- They must be ripe, I know."

"I go with thee," the wife replied,

- "But I mine axe must take.

Whilst thou art climbing in the tree,

I'll cut such dry wood as I see,

- Our nightly fire to make."

Then to the sharp'ning stone she went,

- As if her axe to grind;

And every time it touched the stone,

The word "Sahtai," in threatening tone,

- Seemed borne upon the wind.

"Dost thou not hear, Serikoai,
•The axe here speak to me?
Still, as I rub, these words resound,
Oh! 'I must cut;' or, 'I must wound!'
•What can their meaning be?"

"Whene'er an axe is sharpened there,"
•Said he, "I hear the same;
So let us haste, nor lose the day,
To idle fancies giving way;
•Women are oft to blame."

Resentment then within her burned,
•As with her lordship went.
That direful sorcerer drew her on,
And with his charms her heart had gone,
•Till she could not repent.

Then many ripening fruits they saw,
•Ban•nas sweet were there;
But still the man would climb that tree,
Where he his fav'rite fruit could see,
•The "avoc•do" pear.

••••*••*••*

Wawaiya, cast thine axe away,
•Bid the enchanter flee!
Why do thy handsome features frown?
Slay not thy husband coming down;
•For good and true is he!

p. 194

Alas!—inspired by direful charm,
•(The axe its influence knew,)
She raised her hands to strike the blow,
The deed is done—the man lies low,
•His leg is clean cut through!

She meets his eye, and in it reads
•Wonder and deepest woe!
Then hurries from that bloody scene:
With Wailya, through the forests green,
•And o'er the hills to go.

III.

The husband lay, and thought to die;
•His life-blood ebbed away.
A kindly spirit passing then—
A friend to true and suffering men—
•Revived him as he lay.

Inspired, the man an eyelash plucked,
•(Upon it was a tear;)
He blew it in the air—it flew,
A little bird of beauteous hue;
•Then waited, hovering near.

"O birdie!" said the bleeding man,
•"Haste! to my mother fly,
And call my name!" The birdie knew,
And straightway to the mother flew;
•And called, "Serikoai!"

p. 195

"Why call my son, 'Serikoai?'"
•Oh, birdie, tell me true!
Why dost thou flutter to and fro?
Thy meaning, bird. I cannot know:"
•Then back the sweet bird flew—

And swiftly came again the bird.
•Taught by the suffering man:
"Oh, mother! thy Serikoai
Is sorely wounded—left to die!"—
•Forthwith the mother ran;

She ran, and stumbled as she ran,
•(Old age asserts its power);
Yet through dense bush she hurried on,
To help her foully-stricken son
•In that malignant hour.

"Oh, loving mother! art thou come
•Thy dying son to cheer?
Better than all fair wives, like mine,
To whom fond men their hearts resign,
•Is one good mother near!"

Then that kind spirit saw their love,
•Propitious from on high:
To healing balsams added charms,
Till, saved, in his good mother's arms
•He left Serikoai.

p. 196

IV.

"Oh, who is this that wanders on,
•Still searching all the ground?
A man of mighty strength he seems;
Though pale and worn;—his keen eye gleams
•On everything around.

A wooden prop one limb supports
•The shapely leg is gone!
Yet, like a warrior armed for fight,
With bow and club from morn till night,
•He still keeps moving on.

And every forest path he tries,
•No track there meets his eye.
For many an eve, and many a dawn,
Have passed since that false wife has gone
•Who maimed Serikoai.

••••*••*••*

The rains, which washed her track away,
•Had left no traces near;
No sign where human life had been:
Till, near some trees, a sprout was seen
•Of *avoc•do pear!*

He scanned the bush all round, and thought
•An opening he could spy;
And followed that until he found,
Another pear-shoot on the ground;
•Then brighter shone his eye.

p. 198

His hope of finding them revived,
•And served his heart to warm:
For she had said who saved his life,
"A sorcerer hath bewitched thy wife—
•A man—in brutish form!"

He thought of her who took those pears,
•And ate them by the way;
How rains, which could her steps efface,
Had caused their seeds to sprout apace,
•And grow as there they lay!

V.

Still, sad and worn, the man went on
•Towards the rising sun,
And said, "Earth's limit must be nigh;
Nearer and nearer is the sky;
•My task will soon be done."

He found small footprints of his wife,
•The tapir's, too, were clear;
Then saw them both together walk,
Too much absorbed in cheerful talk
•To think of vengeance near.

He shot the Wailya through the heart
•Ere he could change his form;
Then cut his wicked head away;
And all the ground on which he lay
•With his heart's blood was warm.

p. 199

Then cried the husband, "He is dead,
•Whose charms bewitched thee sore.
Return, O wife; return to me,
Or through the earth, the sky, or sea,
•*I follow evermore!*"

••••*••*••*

He cut and smoked the tapir's flesh,
•Then followed up his wife:
And saw her from a neighbouring hill.—
A shadowy form pursued her still;
•The Wailya's—as in life!

They fled; and to the earth's steep edge,
•Drew nigher and more nigh.
A chasm wide they then could view;
Straight o'er the gulf the woman flew
•Into the deep blue sky.

Her lover followed, and, enraged,
•The husband followed too—
And, ever moving through the air,
The chase unceasing follows there:
•As we may nightly view.

••••*••*••*

She, as a cloud-like mass of stars,1
•Shines, when the night is clear;
The Wailya, too, is following nigh,
Turning a fierce, though bloodshot, eye2
•Upon the husband near.

p. 200

As, bright with stars, his mighty form
•Seems rising in the sky,
Shoulders and sound limb glitt'ring there,
With that broad belt he used to wear:
More faint—the prop which helped to bear
•The maiméd Serikoai!1

—

Thus with their legends, grave or gay,
The hours till midnight pass away.

Meanwhile we, from our hammocks, see
•The northern constellations rise;
While, round the cross, shine brilliantly
•The glories of the southern skies.
Still croak the frogs, the night-birds call;
•Still chirp the crickets loud and gay;
At length we slumber, one and all,
•Till from the east looks forth the day.

THE OLD MAN'S FALL.

I.

•FROM the brow of this hill,
•While all nature is still,
The roseate dawn we view;
•As the sweet eastern light
•Decks the vapours of night
With every glorious hue.
•And the trees are all kissed
•By the low morning mist
In the forests—now dripping with dew.

p. 201

•See, the rivers gleam white
•In the fast-growing light,
Like snow in the new-born day;
•For the mist covers all
•With its silvery pall,
Though soon it will vanish away;
•When the fog and the dew
•Which around us we view
Shall give place to the sun's glowing ray.

- Yet, though vanishing here,
- It will not disappear
From the face of Potáro's great fall;¹
- Where the brown river breaks
- Into rocket-like flakes,
Flashing down a precipitous wall.
- There, by night and by day,
- The beautiful spray
(Oft clothed with the rainbow) is waving away,
- Ever changing—yet lovely through all!

- It is waving and whirling,
- And gracefully curling;
In starlight cold, and the moon's silver ray,
It riseth for ever—still whirling away.
- And the sun has no power
- At his noontide hour
- To remove that white veil,
- Or cause it to fail
From the face of the "Old Man's Fall!"

p. 202

II.

- "The Old Man's Fall!"—
- Why do Indians call
By such a strange title that cataract high,
Whose broad torrent, below, seems to come from the sky?
The Indian legends, as may be made clear,
Are sometimes romantic, but more often queer.
- And the one we have here
- May be classed with the "queer."
It was told Mr. Brown, of exploring renown,
Who discovered that fall as the stream he came down.
'Tis the tale which the Indians tell to us all,
To show why they call it the Old Man's Fall.

THE LEGEND.

•••"Some people of old
•••(So our forefathers told)
Had their village above the great fall.
•••One, a feeble old man,
•••Passing life's usual span,
Was half blind, and a burden to all.

•••"For, though once strong and fleet,
•••His poor suffering feet
(It might happen to white men or negroes,
•••For want of due care)
•••Had—burrowing there—
Some scores of vile vermin, called "chegoes."

•••(Some ladies, we've heard,
•••Take offence at that word,
And express it with more or less vigour.

p. 203

•••We would give no offence,
•••So, in the same sense,
Will use "insect," and banish the•.)

••••*••*••*

The old man grew more helpless, and gave them more work,
And the care of his feet more and more they would shirk;
•••Till the young women all,
•••And the boys, great and small,
Said, "Oh! what is the use? Let him lie there and bawl!
His feet every day are becoming more sore,
As the insects increase there each day, more and more;
We give up the care of him! Mind him, who can?
He's become such a troublesome, horrid old man!"

What was to be done? Though they all wished him dead,
The men were unwilling to cleave his poor head.
"Let him go to the spirit-land!" some then would say,
"The river may take him and bear him away,
If he still suffer here he must die all the same!
We can help him no more, so we are not to blame."

Then the head men commanded, "Bring now a wood-skin;
Put the old man and his little property in;
•••Let nothing remain,
•••For we seek no such gain,
But to get rid of trouble and finish his pain.
So we send him away the next world to begin,
But will not send him empty, for *that* were a sin."

p. 204

The young men obeyed. They soon brought a wood-skin,
Put the old man and his little property in;
They then launched him forth. As he swept down the stream,
The loud-growing roar must have seemed a bad dream;
One quivering moment—then, over the fall
Went wood-skin and victim, with "insects" and all!

•••Perhaps just then his countrymen
•••Felt they had not done well;
••And the bell-bird bright in plumage white
•••Tolled forth his passing knell.
•••It may have been so—
•••It was long, long ago,
••And none living now can pretend to know.

•••But some Indians say
•••(Believe it who may)
•••That as over he went
•••In that dreadful descent,
••Some power interposed with a kindly intent.
•••And, to save his poor bones,
Man, with wood-skin and freight, were all turned into stones!

Rocks (the wood-skin and package) are now seen by all,
•••Who may visit that fall
But where's the old man? It is not quite so clear
•••That be doth appear,
•••"He's perhaps washed away.
Strong currents wear rocks very fast, people say.

p. 205

•••First his ears and his nose,
•••Then his fingers and toes"
(If we'd faith in the legend we thus might suppose),
"For the figure, though stone, when thus worn would soon go,
And be borne as fine sand down the rapids below."

Such are the main points of the legend now told
By the red men who dwell near that cataract old.
Will that story be heard while the mist shall endure
O'er their "Koe-tu'euk," called by us "Kaieteur"?
Or will it die out, when pure Indians all
Shall have ceased to exist near their "Old Man's Fall"?

p. 206

CONCLUSION.

THE old creed of each race in our legends is shown,
Their belief, while the white man as yet was unknown;
While amidst their grand forests no Christian was seen,
And no prayer rose to God from their foliage green.

Here the mild Arawâk and the bold Caribisce
(By the gospel of Christ now united in peace),
The grave Acawoi, and more careless Warau,
A glimpse of their mythical heroes allow.
While Macusis and others—but space here would fail
To name all—have their part in some "fanciful" tale.

To those who have sent them the faith they receive;
Sweet hope of the lowly, and all who believe,
They here show, in return, that traditional lore,
Which was all they possessed—they could offer no more!

In forests primeval, on many a stream,
'Neath the sun's burning glow, or the gentle moonbeam,
By the Indian fire, or in that peaceful home,
Where, to talk with his teacher, the red man would come;
'Midst bright mission prospects, 'midst sickness and fear,
And voyages, reaching their fortieth year,
The selection was made which is now given here.

Forgive, gentle reader, whate'er seems absurd
••In each quaint native "Word;"
And think kindly of those whose old tales we have heard.

[Sacred-Texts](#) [Native American](#) [South American](#)

Footnotes

p. 171

1 The frog chorus in this legend, when taken up by the native audience, all admirable mimics, has a most amusing effect.

p. 175

1 "Bernau's Missionary Labours," p. 167.

2 The tiger slayer, a Carib, and the snake-catcher, an Arawâk, are not mythical personages. They belonged to the last generation, and both became Christian converts. The former would attack any jaguar, and cleave his skull with axe or cutlass. Of the skill and daring displayed by the latter in the capture of a kolokon•ro snake, with only a cord and forked stick, the writer was an eye-witness.

p. 176

1 An Araidai, or goblin of the woods, who had become dissatisfied with his coarse and matted locks, and wished them to be made like those of human beings. Pahndun, a captive, undertook to gratify him, with the above result.

p. 178

1 From the "Ebes•tu" (*changed or transformed*), heroine of the above legend, the Ebesoana (Arawâk family) take their name.

The names of those families all descend in the *female* line, and no individual was permitted to marry another of the same family name.

p. 179

1 From the above union, the existing Demaréna (Arawâk family) are supposed to have sprung. They bear, of course, their mother's family name; and in ancient days considered it "the correct thing," in accordance with the legend, to intermarry solely with their father's family—the "Korobohána."

These latter have a strange legend of their own. They believe that they originally came from above the clouds. The weight of a heavy woman broke the rope by which they were descending; and communication was thus cut off between those who had reached the ground and those remaining above. The Great Spirit, pitying the latter, supplied them with wings and plumage; and they came down, to colonise the trees above the heads of their brethren—still privileged to live near, and to converse with them, though changed into "Koriouka" *parrots*.

This legend, though grotesque, affords another instance of the belief (which our pages have shown) expressed by various myths, but almost universal amongst the aboriginal races of Guiana: of a *descent* from a *higher* region, or state of existence.

p. 181

1 "Walyarima" is the name of the animal whose appearance was assumed by the lover while swimming the river. "To-eybor•ri" and "To-eyza" are titles, denoting authority, masculine and feminine respectively. The *proper names* seem to have been lost in the lapse of years.

p. 186

1 This agrees with the old legends, told to Raleigh and others. But many Indians now say that the male infants were *always* destroyed, and their fathers warned *not to return*, on pain of death.

With regard to the subject in general. The expeditions for war and plunder, so common amongst the

South American tribes in former ages, would often draw away all the males in a district capable of bearing arms, and sometimes they *never returned*. The women, left by themselves, [p. 187](#) drew together for mutual defence; and being, in those days, all well trained to the bow, would (like the women of the Caribi islands) defend their homes and children fiercely against all comers.

Such a state of things—said still to exist in some wild regions of that vast continent—will account for the tales of Orellana and others, of their *fight with Amazons*.

It does not, of course, account for the murder of husbands, and utter rejection of marital authority, in the legend before us. Whether that tale ever had any foundation in fact, it is impossible to say. Wild and unnatural as it is, it has deeply impressed the minds of the Aborigines; and the writer has, in his researches, come upon various legends (both tragical and comical) founded on the *scarcity of wives*, after their (supposed) terrible Exodus.

[1](#) The spotted "arua" (or harua) of the Arawâks, spelt *jaguar* by the Spanish discoverers, is commonly called "tiger" by the colonists who frequent the bush. It is called "tobi" by the Waraus, and "kaikusi" by the Caribs and Acawoios.

[p. 189](#)

[1](#) The great comet of 1843.

[2](#) The great demon of darkness, who causes eclipses.

[p. 190](#)

[1](#) The native ideas respecting the constellations differ widely from ours. For instance, the Southern Cross is supposed, by many clans, to represent a "pau" bird resting on a tree. The star, *Beta Centauri*, is a hunter stealthily approaching it. *Alpha Centauri* is the hunter's torch (or firebrand), held *behind him*, so as not to alarm the bird by its glare. Some call it another hunter, lighting the first. Other constellations have *narratives* connected with them; of these, "Serikoai," the legend given here, is the most interesting specimen.

[p. 199](#)

[1](#) The Pleiades.

[2](#) The Hyades represent the tapir's head. The red eye is Aldebaran.

[p. 200](#)

1 The constellation Orion: Rigel indicating the upper part of the sound limb.

p. 201

1 This great fall is 822 feet in total height, by 369 feet in width. Its upper part is 741 feet perpendicular.

[Make a Donation](#)

[Sacred-texts home](#)

[Shamanism](#) [Australian](#) [African](#) [Mayan Calendar](#) [OCRT: Native American Spirituality](#)
[Buy CD-ROM](#) [Buy books: Native American](#)



Native American Religions

Topics

- [African](#)
- [Age of Reason](#)
- [Alchemy](#)
- [Americana](#)
- [Ancient Near East](#)
- [Asia](#)
- [Atlantis](#)
- [Australia](#)
- [Baha'i](#)
- [Bible](#)
- [Book of Shadows](#)
- [Buddhism](#)
- [Celtic](#)
- [Christianity](#)
- [Classics](#)
- [Confucianism](#)
- [DNA](#)
- [Egyptian](#)
- [England](#)
- [Esoteric/Occult](#)

Topics

- [Aztecs](#)
- [Californian](#)
- [Inuit](#)
- [Maya](#)
- [Plains](#)
- [Northeastern](#)
- [Iroquois](#)
- [Northwestern](#)
- [Southeastern](#)
- [Cherokee](#)
- [Southwestern](#)
- [Navajo](#)
- [Zuñi](#)

A long-standing problem with this section (and several others at this site relating to traditional peoples' spiritual beliefs) has been the lack of authoritative information. We are in the process of expanding this section by scanning public domain ethnographic accounts on specific Native American religious and spiritual practices. We are fortunate that there is a wealth of such material available, which makes it so much more puzzling why more of it is not on the Internet yet.

The study of Native Americans by anthropologists has had its share of bad science and ethical problems. However, the texts we are in the process of scanning were written by 19th and 20th Century ethnographers who were known for their careful and respectful approach to the people they studied. These were scholars who lived for years with the people they studied, and obtained

[Evil](#)
[Fortean](#)
[Gothic](#)
[Grimoires](#)
[Hinduism](#)
[I Ching](#)
[Islam](#)
[Jainism](#)
[Journals](#)
[Judaism](#)
[Legends/Sagas](#)
[Miscellaneous](#)
[Mormonism](#)
Native American
[Aztec](#)
[California](#)
[Cherokee](#)
[Hopi](#)
[Inca](#)
[Inuit](#)
[Iroquois](#)
[Maya](#)
[Navajo](#)
[Northeastern](#)
[Northwestern](#)
[Plains](#)
[South American](#)
[Southeastern](#)
[Southwestern](#)
[Zuñi](#)
[Neopaganism/Wicca](#)
[Nostradamus](#)
[Oahspe](#)
[Pacific](#)
[Paleolithic](#)
[Piri Re'is Map](#)
[Prophecy](#)
[Sacred Books of the East](#)
[Sacred Sexuality](#)
[Shamanism](#)
[Shinto](#)
[Sikhism](#)
[Sky Lore](#)
[Tantra](#)
[Taoism](#)
[Tarot](#)
[Thelema](#)
[Theosophy](#)
[Tolkien](#)
[UFOs](#)
[Utopia](#)
[Women](#)

[Hopi](#)
[South American](#)
[Inca](#)

permission to transcribe their oral sacred literature.



[Tales of the North American Indians](#) by Stith Thompson [1929]

The classic cross-cultural Native American folklore study.



[The Soul of the Indian](#) by Charles Eastman [1911] *100,801 bytes*



[Indian Why Stories](#) by Frank Linderman [1915] *163,221 bytes*



[Old Indian Legends](#) by Zitkala-Sa [1901] *105,552 bytes*



[Myths and Legends of the Sioux](#) by Marie L. McLaughlin [1916]

241,776 bytes

[Zoroastrianism](#)



[Make a Donation](#)

[Sacred-Texts](#) [Native American](#) [Maya](#)

Aztec Religion

This index lists resources at sacred-texts relating to Aztec religion, folklore and spiritual practices.



[Rig Veda Americanus \(Aztec Hymns\)](#) by D. Brinton, Brinton's Library of Aboriginal Literature number VIII. Philadelphia, [1890] This relatively short document is one of the few public domain translations of an Aztec religious manuscript.



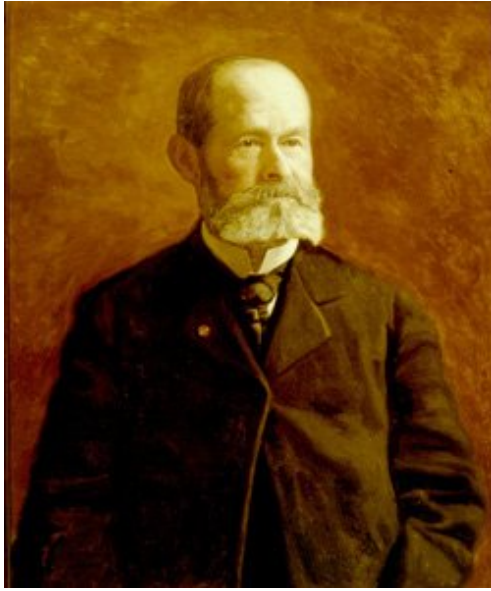
[The Myths of Mexico and Peru](#) by Lewis Spence

Topics

- [African](#)
- [Age of Reason](#)
- [Alchemy](#)
- [Americana](#)
- [Ancient Near East](#)
- [Asia](#)
- [Atlantis](#)
- [Australia](#)
- [Baha'i](#)
- [Bible](#)
- [Book of Shadows](#)
- [Buddhism](#)
- [Celtic](#)
- [Christianity](#)
- [Classics](#)
- [Confucianism](#)
- [DNA](#)
- [Egyptian](#)
- [England](#)
- [Esoteric/Occult](#)

[Evil](#)
[Fortean](#)
[Gothic](#)
[Grimoires](#)
[Hinduism](#)
[I Ching](#)
[Islam](#)
[Jainism](#)
[Journals](#)
[Judaism](#)
[Legends/Sagas](#)
[Miscellaneous](#)
[Mormonism](#)
[Native American](#)
Aztec
[California](#)
[Cherokee](#)
[Hopi](#)
[Inca](#)
[Inuit](#)
[Iroquois](#)
[Maya](#)
[Navajo](#)
[Northeastern](#)
[Northwestern](#)
[Plains](#)
[South American](#)
[Southeastern](#)
[Southwestern](#)
[Zuñi](#)
[Neopaganism/Wicca](#)
[Nostradamus](#)
[Oahspe](#)
[Pacific](#)
[Paleolithic](#)
[Piri Re'is Map](#)
[Prophecy](#)
[Sacred Books of the East](#)
[Sacred Sexuality](#)
[Shamanism](#)
[Shinto](#)
[Sikhism](#)
[Sky Lore](#)
[Tantra](#)
[Taoism](#)
[Tarot](#)
[Thelema](#)
[Theosophy](#)
[Tolkien](#)
[UFOs](#)
[Utopia](#)
[Women](#)

[Zoroastrianism](#)



RIG VEDA AMERICANUS.

SACRED SONGS OF THE ANCIENT
MEXICANS, WITH A GLOSS IN
NAHUATL.

BY

DANIEL G. BRINTON

[1890]



[Introduction](#)

[I. The Hymn of Huitzilopochtli.](#)

[II. War Song of the Huitznahuac](#)

[III. Hymn of Tlaloc](#)

[IV. Hymn to the All-Mother.](#)

[V. Hymn to the Virgin-Mother.](#)

[VI. Hymn to the God of Fire.](#)

[VII. Hymn of Mixcoatl.](#)

[VIII. Hymn to the God of Flowers.](#)

[IX. Hymn to the Goddess of Artists](#)

[X. Hymn to the God of Fishing.](#)

[XI. Hymn of the Otomi Leader.](#)

[XII. Hymn to the Goddess of Childbirth.](#)

[XIII. Hymn to the Mother of Mortals](#)

[XIV. Hymn at a Fast.](#)

[XV. Hymn to a Night-God.](#)

[XVI. Hymn to the Goddess of Food.](#)

[XVII. Hymn to the Gods of Wine.](#)

[XVIII. Hymn to the Master of Waters.](#)

[XIX. Hymn to the God of Flowers.](#)

[XX. Hymn to the God of Merchants.](#)

[Glossary](#)

[Index](#)

BRINTON'S LIBRARY OF ABORIGINAL AMERICAN LITERATURE. NUMBER VIII.

RIG VEDA AMERICANUS.

SACRED SONGS OF THE ANCIENT MEXICANS, WITH A GLOSS IN NAHUATL.

EDITED, WITH A PARAPHRASE, NOTES AND VOCABULARY,

BY

DANIEL G. BRINTON

[1890]

Scanned at sacred-texts.com, March 2001



XIPPE TOTEC, GOD OF SILVERSMITHS, IN FULL COSTUME. HYMN XV.

PREFACE.

In accordance with the general object of this series of volumes--which is to furnish materials for study rather than to offer completed studies--I have prepared for this number the text of the most ancient authentic record of American religious lore. From its antiquity and character, I have ventured to call this little collection the RIG VEDA AMERICANUS, after the similar cyclus of sacred hymns, which are the most venerable product of the Aryan mind.

As for my attempted translation of these mystic chants I offer it with the utmost reserve. It would be the height of temerity in me to pretend to have overcome difficulties which one so familiar with the ancient Nahuatl as Father Sahagun intimated were beyond his powers. All that I hope to have achieved is, by the aid of the Gloss--and not always in conformity to its suggestions--to give a general idea of the sense and purport of the originals.

The desirability of preserving and publishing these texts seems to me to be manifest. They reveal to us the undoubtedly authentic spirit of the ancient religion; they

{p. iv}

show us the language in its most archaic form; they preserve references to various mythical cycli of importance to the historian; and they illustrate the alterations in the spoken tongue adopted in the esoteric dialect of the priesthood. Such considerations will, I trust, attract the attention of scholars to these fragments of a lost literature.

In the appended Vocabulary I have inserted only those words and expressions for which I can suggest correct--or, at least, probable--renderings. Others will have to be left to future investigators.

{p. v}

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
<u>PREFACE</u>	iii
<u>INTRODUCTION</u>	ix
<u>I. HYMN OF HUITZILOPOCHTLI</u>	15

<u>II. WAR SONG OF THE HUITZNAHUAC</u>	19
<u>III. HYMN OF TLALOC</u>	22
<u>IV. HYMN TO THE ALL-MOTHER</u>	27
<u>V. HYMN TO THE VIRGIN MOTHER</u>	31
<u>VI. HYMN TO THE GOD OF FIRE</u>	33
<u>VII. HYMN OF MIXCOATL</u>	36
<u>VIII. HYMN TO THE GOD OF FLOWERS</u>	39
<u>IX. HYMN TO THE GODDESS OF ARTISTS</u>	41
<u>X. HYMN TO THE GOD OF FISHING</u>	43
<u>XI. HYMN OF THE OTOMI LEADER</u>	45
<u>XII. HYMN TO THE GODDESS OF CHILDBIRTH</u>	47
<u>XIII. HYMN TO THE MOTHER OF MORTALS</u>	49
<u>XIV. HYMN SUNG AT A FAST EVERY EIGHT YEARS</u>	52
<u>XV. HYMN TO A NIGHT GOD</u>	56
<u>XVI. HYMN TO THE GODDESS OF FOOD</u>	59
<u>XVII. HYMN TO THE GODS OF WINE</u>	61
<u>XVIII. HYMN TO THE MASTER OF WATERS</u>	63
<u>XIX. HYMN TO THE GOD OF FLOWERS</u>	65
<u>XX. HYMN TO THE GOD OF MERCHANTS</u>	67
<u>GLOSSARY</u>	69
<u>INDEX</u>	89

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

<u>XIPPE TOTEC, GOD OF SILVERSMITHS, IN FULL COSTUME</u>	FRONTISPIECE
<u>PRIEST OF XIPPE TOTEC, DRINKING AND PLAYING ON A DRUM</u>	HYMN XV
<u>CHICOMECOATL, GODDESS OF FOOD AND DRINK</u>	HYMN XVI
<u>TOTOCHTIN, THE RABBITS, GODS OF THE DRUNKARDS</u>	HYMN XVII
<u>ATLAUA, SINGING AND DANCING HYMN</u>	XVIII

{p. ix}

INTRODUCTION.

As in a previous number of the Library of Aboriginal American Literature I have discussed in detail the character of the ancient Mexican poetry, I shall confine myself at present to the history of the present collection. We owe its preservation to the untiring industry of Father Bernardino de Sahagun, one of the earliest missionaries to Mexico, and the author of by far the most important work on the religion, manners and customs of the ancient Mexicans.

By long residence and close application Sahagun acquired a complete mastery of the Nahuatl tongue. He composed his celebrated *Historia de las Casas de la Nueva España* primarily in the native language, and from this original wrote out a Spanish translation, in some parts considerably abbreviated. This incomplete reproduction is that which was published in Spanish by Lord Kingsborough and Bustamente, and in a French rendering with useful notes by Dr. Jourdanet and M. Rémi Simeon.

So far as I know, the only complete copy of the Nahuatl original now in existence is that preserved in the Bibliotheca Laurentio-Mediceana in Florence, where I examined it in April, 1889. It is a most elaborate and beautiful MS., in three large volumes, containing thirteen hundred and seventy eight illustrations, carefully drawn by hand, mostly colored, illustrative of the native mythology, history, arts and usages, besides many elaborate head and tail pieces to the chapters.

{p. x}

There is another Nahuatl MS. of Sahagun's history in the private library of the King of Spain at Madrid, which I examined in May, 1888, and of which I published a collation in the *Mémoires de la Société Internationale des Américanistes*, for that year. It is incomplete, embracing only the first six books of the *Historia*, and should be considered merely as a *borrador* or preliminary sketch for the Florentine copy. It contains, however, a certain amount of material not included in the latter, and has been peculiarly useful to me in the preparation of the present volume, as not only affording another reading of the text, valuable for comparison, but as furnishing a gloss or Nahuatl paraphrase of most of the hymns, which does not appear in the Florentine MS. As evidently the older of the two, I have adopted the readings of the Madrid MS. as my text, and given the variants of the Florentine MS. at the end of each hymn.

Neither MS. attempts any translation of the hymns. That at Madrid has no Spanish comment whatever, while that at Florence places opposite the hymns the following remarks, which are also found in the printed copies, near the close of the Appendix of the Second Book of the *Historia*:--

"It is an old trick of our enemy the Devil to try to conceal himself in order the better to compass his ends, in accordance with the words of the Gospel, 'He whose deeds are evil, shuns the light.' Also on earth this enemy of ours has provided himself with a dense wood and a ground, rough and filled with abysses, there to prepare his wiles and to escape pursuit, as do wild beasts and venomous serpents. This wood and these abysses are the songs which he has inspired for his service to be sung in his honor within the temples and outside

{p. xi}

of them; for they are so artfully composed that they say what they will, but disclose only what the Devil commands, not being rightly understood except by those to whom they are addressed. It is, in fact, well recognized that the cave, wood or abysses in which this cursed enemy hides himself, are these songs or chants which he himself composed, and which are sung to him without being understood except by those who are acquainted with this sort of language. The consequence is that they sing what they please, war or peace, praise to the Devil or contempt for Christ, and they cannot in the least be understood by other men."

Lord Kingsborough says in a note in his voluminous work on the *Antiquities of Mexico* that this portion of Sahagun's text was destroyed by order of the Inquisition, and that there was a memorandum to that effect in the Spanish original in the noble writer's possession. This could scarcely have referred to a translation of the hymns, for none such exists in any MS. I have consulted, or heard of; and Sahagun intimates in the passage quoted above that he had made none, on account of the obscurity of the diction. Neither does any appear in the Florentine MS., where the text of the hymns is given in full, although the explanatory Gloss is omitted. This last-mentioned fact has prevented me from correcting the text of the Gloss, which in some passages is manifestly erroneous; but I have confined myself to reproducing it strictly according to the original MS., leaving its correction to those who will make use of it.

The Florentine MS. has five colored illustrations of the divinities, or their symbols, which are spoken of in the chants. These are probably copied from the native hieroglyphic books

{p. xii}

in which, as we learn from Sahagun, such ancient songs were preserved and transmitted. These illustrations I had copied with scrupulous fidelity and reproduced by one of the photographic processes, for the present work.

Such is the history of this curious document, and with this brief introduction I submit it to those who will have the patience and skill to unravel its manifold difficulties.

[Next: I. The Hymn of Huitzilopochtli.](#)

I. The Hymn of Huitzilopochtli.

I. Vitzilopochtli icuic.

[English](#)

1. Vitzilopuchi, yaquetlaya, yyaconay, ynohuihuihua: anenicuic, toçiquemitla, yya, ayya, yya y ya uia, queyanoca, oya tonaqui, yyaya, yya, yya.
2. Tetzauiztli ya mixtecatl, ce ymocxi pichauaztecatla pomaya, ouayyeo, ayyayya.
3. Ay tlaxotla tenamitl yuitli macoc mupupuxotiu, yautlatoa ya, ayyayyo, noteuh aya tepanquizqui mitoaya.
4. Oya yeua uel mamauia, in tlaxotecatl teuhtla milacatzoaya, itlaxotecatl teuhtla milacatzoaya.
5. Amanteca toyauan xinechoncentlalizquiua ycalipan yauhtia, xinechoncentlalizqui.
6. Pipiteca toyauan xinechoncentlalizquiua: ycalipan. yautia, xinechoncentlalizqui.

Var. 6. This verse is omitted in the Medicean MS.

Gloss.

1. In ivitzilopochtli ayac nouiui, *id est*, ayac nechneneulia, ayac iuhqui, in iuhqui. Anenicuic, *id est*, amo ca nen nonicuic, in quetzali, in chalchihuitl in ixquich ynotlatqui, toçiquemtl. Queyanoca oya tonaqui, *id est*, onocatonat, onocatlatuit.
2. *Q. n.*, tetzauiztli, *id est*, oquintetzauito, in mixteca inic oquiyaochiuhqui: oquimanilito in imicxi in pichauazteca, ioan in mixteca.
3. Ay tlaxotla tenamitl, *q. n.*, quitepeua inin tena in aquique yauchiuallo. Iuitli macoc, *q. n.*, oncan quitema
{p. 16}
in tiçatl in ihuitl. Mopopuxotiu yauhtlatuaya, *q. n.*, inic mopopuxoticalaqui yauc, ioan, *q. n.*, yeuatl quitemaca y yauyutl quitemaceualtia, tepanquizqui, mitoayaqui yehuatl quichioa yauyutl.
4. Oya yeua huel mamauia, *q. n.*, çan oc momamauhtiaya in aya momochiua yauyutl. Teuhtla milacatzoaya *q. n.*, in noteuh in opeuh yauyutl, açac momauhtica iniquac ynoteuhtli moquetza ynoteuhtica tlayoa(lli).

5. Amanteca toyauan, *q. n.*, yn iyaoan yn aquiue in cani omocentlalique ca in calipan in yautioa ca tlatlaz ynin cal.

6. Pipiteca, toyaoan, xinechoncentlalizque, *q. n.*, in pipiteca y yaoan mochiuhque. Yn calla in mochiua yauyutl in i calipan.

Translation.

The Hymn of Huitzilopochtli.

1. Huitzilopochtli is first in rank, no one, no one is like unto him: not vainly do I sing (his praises) coming forth in the garb of our ancestors; I shine; I glitter.

2. He is a terror to the Mixteca; he alone destroyed the Picha-Huasteca, he conquered them.

3. The Dart-Hurler is an example to the city, as he sets to work. He who commands in battle is called the representative of my God.

4. When he shouts aloud he inspires great terror, the divine hurler, the god turning himself in the combat, the divine hurler, the god turning himself in the combat.

{p. 17}

5. Amanteca, gather yourselves together with me in the house of war against your enemies, gather yourselves together with me.

6. Pipiteca, gather yourselves together with me in the house of war against your enemies, gather yourselves together with me.

Notes.

Huitzilopochtli was the well-known war-god of the Azteca, whose functions are described by Sahagun (*Historia*, Lib. I., cap. 1) and many other writers. The hymn here given is probably the *tlaxotecuyotl*, which was chanted at the celebration of his feast in the fifteenth month of the Mexican calendar (see Sahagun, *Historia*, Lib. II., cap. 34). The word means "his glory be established." It was commenced at sunset and repeated till sunrise.

1. "In the garb of our ancestors" (*to-citli-quemitl*). The high priest appeared in the insignia of Quetzalcoatl, which, says Sahagun, "were very gorgeous." (*Hist.*, Lib. II., Appendix.)

2. Mixteca, plural of Mixtecatl, an inhabitant of Mixtecapan, near the Pacific. The Huasteca, a nation of Maya lineage, lived on the Gulf coast.

3. The god was called the Hurler, as he was believed to hurl the lightning serpent (the *xiuhcoatl*).

5. Sahagun recites the legends about the Amanteca (*Historia*, Lib. IX., cap. 18). Here the name refers to the inhabitants of the quarter called Amantlan.

6. *Pipiteca*, a *nomen gentile*, referring doubtless to a certain class of the hearers.

{p. 18}

This hymn may be compared to another, descriptive of the same divinity, preserved in Sahagun's MS. in Madrid. It is as follows, with my translation by its side.

Vitzilopuchtli	Huitzilopochtli,
Can maceualli	Only a subject,
Can tlacatl catca.	Only a mortal was.
Naualli	A magician,
Tetzauitl	A terror,
Atlacacemelle	A stirrer of strife,
Teixcuepani	A deceiver,
Quiyocoyani in yaoyotl	A maker of war,
Yaotecani	An arranger of battles,
Yautlatoani;	A lord of battles;
Ca itechpa mitoaya	And of him it was said
Tepan quitlaza	That he hurled
In xiuhcoatl	His flaming serpent,
Immamalhuaztli	His fire stick;
Quitonequi yaoyotl	Which means war,
Teoatl tlachinolli.	Blood and burning;
Auh iniquac ilhuiq'xtliloya	And when his festival was celebrated,
Malmicouaya	Captives were slain,
Tlaaltimicoaya	Washed slaves were slain,
Tealtilaya impochteca.	The merchants washed them.
Auh inic mochichiuaya:	And thus he was arrayed:
Xiuhtotonacoche catca	With head-dress of green feathers,
Xiuhcoanauale	Holding his serpent torch,
Xiuhtlalpile	Girded with a belt,
Matacaxe	Bracelets upon his arms,
Tzitzile	Wearing turquoises,
Oyuvale.	As a master of messengers.

When in Florence, in 1889, I had an accurate copy made of the Nahuatl text and all the figures of the first book of Sahagun's History. The colored figure of Huitzilopochtli is in accordance with the above description.

[Next: II. War Song of the Huitznahuac](#)

II. War Song of the Huitznahuac

II. Uitznaoac yautl icuic.

[English](#)

1. Ahuia tlacochcalco notequioa ayayui nocaquia tlatl, ya nechyapinauia, ayaca nomati, nitetzauiztli, auia, ayaca nomati niya, yautla, aquitoloc tlacochcalco notequioa, iuexcatlatoa ay nopilchan.
2. Ihiya quetl tocuilechcatl quaiquemitl nepapan oc uitzetla.
3. Huia oholopa telipuchtla, yuiyoc yn nomalli, ye nimauia, ye nimauia, yuiyoc yn nomalli.
4. Huia uitznauac telepochtla yuiyoc, yn nomalli, ye nimauia, ye nimauia yuiyoc, y nomalli.
5. Huia ytzicotla telipochtla, yuiyoc, yn nomalli, ye nimauia, ye nimauia, yuiyoc yn nomalli.
6. Uitznauac teuaqui, machiyotla tetemoya, ahuia oyatonac, yahuia oyatonac, machiyotla tetemoya.
7. Tocuilitla teuaqui, machiyotla tetemoya, ahuia oyatonac, yahuia oyatonac uia, machiyotla tetemoya.

Var. 6. Vitzanaoac teuhoaquí machiotla. MS. Med.

The War Song of the Huitznahuac.

1. What ho! my work is in the hall of arms, I listen to no mortal, nor can any put me to shame, I know none such, I am the Terror, I know none other, I am where war is, my work is said to be in the hall of arms, let no one curse my children.
2. Our adornment comes from out the south, it is varied in color as the clothing of the eagle.
3. Ho! ho! abundance of youths doubly clothed, arrayed

{p. 20}

in feathers, are my captives, I deliver them up, I deliver them up, my captives arrayed in feathers.

4. Ho! youths for the Huitznahuac, arrayed in feathers, these are my captives, I deliver them up, I deliver them up, arrayed in feathers, my captives.
5. Youths from the south, arrayed in feathers, my captives, I deliver them up, I deliver them up, arrayed in feathers, my captives.
6. The god enters, the Huitznahuac, he descends as an example, he shines forth, he shines forth, descending as an example.
7. Adorned like us he enters as a god, he descends as an example, he shines forth, he shines forth, descending as an example.

Notes.

There is no Gloss to this hymn, but its signification seems clear. *Huitznahuac* was a name applied to several edifices in the great temple at Tenochtitlan, as we are informed at length by Sahagun. The word is a locative from *huitznahua*. This term means "magicians from the south" or "diviners with thorns," and was applied in the Quetzalcoatl mythical cyclus to the legendary enemies. of Huitzilopochtli, whom he is said to have destroyed as soon as he was born. (See my discussion of this myth in *Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society* for 1887.) Apparently to perpetuate the memory of this exploit, the custom was, at the festival of Huitzilopochtli, for the slaves who were to be sacrificed to form two bands, one representing the Huitznahua and the other the partisans of the god, and to slaughter each other until the arrival of the god Paynal put an end to the combat (Sahagun,

{p. 21}

Historia, Lib. II, cap. 34). The song here given belongs to this portion of the ancient rite.

1. The *tlacochcalli*, "house of arrows" (*tlacochtli*, arrow, *calli*, house), was a large ball in the temple of Huitzilopochtli where arrows, spears and other arms were kept (Sahagun, Lib. VIII., cap. 32).
2. The "adornment from the south" refers to the meaning of the name Huitznahua. (See Glossary.)
3. Sahagun (*ubi sup.*) informs us that the slaves condemned to die fought against free warriors, and when any of the latter were captured they were promptly put to death by their captors.

[Next: III. Hymn of Tlaloc](#)

III. Hymn of Tlaloc

III. Tlaloc icuic.

[English](#)

1. Ahuia Mexico teutlaneuiloc amapanitla anauhcampa, ye moquetzquetl, aoyequene y chocaya.
2. Ahuia anneuaya niyocoloc, annoteua eztlamiyaua, aylhuiçolla nic yaucaya teutiualcoya.
3. Ahuia annotequiua naualpilli aquitlanella motonacayouh tic yachiuh quitla catlachtoquetl, çan mitziyapinauia.
4. Ahuia cana catella nechyapinauia anechyaca uelmatia, anotata yn oquacuillo ocelocoatl aya.
5. Ahuia tlallocana, xiuacalco aya quizqui aquamotla, acatonalaya.
6. Ahuia xiyanouia, nahuia xiyamotecaya ay poyauhtla, ayauh chicauaztica, ayauicalo tlallocanaya.
7. Aua nacha tozcuecuexi niyayalizqui aya y chocaya.
8. Ahuia queyamica xinechiuaya, temoquetl aitlatol, aniquiya ilhuiquetl, tetzauhpilla niyayalizqui aya y chocaya.
9. Ahuia nauhxiuhticaya itopanecauiloc ayoc ynomatia, ay motlapoalli, aya ximocaya ye quetzalcalla nepanauia ay yaxcana teizcaltequetl.
10. Ahuia xiyanouia, ahuia xiyamotequaya ay poyauhtla, ayauh chicauaztica ayauicallo tlalloca.

Var. 1. Amopanitl.

Gloss.

1. Auia Mexico teutlanauiloc, *q. n.*, yn Mexico onetlanauiloc in tlaloc. Amapanitl annauhcampa ye moquetzquetl, *q. n.*,

{p. 23}

amapanitl nauhcampa omoquequetz. Aoyeque naichocaya, *id est*, itlaocuyaya.

2. Auia anneuaya niyocoloc, *q. n.*, ynehuatl ni tlaloc oniyocoloc. Annoteua eztlamiyauual, *q. n.*, noteu eztlamiyaualtitih. Aylhuiçolla, *q. n.*, yn umpa ilhuiçololo. Inic yaucaya teuitualcoya, *q. n.* in teuitualoc.

3. Auia annotequiua naualpilli, *q. n.* in tinoteuh naualpilli, *i.e.*, tlaloc. Aquitlanella motonacayouh, *q. n.*, ca nelli teuatl ticmochiuilia in motonacayouh. Catlachoquetl, *q. n.*, teuatl ticmochiuilia auh in aquin timitzpinauia.

4. Ahuia cana catella nechyapinauia, *q. n.*, catel nechpinauia ca monechuelmati. Annotata ynoquacuillo ocelocoatl aya, *q. n.*, yn notaua ioan yna quacuiloa yn oceloquacuili.

5. Ahuia tlallocana xiuacalco, *q. n.*, in tlalocan xiuhcalco, *id est*, acxoyacalco. Ayaquizqui, *q. n.*, umpa ualquizque. Aquamotla acatonalaya, *q. n.*, y notauan yn oquacuiloan acatonal.

6. Ahuia xicanouia nauia xiyamotecaya, *q. n.*, xiuian ximotecati. Ay poyauhtlan, *q. n.*, in umpa poyauhtlan tepeticpac. Ayauh chicauaztica ayauicalo tlalocana, *q. n.*, ayauh chicauaztica in auicalo tlalocan.

7. Aua nach tozcuecuexi niyayalizqui, *q. n.*, y nach tozcuecuex y ye niauh niman ye choca.

8. Ahuia queyamica xinechiuaya, *q. n.*, quenamican y ya niauh aço anechtemozque. Aniquiya ilhuiquetl tetzapilla niyayalizqui ayaichocaya, *q. n.*, onquihui yn tetzapilli ye niyauh niman ye choca.

{p. 24}

9. Ahuia nauhxiuhticaya nitopanecauiloc, *q. n.*, nauhxiuhtica in topanecauiloz, *id est*, in tepan mochiuaz. Ayoc inomatia ay motlapoalli, *q. n.*, aocmo nomatia iniquin motlapoalpan. Ca oximoac ye quetzalcalla nepanauia, *q. n.*, ye qualcan ye netlamachtilyan ynemca. Ay yaxcana teizcaltiquetl, *q. n.*, iniaxca inic oteizcalli.

10. Ahuia xiyanouia, *q. n.*, xiuia. Auia xiya motecaya ay poyauhtla, *q. n.*, ximotecati in umpa poyauhtla. Ayauh chicauaztica auicallo tlalocan, *q. n.*, ayauh chicauaztica in auicallo in umpa tlalocan.

The Hymn of Tlaloc.

1. In Mexico the god appears; thy banner is unfolded in all directions, and no one weeps.

2. I, the god, have returned again, I have turned again to the place of abundance of blood-sacrifices; there

when the day grows old, I am beheld as a god.

3. Thy work is that of a noble magician; truly thou hast made thyself to be of our flesh; thou hast made thyself, and who dare affront thee?

4. Truly he who affronts me does not find himself well with me; my fathers took by the head the tigers and the serpents.

5. In Tlalocan, in the verdant house, they play at ball, they cast the reeds.

6. Go forth, go forth to where the clouds are spread abundantly, where the thick mist makes the cloudy house of Tlaloc.

7. There with strong voice I rise up and cry aloud.

{p. 25}

8. Go ye forth to seek me, seek for the words which I have said, as I rise, a terrible one, and cry aloud.

9. After four years they shall go forth, not to be known, not to be numbered, they shall descend to the beautiful house, to unite together and know the doctrine.

10. Go forth, go forth to where the clouds are spread abundantly, where the thick mist makes the cloudy house of Tlaloc.

Notes.

The god Tlaloc shared with Huitzilopochtli the highest place in the Mexican Pantheon. He was the deity who presided over the waters, the rains, the thunder and the lightning. The annual festival in his honor took place about the time of corn-planting, and was intended to secure his favor for this all-important crop. Its details are described at great length by Diego Duran, *Historia de Nueva España*, cap. 86, and Sahagun, *Historia*, Lib. II., cap. 25, and elsewhere. His name is derived from *tlalli*, earth. Tlalocan, referred to in v. 5, "the place of Tlaloc," was the name of a mountain east of Tenochtitlan, where the festival of the god was celebrated; but it had also a mythical meaning, equivalent to "the earthly Paradise," the abode of happy souls.

It will be observed that v. 10, is a repetition of v. 6. The word *ayauicalo* refers to the ayauhcalli, "house of mist," the home of the rain god, which Sahagun informs us was represented at the annual festival by four small buildings near the water's edge, carefully disposed to face the four cardinal, points of the compass (Sahagun, *ubi supra*).

In v. 8 the expression *tetzauhpilli* (*tetzauhqui*, to frighten)

{p. 26}

may be explained by the figure of Tlaloc, whose statue, says Duran, was that of *un espantable monstruo, la cara muy fea* (*ibid.*).

The compound in v. 10, *nauhxiuhtica*, "after four years," appears to refer to the souls of the departed brave ones, who, according to Aztec mythology, passed to the heaven for four years and after that returned to the terrestrial Paradise,--the palace of Tlaloc. (See my paper, *The Journey of the Soul*, in *Proceedings of the Numismatic and Antiquarian Society of Philadelphia*, 1883.)

[Next: IV. Hymn to the All-Mother.](#)

IV. Hymn to the All-Mother.

IV. Teteuynan ycuic.

[English](#)

1. Ahuiya coçauic xochitla oya cueponca yeua tonana teumechaue moquiçican tamoanchan, auayye, auayya, yyao, yya, yyeo, aye ayo, ayy ayyaa.
2. Coçauic xochitla oya moxocha yeua tonana, teumechaue, moquiçica tamoanchan, ouayye, auayya, yyao, yya, yyeo, ayo aye, ayya, ayyaa.
3. Ahuia iztac xochitla, oya cueponca yeua tonana teumechaue moquiçica tamoanchan, ouayye, auayya, yyao yya, yyeo, ayeaye, ayya ayyaa.
4. Ahuiya iztac xochitla oya moxocha yeua tonana teumechaue moquiçica tamoanchan, ouayye, auayya, yyao, yya, yyeo, aye aye, ayya ayyaa.
5. Ahuia ohoya teutl ca teucontli paca tona aya, itzpapalotli, auayye, yyao, yya, yyeo, ayyaa.
6. Ao, auatic ya itaca chicunauixtlauatla maçatl yyollo, ica mozcaltizqui tonan tlatlecutli, ayao, ayyao, ayyaa.
7. Aho, ye yancuic tiçatla ye yancuic yuitla oya potoniloc yn auicacopa acatl xamontoca.
8. Aho maçatl mochiuhca teutlalipan mitziya noittaco, yeua xiuhnello, yeua mialichan.

Var. 7. Xamantoca. 8. Yehoa.

Gloss.

1. *Q. n.*, in tonan ocueponya umpa oalquiz yn tamoanchan.
2. *Q. n.*, in amona ca izcui yn xochiuh ca umpa oquiz yn tmoanchan.

{p. 28}

3. *Q. n.* In tonan ocuepo in umpa oquiz tamoanchan.
4. *Q. n.*, in amona iztac in oxochiuh yn umpa oniquiz tamoanchan.
5. *Q. n.*, in tonan ca teucumitl icpac in quiz yn itzpapalotl.
6. *Q. n.*, in tonan ixtlauan in mozcaltito auh inic mozcalti macatl y yollo y yeua tonan tlaltecutli.
7. *Q. n.*, auh inic potoniloc, tonan, yancuic tiçatl ioan yancuic yn iuitl, auh nauhcampa quite ynacatl.
8. *Q. n.*, in macatl yeuan can iliaya yn ixtlauacan yuhqui inic quic noitayan y yeuatl inimich ioan in xiuhnel.

Hymn to the Mother of the Gods.

1. Hail to our mother, who caused the yellow flowers to blossom, who scattered the seeds of the maguey, as she came forth from Paradise.
2. Hail to our mother, who poured forth flowers in abundance, who scattered the seeds of the maguey, as she came forth from Paradise.
3. Hail to our mother, who caused the yellow flowers to blossom, she who scattered the seeds of the maguey, as she came forth from Paradise.
4. Hail to our mother, who poured forth white flowers in abundance, who scattered the seeds of the maguey, as she came forth from Paradise.
5. Hail to the goddess who shines in the thorn bush like a bright butterfly.
6. Ho! she is our mother, goddess of the earth, she supplies
{p. 29}
food in the desert to the wild beasts, and causes them to live.
7. Thus, thus, you see her to be an ever-fresh model of liberality toward all flesh.
8. And as you see the goddess of the earth do to the wild beasts, so also does she toward the green herbs and the fishes.

Notes.

The goddess to whom this hymn is devoted was called Teleoinan, the Mother of the Gods, *Toçi*, our Mother (maternal ancestor), and also by another name which signified "the Heart of the Earth," the latter being bestowed upon her, says Duran, because she was believed to be the cause of earthquakes. Her general functions were those of a genius of fertility, extending both to the vegetable and the animal world. Thus, she was the patroness of the native midwives and of women in childbirth (Sahagun). Her chief temple at Tepeyacac was one of the most renowned in ancient Mexico, and it was a felicitous idea of the early missionaries to have "Our Lady of Guadalupe" make her appearance on the immediate site of this ancient fane already celebrated as the place of worship of the older female deity. The *Codex Ramirez* makes her a daughter of the first King of Culhuacan.

1. *Tamoanchan*. This word Sahagun translates "we seek homes," while the *Codex Telleriano-Remensis* gives the more intelligible rendering "there is their home whither they descend," and adds that it is synonymous with *Xochitlycacan*, "the place where the flowers are lifted." It was the mystical Paradise of the Aztecs, the Home of the Gods, and the happy

{p. 30}

realm of departed souls. The Codex just quoted adds that the gods were born there, which explains the introduction of the word into this hymn.

5. For *teucontli* (see Glossary) I should suggest *teocomitl*, a species of ornament. (cf. Sahagun, *Historia*, Lib. II., cap. 37.)

[Next: V. Hymn to the Virgin-Mother.](#)

V. Hymn to the Virgin-Mother.

V. Chimalpanecatli icuic ioan tlaltecaua (nanotl).

[English](#)

1. Ichimalipan chipuchica ueya, mixiuiloc yautlatoaya, ichimalipan chipuchica ueya, mixiuiloc yautlatoa.
2. Coatepec tequiua, tepetitla moxayaua teueuel aya quinelli moquichtiuiui tlalli cuecuechiuia aqui moxayaua teueuella.

Var. Title. Tlaltecaoannanotl. 2. Cohoatepechquiua.

Gloss.

1. *Q. n.*, yautlatolli ipa omixiuh ynanotl chimalipan in omixiuh, *id est*. ipa oquitlacatilli ynanotl in uitzilopochtli y yauyutl.
2. *Q. n.*, coatepec otepeuh tepetitla yc moxaua ioan y teueuel, *id est*, ichimal ic otepeuh aocac omoquichquetz iniquac peualoque coatepec a iniquac otlalli cuecuechiuh, *id est*, iquac opopolihque.

Hymn to Chimalipan in Parturition.

1. Chimalipan was a virgin when she brought forth the adviser of battles; Chimalipan was a virgin when she brought forth the adviser of battles.
2. On the Coatepec was her labor; on the mountain he ripened into age; as he became a man truly the earth was shaken, even as he became a man.

Notes.

The goddess Chimalipan is not mentioned by the authorities at my command; but from the tenor of the hymn it is

{p. 32}

evident that the name is a synonym for the virgin mother of Huitzilopochtli, who is distinctly referred to by his title *Yautloani* (see ante, p. x8). In the myth, she dwelt upon the Coatepetl, the Serpent Mountain, on the site of Tula. For a full discussion of this myth I refer to my inquiry, "*Were the Toltecs an Historic Nationality?*" in *Proceedings of the Amer. Phil. Soc.* for Sept. 1887, and *American Hero Myths*, chap. ii. (Phila., 1881).

The Gloss distinctly states that the mother of Huitzilopochtli is referred to in the hymn. We must regard Chimalipan therefore as identical with *Chimalman*, who, according to another myth dwelt in Tula as a virgin, and was divinely impregnated by the descending spirit of the All-father in the shape of a bunch of feathers.

In other myths she is mentioned as also the mother of the Huitznahua, the enemies and the brothers of Huitzilopochtli, referred to in the second of this collection of chants.

[Next: VI. Hymn to the God of Fire.](#)

VI. Hymn to the God of Fire.

VI. Ixcoçauhqui icuic.

[English](#)

1. Huiya tzonimolco notauane ye namech maya pinauhtiz, tetemoca ye namech maya pinauhtiz.
2. Xonca mecatla notecua icçotl mimilcatoc chicueyocan naualcalli nauali temoquetlaya.
3. Huiya tzonimolco cuicotipeuhque, aya tzonimolco cuicotipeuhque, aya iztleica naual moquizcauia, iztlauan naual moquizca.
4. Huia tzonimolco maceualli maya temacouia, oya tonaqui, oya tonaqui maceualli, maya temacouiya.
5. Huiya tzonimolco xoxolcuicatl cacauantoc ya ayouica mocuiltonoaci tontecuitl moteicnelil mauiztli.
6. Huiya ciuatontla xatenonotza, ayyauhcalcatl quiyauatla, xatenonotza.

Var. 2. Xoncan mecatlan notechoan. 3. Iztleica (for iztlauan). 6. Ia ayiauhcalcatl.

Gloss.

- I. *Q. n.*, yn itzonmolcatl notauane ye nemechpinauhtiz nachcan nochan tetemoan, ye nemechpinauhtiz.
 2. *Q. n.*, yn mecatla amo tecuhuan in oncan icçotl mimilcatoc ucyaquixtoc icçotl uncan in temoc in chicueyocan.
 3. *Q. n.*, yn tzonmolco otipeuhque macuico yn tzonmolco macuico otipeuhque tleica in amo anualquiça tleica yn ayauaquiça.
 4. *Q. n.*, yn tzonmolco otonac auh in omaceualhoan xinechinacaqui notechpouizque yn enetoltiloyan.
- {p. 34}
5. *Q. n.*, yn cuicatl tzomolco ca ye cauani in aic necuiltonollo netotilo in tetecuti yeua moteicnelil ca

mauiztic.

6. *Q. n.*, yn ciuatontli xitenonotza in quiauat ayauhcalcatl, *id est*, in ticiuatontli xitenonotza.

Hymn to Ixcoçauhqui.

1. In the Hall of Flames let me not put to shame my ancestors; descending there, let me not put you to shame.
2. I fasten a rope to the sacred tree, I twist it in eight folds, that by it I, a magician, may descend to the magical house.
3. Begin your song in the Hall of Flames; begin your song in the Hall of Flames; why does the magician not come forth? Why does he not rise up?
4. Let his subjects assist in the Hall of Flames; he appears, he appears, let his subjects assist.
5. Let the servants never cease the song in the Hall of Flames; let them rejoice greatly, let them dance wonderfully.
6. Call ye for the woman with abundant hair, whose care is the mist and the rain, call ye for her.

Notes.

Ixcoçauhqui, "*the Yellow Faced*," was the Mexican God of Fire. Torquemada gives as his synonyms *Xiuhtecutli*, "Lord of Fire," and *Huehueteotl*, "the Ancient God" (*Monarquia Indiana*, Lib. VI., cap. 28). Elsewhere he identifies him with the Sun-god (*Ibid.*, Lib. XIV., cap. 4). Sahagun describes his annual festival (*Hist.*, Lib. II., cap. 38), and gives another of his names, *Cueçaltzin*, a reverential form of *cueçalotl*, flame (*Hist.*, Lib. I., cap. 13).

{p. 35}

The *tzonmolco* so often referred to in this hymn was the sixty-fourth edifice in the great temple of Tenochtitlan, and was devoted to the worship of Ixcoçauhqui (Sahagun). The word literally means "the place of spreading hairs," the rays or ornaments spreading from the head of the statue of the god representing flames (Sahagun).

The reference in v. 6 seems to be to one of the women who were sacrificed at the festival, as related by Sahagun (Lib. II., App.).

[Next: VII. Hymn of Mixcoatl.](#)

VII. Hymn of Mixcoatl.

VII. Mimixcoa icuic.

[English](#)

1. Chicomoztoc quinexaqui, çani aueponi, çani, çani, teyomi.
2. Tziuactitlan quinexaqui, çani a aueponi, çani, çani, teyomi.
3. Oya nitemoc, oya nitemoc, aya ica nitemoc notziuaquimiuh, aya ica nitemoc notziuaquimiuh.
4. Oya nitemoc, oya nitemoc, ayayca nitemoc nomatlauacal.
5. Ni quimacui, ni quimacui, yuaya niquimacui, niquimacui, yuanya ayo macuiui.
6. Tlachtli icpacaya, uel incuicaya, quetzalcuxcuxaya, quinanquilia çinteutla, aay.

Var. i. Quinehoaqui. 2. Quineuaqui. 6. Ipac.

Gloss.

1. *Q. n.*, chicomoztoc oniualleuac çani aueponi, ichichimecatlatol, çani aueponi, çani, çani teyomi.
2. *Q. n.*, tziuactli in itlan oniualleuac çani aueponi, çani, çani teyomi.
3. Oya nitemoc, *q. n.*, onitemoc onitlacatl ipan ynotziuacmiuh; onitemoc ipan ynotziuacmiuh ça niman ipan nitlacat ynotlauitol ynomiuh.
4. *Q. n.*, onitemoc onitlacat inipan nomatlauacal ça niman ipan nitlacat.
5. Y yacatlatol. Yc a a inya in chichimeca in chichimecatlatol.

{p. 37}

6. *Q. n.*, yn tlataçica tictecazque totlach uncan ticuicazque noyehuatl in quetzalcocox.

Hymn of Mixcoatl.

1. I come forth from Chicomoztoc, only to you, my friends, to you, honored ones.
2. I come forth from Tziuactitlan, only to you my friends, only to you honored ones.
3. I sought, I sought, in all directions I sought with my pack; in all directions I sought with my pack.
4. I sought, I sought, in all directions I sought with my traveling net.
5. I took them in hand, I took them in hand; yes, I took them in hand; yes, I took them in hand.
6. In the ball ground I sang well and strong, like to the quetzal bird; I answered back to the god.

Notes.

"The Chichimecs," says Sahagun (*Hist.*, Lib. VI., cap. 7), "worshipped only one god, called *Mixcoatl*." The *Anales de Cuauhtitlan* speaks of Mixcoatl as one of the leaders of the ancient Nahuas from their primitive home Chicomoztoc, the land of the Seven Caves. This is what is referred to in the above hymn. In later times Mixcoatl became god of hunting and of the tornado, and his worship extended to the Otomis.

Tzihuactitlan, "the land of the tzihuac bushes," I have not found mentioned by any of the Spanish authorities, but it is named in connection with Chicomoztoc in an ancient war-song given in my *Ancient Nahuatl Poetry*, pp. 88 and 140.

{p. 38}

The hymn appears to be in memory of the leadership of Mixcoatl in conducting the ancestors of the Nahua on their long wanderings after leaving their pristine seats. It should be read in connection with the earlier pages of the *Annals of Cuauhtitlan*.

The reduplicated form of the name, *Mimixcoatl*, is not found elsewhere, and appears to be a poetic license.

[Next: VIII. Hymn to the God of Flowers.](#)

VIII. Hymn to the God of Flowers.

VIII. Xochipilli icuic.

[English](#)

1. Ye cuicaya tocnuaya ouaya yeo, ye cuicaya ye quetzalcoxcuxa yoaltica tlaō çinteutla, oay.
2. Çan quicaquiz nocuic ocoyoalle teumechaue, oquicaquiz nocuica in cipactonalla atilili, ouayya.
3. Ayao, ayao, ayao, ayao, nitlanauati ay tlalocan tlamacazque, ayao, ayao, ayao.
4. Ayao, ayao, ayao, tlalocan tlamacazque nitlanauati, aya, ayao, ayyao.
5. Ac, çani uallaçic, otli nepaniuia, cani çinteutla campa ye noyaz, campa otli nicyatoca ça oay.
6. Ayao, aya, ayao, tlalocan tlamacazque, quiauiteteu, ayyao, aya, ayao.

Gloss.

1. *Q. n.*, ca otonac, ca otlatuic ca ye cuico ca ye cuica centeotl in quetzalcocox.
2. *Q. n.*, macaco, in tocuic ynican maquicaquican yn nican tlaca.
3. *Q. n.*, in tlaloque tlamacazque niquinnauatia ye niauh in nochan.
4. *Q. n.*, yn tlaloque tlamacazque niquinnauatia ye niauh in nochan.
5. *Q. n.*, ca onitlanauati ni tlaloca catli ye nictocaz utli.
6. *Q. n.*, yn antlaloque yn antlamacazque catli nictocaz yn anteteuh.

{p. 40}

Hymn to Xochipilli.

1. O friends, the quetzal bird sings, it sings its song at midnight to Cinteotl.
2. The god will surely hear my song by night, he will hear my song as the day begins to break.
3. I send forth the priests to the house of Tlaloc.
4. The priests to the house of Tlaloc do I send forth.
5. I shall go forth, I shall join myself unto them, I shall go where is Cinteotl, I shall follow the path to him.
6. The priests go forth to the house of Tlaloc, to the home of the gods of the plain.

Notes.

Xochipilli, "lord of flowers," otherwise named *Macuilxochitl*, "five flowers" (the name of a small odorous plant), was the deity who gave and protected all flowering plants. As one of the gods of fertility and production, he was associated with Tlaloc, god of rains, and Cinteotl, god of maize. His festival is described in Sahagun (*Historia*, Lib. I., cap. 14).

2. *Cipactonalla*, from *cipactli*, and *tonalli*, may refer to *Cipactonal*, the reputed discoverer of the Aztec calendar. See Sahagun, *Historia*, Lib. IV., cap. i.

[Next: IX. Hymn to the Goddess of Artists](#)

IX. Hymn to the Goddess of Artists

IX. Xochiquetzal icuic.

[English](#)

1. Atlayauican ni xochiquetzalli tlacya niuitza ya motencaliuan tamoanchan oay.
2. Ye quitichocaya tlamacazecatla piltzintecutlo quiyatemoaya ye xochinquetzalla xoyauia ay topa niaz, oay.

Var. 2. Icotochiquetzalla.

Gloss.

1. *Q. n.*, ompa niuitz ynixochiquetzal tamoanchan.
2. *Q. n.*, choca piltzintecutli quitemoa in xochiquetzal xoyauia no umpa niaz.

Hymn to Xochiquetzal.

1. I, Xochiquetzal, go forth willingly to the dancing place by the water, going forth to the houses in Tamoanchan.
2. Ye noble youths, ye priests who wept, seeking Xochiquetzal, go forth there where I am going.

Notes.

Xochiquetzal, "plumage of flowers," was the deity of the artists, the painters, weavers, engravers on metal, silver and goldsmiths, and of all who dealt in fine colors. Her figure was that of a young woman with gay garments and jewelry (Duran, *Historia*, cap. 94). In the *Codex Telleriano-Remensis* she is assigned as synonyms *Ichpochtli*, the Virgin, and *Itzpapalotl*, literally "the obsidian butterfly," but which was probably applied to a peculiar ornament of her idol.

On *Tamoanchan* see notes to Hymn IV.

{p. 42}

The term *atlayauican*, which I have translated "the dancing place by the water," appears to refer to the "jar dance," *baile de las jicaras*, which took place at the festival of the goddess, in the month of October. Duran informs us this was executed at a spot by the shore of the lake. Ceremonial bathing was carried on at the same festival, and these baths were considered to cleanse from sin, as well as from physical pollution.

[Next: X. Hymn to the God of Fishing.](#)

X. Hymn to the God of Fishing.

X. Amimitl icuic.

[English](#)

1. Cotiuana, cotiuana, cali totoch maca huiya yyalimanico, oquixanimanico, tlacochealico, oua, yya yya, matonicaya, matonicalico, oua yya yo, çana, çana, ayoueca niuia, çana canoya, ueca niuia, yya, yya, yyeuaya, çana, çana, yeueua niuia.
2. Ye necuiliyaya, niuaya, niuaya, niuaya, ay ca nauh niuahuaya, niuaya, niuaya, ay ca nauh.
3. Tlaixtotoca ye ca nauhtzini, tlaixtotoca ye ca nauhtzini, ayoaya, yoaya, ye ca nauhtzini.
4. Aueya itzipana nomauilia, aueya itzipana nomauilia, aueya itzipana nomauilia.

Var. i. Manca. Matinicaya.

Gloss.

In amimitl icuic yuh mitoa in ueli chichimeca cuic amo uel caquizti in quein quitoa in tonauatlalol ypa.

Hymn to Amimitl.

1. Join together your hands in the house, take hands in the sequent course, let them spread forth, spread forth in the hall of arrows. join hands, join hands in the house, for this, for this have I come, have I come.
2. Yes, I have come, bringing four with me, yes I have come, four being with me.
3. Four noble ones, carefully selected, four noble ones, carefully selected, yes, four noble ones.
4. They personally appear before his face, they personally appear before his face, they personally appear before his face.

{p. 44}

Notes.

The brief Gloss to this Hymn states that it is of ancient Chichimec origin and that it cannot well be rendered in Nahuatl. Its language is exceedingly obscure, but it is evidently a dancing song.

Amimitl, "the water-arrow," or "fish-spear," was, according to Torquemada, especially worshipped at Cuitlahuac. He was god of fishing, and visited the subjects of his displeasure with diseases of a dropsical or watery character (*Monarquia Indiana*, Lib. VI., cap. 29). On slender and questionable grounds Clavigero identifies him with Opochtli, the god of net makers and fishers with nets (*Storia Antica del Messico*, Tom. II., p. 20).

The four noble ones referred to in vv. 3 and 4 probably refer to those characters in the Mexican sacred dances called "the four auroras," four actors clothed respectively in white, green, yellow and red robes. See Diego Duran, *Historia*, cap. 87.

[Next: XI. Hymn of the Otomi Leader.](#)

XI. Hymn of the Otomi Leader.

XI. Otontecutli icuic.

[English](#)

1. Onoalico, onoalico, pomaya, yyaya, ayyo, ayyo, aya, aya, ayyo.
2. Chimalocutitlana motlaqueuia auetzini nonoualico, quauinochitla, cacauatla motlaqueuia auetzini.
3. Ni tepanecatli aya cuecuexi, ni quetzallicoatli aya cuecuexi.
4. Cane ca ya itziueponi, cane ca ya itziueponi.
5. Otomico, noyoco, nauaco, mexicame ya yauilili, noyoco, nauaco, mexicame ya.
6. A chimalli aya, xa, xauino quiyauilili, noyoco, nauaco, mexicame ya.

Var. 2. Nonoualco.

Hymn of Otontecutli.

1. At Nonoalco he rules, at Nonoalco, Oho! Oho!
2. In the pine woods he prepares your destruction at Nonoalco, in the tuna woods, in the cacao woods he prepares your destruction.
3. I, dweller in the palace, shook them; I, Quetzalcoatl, shook them.
4. There was a splendor of spears, a splendor of spears.
5. With my captain, with my courage, with my skill, the Mexicans were put to flight; even the Mexicans, with my courage, with my skill.
6. Go forth, ye shield bearers, put the Mexicans to flight with my courage, with my skill.

{p. 46}

Notes.

The absence of a Gloss to this hymn adds to the difficulty of a translation. *Otontecutli* was the chief deity of the Otomis, and the chant appears to be one of their war songs in their conflict with the Azteca. The name is a compound of *otomiltl*, an Otomi, and *tecutli*, ruler or lord. He is slightly referred to by Sahagun as the first ruler to govern the ancestors of the Otomis." (*Historia*, Lib. X, Cap. 29, sec. 5.)

[Next: XII. Hymn to the Goddess of Childbirth.](#)

XII. Hymn to the Goddess of Childbirth.

XII. Ayopechtli icuic.

[English](#)

1. Cane Cana ichan, ayopechcatl cozcapanica mixiuhtoc.
2. Cane Cana ichan ayopechcatl cozcapanica mixiuhtoc, cane ichan chacayoticaya.
3. Xiualmeuayaui, xiua xiualmeuayauiaya yancuipilla, xiualmeuaya.
4. Auiya xiualmeuaya, ueya, xiua, xiualmeuaya, cozcapiilla xiualmeuaya.

Gloss.

1. *Q. n.*, in oncan ichan ayopechtli oncan mixiuqui tlatatilia. in cuzcatl quetzalli.
2. Cane Cana ichan, *q. n.*, in oncan ichan ayopechcatl oncan quitlatatilia in cozcatl quetzalli oncan yoliua, tlatatua.
3. *Q. n.*, ximeua, ximeua, in tipiltzintli xiualmeua in quinotitlacat tipiltzintli.
4. *Q. n.*, xiualmeua, xiualmeua, in tipiltzintli in ti cuzcatl, in ti quetzalli.

Hymn to Ayopechcatl.

1. Truly in whatever house there is a lying-in, Ayopechcatl takes charge of the child.
2. Truly in whatever house there is a lying-in, Ayopechcatl takes charge of the child, there where it is weeping in the house.
3. Come along and cry out, cry out, cry out, you new comer, come along and cry out.

{p. 48}

4. Come along and cry out, cry out, cry out, you little jewel, cry out.

Notes.

The name of Ayopechcatl does not appear among the divinities named by Sahagun, Duran or the other authorities at my command. Her name indicates her function as the goddess of the child-bed and the neonatus, and the above hymn establishes her claim to a place in the Aztec pantheon.

[Next: XIII. Hymn to the Mother of Mortals](#)

XIII. Hymn to the Mother of Mortals

XIII. Ciuacoatl icuic.

[English](#)

1. Quauí, quauí, quilaztla, coaeztica xayauoloc uíuiya quauíuitl uitzalochpa chalima aueuetl ye colhoa.
2. Huiya tonaca, acxolma centla teumilco chicauaztica, motlaquechizca.
3. Uitztla, uitztla, nomactemi, uitztla, uitztla nomactemi, açan teumilco chicauaztica motlaquechizca.
4. Malinalla nomactemi, açan teumilco chicauaztica motlaquechizca.
5. A omei quauhtli, ye tonanaya chalmecatecutli ay tziuac y mauiztla nechyatetemilli, yeua nopiltzinaya mixcoatla.
6. Ya tonani, yauçiuatzin, aya tonan yauçiuatzi aya y maca coliuacan y yuitla y potocaya.
7. Ahuiya ye tonaquetli, yautlatocaya, ahuiya ye tonaquetli yautlatocaya moneuila no tlaca cenpoliuz aya y maca coliuaca y yuitla y potocaya.
8. Ahuia quauíuitl amo xayaualli onauíya yecoyametl amo, xayaualli.

Var. i. Cohoaeztica. 2. Acxoima. 3. Maneuila, cenpoalihuiz, inmaca.

Gloss.

i. *Q. n.*, in quauhcihuatl, ic oxauoloc in coeetzli, ioan in quauhtli yhuítli in moteneua iquauhtzon, ipan iualuicoc yn umpa colhuacan.

2. *Q. n.*, inic motocaya çentli, in mochiuaya teumilpa, ichicauaztlca inic tlatatacaya, inic tocaya.

{p. 50}

3. Uitztla, *q. n.*, nomactemi nochicauaztica inic nitocaya, inic nitlatatacaya.

4. Malinalla, uictli, *q. n.*, uictica in tlachpanaya, *id est*, iceliniquia, yn uncan teumilpan auh ychicauztica inic nitlatatacaya, inic tocaya.
5. *Q. n.*, matlactli omei quauhtli yn notonal innamona auh ynan nopilhoan in chalmeca xicuiti in tziuactli xinechtemilica.
6. *Q. n.*, in iyauciuatzin yn amona umpa nochan in coluaca auh in quaiuuitl nictemaca ynic oquauhtiuac.
7. *Q. n.*, ca otonac ca otlatuic momochiua yauyutl ma tlainalo tlalpiliuiz nic temaca in quaiuuitl.
8. *Q. n.*, aahuia yn otlamaloc in quaiuuitl yc moxaua.

Hymn to Cihuacoatl.

1. Quilaztli, plumed with eagle feathers, with the crest of eagles, painted with serpents' blood, comes with her hoe, beating her drum, from Colhuacan.
2. She alone, who is our flesh, goddess of the fields and shrubs, is strong to support us.
3. With the hoe, with the hoe, with hands full, with the hoe, with hands full, the goddess of the fields is strong to support us.
4. With a broom in her hands the goddess of the fields strongly supports us.
5. Our mother is as twelve eagles, goddess of drum-beating, filling the fields of tzioac and maguey like our lord Mixcoatl.
6. She is our mother, a goddess of war, our mother, a

{p. 51}

goddess of war, an example and a companion from the home of our ancestors (Colhuacan).

7. She comes forth, she appears when war is waged, she protects us in war that we shall not be destroyed, an example and companion from the home of our ancestors.
8. She comes adorned in the ancient manner with the eagle crest, in the ancient manner with the eagle crest.

Notes.

Cihuacoatl was the mythical mother of the human race. Her name, generally translated "serpent woman," should be rendered "woman of twins" or "bearing twins," as the myth related that such was her fertility that she always bore two children at one lying-in. (Torquemada, *Monarquia Indiana*, Lib. VI., cap. 31.) She was also known by the title *Tonan* or *Tonantzin*, "our mother," as in v. 5 and 6. Still another of her appellations was *Quilaztli*, which is given her in v. 1. (Comp. Sahagun, *Historia*, Lib. VI., cap. 27.) She was essentially a goddess of fertility and reproduction. The name cihuacoatl was also applied to one of the higher magistrates and war chiefs in the Aztec army (Sahagun). Reference is made to this in v. 6. As a goddess of venerable antiquity, she is spoken of as coming from Colhuacan, "the place of the old men," or of the ancestors of the tribe. This name is derived from *coloa*, to bend down, as an aged person, *colli*, an old man. (See my *Ancient Nahuatl Poetry*, pp. 172-3.)

[Next: XIV. Hymn at a Fast.](#)

XIV. Hymn at a Fast.

XIV. Izcatqui yn cuicatl chicuexiuhtica meuaya iniquac atamalqualoya.

[English](#)

1. Xochitl noyollo cuepontimania ye tlacoyoalle, oaya, oouayaye.
 2. Yecoc ye tonan, yecoc ye teutl tlacolteutla, oaya, ooayaya.
 3. Otlacatqui çenteutl tamiyoanichan ni xochitlicacani. Çey xochitli yantala, yantata, ayyao, ayyaue, tilili yao, ayaue, oayyaue.
 4. Otlacatqui çenteutl, atl, yayauí caní tlaca pillachiualoya chalchimichuacan, yyao, yantala, yatanta, ayyao, ayyaue tilili yao, ayyaue, oayyaue.
 5. Oya tlatonazqui tlauizcalleuaya inan tlachinaya nepapan quechol, xochitlacacan y yantala, yantata, ayyao ayyaue, tilili yao, ayyaue, oayyaue.
 6. Tlalpa timoquetzca, tianquiz nauaquia nitlacatla, ni quetzalcoatla, yyao, yantala, yantata, ayyao, ayyaue, tilili yao ayyaue, oayyaue.
 7. Ma ya auiallo xochinquauitl itlani nepapan quecholli ma ya in quecholli xicaquiya tlatoaya y toteuh, xicaquiya tlatoaya y quechol amach yeua tonicauh tlapitza amach ychan tlacaluaz, ouao.
 8. Aye oho, yyayya, çá miquiyecauiz çá noxocha tonaca xochitli ye izqui xochitla, xochitlicacan, yyaa.
 9. Ollama, ollama uiue xolutl nauallachic, ollama ya xolutl chalchiuecatl xiquitta mach, oya moteca piltzintecutli yoanchan, yoanchan.
- {p. 53}
10. Piltzintle, piltzintle toçiuhtica timopotonia tlachco, timotlalli yoanchan, yoanchan.
 11. Oztomecatla yyaue, oztomecatla xochiquetzal quimama, ontlatca cholola, ayye, ayyo, oye maui

noyol, oye maui noyol, aoya yecoc centeutl, matiuiá obispo, oztomecatl chacalhoa, xiuhnacochtla, yteamic ximaquitzla yteamico, ayye, ayye.

12. Cochina, cochina, cocochi ye nicmaololo, ni cani ye çiuatl ni cochina yyeo, ouayeo, yho, yya, yya.

Var. 3. Çenteuteutl. 4. Uillachiualoia. 5. Oya tonazqui. 6. Tlapan. 10. Timotlalia. 11. Suchiquetzal. Ontlatoa cholollan.

This is the Hymn which they sang every eight years when they fasted on bread and water.

1. The flower in my heart blossoms and spreads abroad in the middle of the night.

2. Tonan has satisfied her passion, the goddess Tlazolteotl has satisfied her passion.

3. I, Cinteotl, was born in Paradise, I come from the place of flowers. I am the only flower, the new, the glorious one.

4. Cinteotl was born from the water; he came born as a mortal, as a youth, from the cerulean home of the fishes, a new, a glorious god.

5. He shone forth as the sun; his mother dwelt in the house of the dawn, varied in hue as the quechol bird, a new, a glorious flower.

{p. 54}

6. I came forth on the earth, even to the market place like a mortal, even I, Quetzalcoatl, great and glorious.

7. Be ye happy under the flower-bush varied in hue as the quetzal bird; listen to the quechol singing to the gods; listen to the singing of the quechol along the river; hear its flute along the river in the house of the reeds.

8. Alas! would that my flowers would cease from dying; our flesh is as flowers, even as flowers in the place of flowers.

9. He plays at ball, he plays at ball, the servant of marvellous skill; he plays at ball, the precious servant; look at him; even the ruler of the nobles follows him to his house.

10. O youths! O youths! follow the example of your ancestors; make yourselves equal to them in the ball count; establish yourselves in your houses.

11. She goes to the mart, they carry Xochiquetzal to the mart; she speaks at Cholula; she startles my heart; she startles my heart; she has not finished, the priest knows her; where the merchants sell green jade earrings she is to be seen, in the place of wonders she is to be seen.

12. Sleep, sleep, sleep, I fold my hands to sleep, I, O woman, sleep.

Notes.

In default of a Gloss to this hymn, the indispensable Sahagun again comes to our aid. He informs us in the Appendix to the second book of his *Historia* that "When the Indians celebrated the festival called *atamalqualiztli*, which took place every eight years, certain natives called Mazateca swallowed living serpents and frogs, and received garments as a recompense for their daring." We are not informed as to the purpose of the festival, and its name, which signifies "eating

{p. 55}

bread made with water," is merely that of one of the regular systems of fasting in vogue in ancient Mexico. (See *Sahagun*, Lib. III., cap. 8.) The song before us appears to be a recitation calling on a number of the Nahuatl divinities.

1. "The flower in my heart" is a metaphorical expression for song.

2. *Tonan*, "Our Mother"; *Tlazolteotl*, the goddess of lascivious love, *Venus impudica*. The verb *yecoa* appears to have its early signification, expressing carnal connection.

3. *Centeotl*, god of maize and fertility.

5. The flowers referred to are the youths and maidens who die young.

9. The house of the ball player is the tomb.

11. This verse is very obscure and is obviously corrupt. It contains the only Spanish word in the text of these hymns--*obispo*--a word including two letters, b and s, not in the Nahuatl alphabet.

12. The woman referred to is Xochiquetzal. See Hymn IX.

[Next: XV. Hymn to a Night-God.](#)

XV. Hymn to a Night-God.

XV. Xippe icuic, Totec, yoallauana.

[English](#)



PRIEST OF XIPPE TOTEC, DRINKING AND PLAYING ON A DRUM

1. Yoalli tlauana, iztleican nimonenequia xiyaqui mitlatia teocuitlaquemitl, xicmoquenti quetlauia.
2. Noteua chalchimamatlaco, apana, y temoya ay quetzallaueuetl, ay quetzalxiuicoatl, nechia iqui nocauhquetl, ouiya.
3. Maniyauia, nia nia poliuz, ni yoatzin achalchihutla noyollo, ateucitlatl nocoyaitaz, noyolceuzqui tlatatl achtoquetl tlaquauaya, otlacatqui yautlatoaquetl ouiya.
4. Noteua cc in tlaco xayailiuz qonoa y yoatzin motepeyocpa mizualitta moteua, noyolceuzquin tlatatl achtoquetl tlaquauaya, otlacatqui yautlatoaquetl, ouiya.

Var. i. Quetloujia. 2. Noteuhoa chalchimmama tlacoapana itemoia. 3. Achalchiuhtla. 4. Centlaco, mitzualitla.

Gloss.

1. *Q. n.*, yn ti yoallauana, ti xipe, totec, tleica in ti monequi in timoçuma, in timotlatia, *id est*, tleica in amo quiauiteocultlaquemitl, xicmoquenti, *q. n.*, ma quiaui, ma ualauh yn ad.

2. *Q. n.*, yn ti noteuh, otemoc in mauhoualla yn mauh; ay quetzalla ueuetl, *id est*, ye tlaquetzalpatia ye tlaxoxouia, ye xopantla. Ay quetzal xiuhcoatl nechia iqui no cauhquetl, *id est*, ca ye otechcauh yn mayanaliztli.

3. *Q. n.*, ma mauh, ma nipoliui yn ni yoatzin, *id est*, in catleuatl, yuhquin chalchiuitl noyollo. A teocuitlatl nocoyaitaz, *q. n.*, in catleuatl achtomochiuaz ninoyolceuiz.

{p. 57}

4. *Q. n.*, yn oteuh cequi tlatlacotyán in mochiua initonacayouh, auh in tlein tlatlacotyán achto mochiua mochi tlatatl achto mitzualmaca, auh iniquac ye omochimochiuh occeppa nomochi tlatatl mitzualmaca yn motonacayuh.

Hymn of the High Priest of Xipe Totec.

1. The nightly drinking, why should I oppose it? Go forth and array yourselves in the golden garments, clothe yourselves in the glittering vestments.

2. My god descended upon the water, into the beautiful glistening surface; he was as a lovely water cypress, as a beauteous green serpent; now I have left behind me my suffering.

3. I go forth, I go forth about to destroy, I, Yoatzin; my soul is in the cerulean water; I am seen in the golden water; I shall appear unto mortals; I shall strengthen them for the words of war!

4. My god appears as a mortal; O Yoatzin, thou art seen upon the mountains; I shall appear unto mortals; I shall strengthen them for the words of war.

Notes.

There is slight mention of the deity Xipe Totec in the Spanish writers. He was the patron divinity of the silversmiths, and his festival, attended with peculiarly bloody rites, was celebrated in the first month of the calendar. (Duran, *Historia*, cap. 87; Sahagun, Lib. L, cap. 18, Lib. II, cap. 21, etc.) Totec is named as

one of the companions of Quetzalcoatl, and an ancient divinity whose temple stood on the

{p. 58}

Tzatzitepec (see the *Codex Vaticanus*; Tab. XII., in Kingsborough's *Mexico*). His high priest was called *Youallauan*, "the nocturnal tippler" (*youalli*, night, and *tlauana*, to drink to slight intoxication), and it was his duty to tear out the hearts of the human victims (Sahagun, *u. s.*). The epithet *Yoatzin*, "noble night-god," bears some relation to the celebration of his rites at night.

[Next: XVI. Hymn to the Goddess of Food.](#)

XVI. Hymn to the Goddess of Food.

XVI. Chicomecoatl icuic.

[English](#)



CHICOMECOATL, GODDESS OF FOOD AND DRINK

1. Chicomollotzin xayameua, ximiçotica aca tona titech icnocauazqui tiyauia mochan tlallocan nouia.
2. Xayameua ximiçotica aca tonan titech icnocauazqui tiyauian mochan tlallocan nouiya.

Var. 1. Xaia mehoa.

Gloss.

1. *Q. n.*, yn ti chicomolotl, *id est*, in ti centli ximeua, xiça, xixoa, ca otimouicaya in mochan tlallocan.

2. *Q. n.*, xayameua, *id est*, ximeua, xixua, xiça, ca otimouicaya in mochantzinco in tlallocan ca yuhquin ti tonatzon.

Hymn to Chicomecoatl.

1. O noble Chicomolotl, arise, awake, leave us not unprotected on the way, conduct us to the home of Tlaloc.
2. Arise, awake, leave us not unprotected on the way, conduct us to the home of Tlaloc.

Notes.

The goddess Chicomecoatl, "seven guests," was the deity who presided over food and drink. Hence in the first verse she is referred to as Chicomolotl, "seven ears of corn," and is spoken of as a guide to Tlalocan, or the home of abundance.

Father Duran, who gives a long chapter on this goddess (*Historia*, cap. 92), translates her name "serpent of seven heads," and adds that she was also called *Chalciucihuatl*,

{p. 60}

"Lady of the Emerald," and *Xilonen*, "goddess of the tender ears of maize." Every kind of seed and vegetable which served for food was under her guardianship, and hence her festival, held about the middle of September, was particularly solemn. Her statue represented her as a girl of. about twelve years old.

[Next: XVII. Hymn to the Gods of Wine.](#)

XVII. Hymn to the Gods of Wine.

XVII. Totochtin incuic Tezcatzoncatl.

[English](#)



TOTOCHTIN, THE RABBITS, GODS OF THE DRUNKARDS

1. Yyaha, yya yya, yya ayya, ayya ouiya, ayya yya, ayya yya, yyauiyya, ayya ayya, yya ayya, yya yya yye.
2. Coliuacan mauizpan atlacatl ichana, yya ayya, yyayyo.
3. Tezcatzonco tecpan teutl, macoc: ye chocaya, auia, macaiui, macayui teutl, macoc yye chocaya.
4. Auia axalaco, tecpanteutl, macoc yye chocaya, macayui, macayui teutl macoc yye chocaya.

Var. 3. Tezcatzoncatl tepan. 4. Axalaca.

Gloss.

1. Y tlaelcuic, tlaelcuica.

2. Coliuacan mauizpa tlatatlichana, *q. n.*, in tlatatl, *id est*, octli ompa, ichan ni colhoacan. Mauizpa, *q. n.*, temamahtican.

3. Tezcatzonco, tecpanteutl, *q. n.*, ye choca in omacoc teutl tezcatzonco tecpan, *id est*, octli. Quinionacayotia in teutl. Macaiui teutl, *q. n.*, macamo omatoni in teutl, *id est*, octli, ye choca cayamo, ynemac.

4. Aia, axalaco tecpanteutl, *q. n.*, axala, in tecpanteutl. Ye choca, yn omacoc, *id est*, octli axalatecpan, ye choca in omacoc, macamo omaco ni ye choca cayamo ynemac.

Hymn to Tezcatzoncatl Totochtin.

1. Alas! alas! alas! alas! alas! alas!

2. In the home of our ancestors this creature was a fearful thing.

{p. 62}

3. In the temple of Tezcatzoncatl he aids those who cry to him, he gives them to drink; the god gives to drink to those who cry to him.

4. In the temple by the water-reeds the god aids those who call upon him, he gives them to drink; the god aids those who cry unto him.

Notes.

Tezcatzoncatl was one of the chief gods of the native inebriating liquor, the pulque. Its effects were recognized as most disastrous, as is seen from his other names, *Tequehmecaniani*, "he who hangs people," and *Teatlahuiani*, "he who drowns people." Sahagun remarks, "They always regarded the pulque as a bad and dangerous article." The word *Totochtin*, plural of *tochtli*, rabbit, was applied to drunkards, and also to some of the deities of special forms of drunkenness.

The first verse is merely a series of lamentations. The second speaks of the sad effects of the pulque in ancient times. (On Colhuacan see Notes to Hymn XIII.)

[Next: XVIII. Hymn to the Master of Waters.](#)

XVIII. Hymn to the Master of Waters.

XVIII. Atlaua Icuic.

[English](#)



ATLAUA, SINGING AND DANCING HYMN

1. Auia nichalmecatI, nichalmecatI, neçauIcautIa, neçauIcautIa, oIya quatonalla oIya.
2. Ueya, ueya, macxoyauh quilazteutI y tIapani macxoyauh.
3. Nimitz acatecunotzaya, chimalticpac moneçoya nimitzacatecunotzaya.
4. Ayac nomiuh timalla aytolloca nacatI nomiuh aca xeliui timalla.

5. Tetoma amo yolcana tlamacazquite tometl, açan axcan ye quetzaltototl, nic ya izcaltiquetla.

6. Y yopuchi noteuh atlauaquetl, aç naxcan ye quetzaltototl, nic ya izcaltiquetla.

1. Neçaualcactla. 2. Itlamani. 4. Aitollaca acatl. Timalli. 5. Tetonac amo yolcana tlamacaz quin tetometl.

Gloss.

1. *Q. n.*, ynichalmecatl, yn ineçaualac oqixicauhteuac y nioholti, y nioya, ixquatechimal iquatunal.

2. *Q. n.*, ma xiyauh ti quilazteutl, momactemi in macxoyauh.

3. *Q. n.*, iniquac onimitznotz, mochimalticpac timiçoya.

4. *Q. n.*, atle nomiuh yc notimaloa, ca uel itoloc in acatl nomiuh, yn acatl xeliui yc ninotimaloa.

5. *Q. n.*, oncan euac in tetuman nitlacohtetumetl. Auh inaxcan ye quetzaltotol inic ni tlazcaltia.

{p. 64}

6. *Q. n.*, tiacauh in oteuh in atlaua, auh inaxcan yuhqui quetzaltotol in nitlazcaltia.

The Hymn of Atlaua.

1. I Chalmecatl, I Chalmecatl, I leave behind my sandles, I leave my sandles and my helmet.

2. Go ye forth and follow the goddess Quilaztli, follow her

3. I shall call upon thee to arise when among the shields, I shall call upon thee to arise.

4. I boast of my arrows, even my reed arrows, I boast of my arrows, not to be broken.

5. Arrayed in priestly garb, take the arrow in thy band, for even now I shall arise and come forth like the quetzal bird.

6. Mighty is my god Atlaua; truly I shall arise and come forth like the quetzal bird.

Notes.

Atlaua, mentioned by Olmos, who translates the word "Master of waters," is a divinity of whom little is

known. The derivation from *atl*, arrow, would seem more appropriate to the words of this hymn. Chalmecatli, used as a synonym in v. 1, appears to be from *chalania*, to beat, to strike, as a drum.

On *Quilaztli* see notes to Hymn XIII.

[Next: XIX. Hymn to the God of Flowers.](#)

XIX. Hymn to the God of Flowers.

XIX. Macuilxochitl Icuic.

[English](#)

1. Ayya, yao, xochitlycaca umpan iuitza tlamacazecatla tlamocoyoalca.
2. Ayya, yao, ayo intinotzicaya teumechaue oya, yao, tlauiizcalac yacallea tlamacazecatlo tlamocoyoalca.
3. Tetzauhteutla notecuyo tezcatlipuca quinanquilican çinteutla, oay.
4. Tezcatzonco moyolca ayyaquetl yya tochin quiyocuxquia noteuh, niqiyatlacaz, niqiyamamaliz, mixcoatepetl colhoacan.
5. Tozquixaya, nictzotzoniyao, yn tezcatzintli tezcatzintli tezçaxocoyeua, tzoniztapaliati tlaoc xoconoctlia ho, a.

Var. 1. Tlamocoioaleua. 5. Tozquiuaia. Tzoniztapalatiati.

Gloss.

1. *Q. n.*, ompa nochan in xochitlicacan in itlamacazqui ni macuilxochitl.
2. *Q. n.*, motilinia in tinoçi in ompa titlaecoltilozque umpa tochan ez.
3. *Q. n.*, yn tetzauitl in tezcatlipoca ca oyaque auh ynic tiui umpa titlananquilizque in centeotl.
4. Tezcatzonco moyolcan, *q. n.*, tezcatzonco oyol in tochtli ynic yaz, oquiyocux, oquipic, y noteuh oquito nittlaçaz, nicmamaliz, in mixcoatepetl colhoacan, *id est*, nictepuaz.
5. Tozquixaya nictzotzomioa, *q. n.*, nictzotzona, in tezcatzintli oncan nexa in tezcatzonco, oncan oyol tzoniztapalatiati ocxoni ni octli.

{p. 66}

Hymn to Macuilxochitl.

1. Yes, I shall go there to-night, to the house of flowers I shall exercise the priestly office to-night.
2. We labor in thy house, our mother, from dawn unto night, fulfilling the priestly office, laboring in the night.
3. A dreadful god is our god Tezcatlipoca, he is the only god, he will answer us.
4. His heart is in the Tezcatzontli; my god is not timid like a hare nor is he peaceable; I shall overturn, I shall penetrate the Mixcoatepec in Colhuacan.
5. I sing, I play on an instrument, I am the noble instrument, the mirror; I am he who lifts the mirror; I cry aloud, intoxicated with the wine of the tuna.

Notes.

As before stated (Notes to Hymn VIII), Macuilxochitl is another title of the flower-god Xochipilli.

[Next: XX. Hymn to the God of Merchants.](#)

XX. Hymn to the God of Merchants.

XX. Yacatecutli icuic.

[English](#)

1. Anomatia aytoloc, anomatia aytoloc, tzocotzontla aytoloc, tzocotzontla anomatia aytoloc.
2. Pipitla aytoloc, pipitla anomatia aytoloc, cholotla aytoloc, pipitla anomatia aytoloc.
3. Tonacayutl nicmaceuh açá naxcan noquacuillo atliyollo, nechualyaucatiaque xalli itepeuhya.
4. Chalchiuhpetlalcaco ni naxcan açá naxcan noquacuillo, atliyollo nechualyaucatiaque xalli itepeuhya.

Gloss.

1. Anomatia, *q. n.*, amo nixpan in omito yauyutl inic otepeualoc tzocotzontla, amo nomatia in omito yauyutl.
2. Pipitla aytoloc, *q. n.*, ynic tepeualoc pipitla amo nicmati inic omito yauyutl, in cholotla ic otepeualloc amo nixpan ynic oyautlatolloc.
3. Tonacayutl nicmaceuh, *q. n.*, yn tonacayutl inic onicmaçeuh ayaxcan, onechualhuicaque in oquacuiloan in xochayutl, in çoqniayutl in teuelteca, quimilhui in iquintonaz tlatuiz anoquacuiloan ayezque. Xalli tepeuhya, *id est*, tlalocan. Quilmach chalchiuhpetlacalli in quitepeuh inic tepeuh.
4. Chalchiuhpetlalcaco ninaxcan, *q. n.*, onca ninotlati in chalchiuh petlalcaco. Ayaxcan ynechualhuicatiaque yn oquacuiloan atliyoloa in umpa tlallocan.

{p. 68}

Hymn to Yacatecutli.

1. I know not what is said, I know not what is said, what is said about Tzocotzontlan, I know not what is said about Tzocotzontlan.

2. I know not what is said of Pipitlan, what is said of Pipitlan, nor what is said of Cholollan, what of Pipitlan, of Pipitlan.

3. Now I seek our food, proceeding to eat it and to drink of the water, going to where the sand begins.

4. Now I go to my beautiful house, there to eat my food, and to drink of the water, going to where the sand begins.

Notes.

The god Yacatecutli, whose name means "lord of travelers," or "the lord who guides," was the divinity of the merchants. Sahagun (*Historia*, Lib. I, cap. 19) and Duran (*Historia*, cap. 90) furnish us many particulars of his worship.

The hymn is extremely obscure, containing a number of archaic words, and my rendering is very doubtful. The writer of the Gloss is, I think, also at fault in his paraphrase. The general purpose of the hymn seems to be that of a death-song, chanted probably by the victims about to be sacrificed. They were given the sacred food to eat, as described by Duran, and then prepared themselves to undergo death, hoping to go to "the beautiful house," which the Gloss explains as Tlalocan, the Terrestrial Paradise.

[Next: Glossary](#)

Glossary

A

A, prefix, negative, or positive prefix, = *atl*, water.

Acatecunotzaya, XVIII, 3. Equivalent, according to the Gloss, to *onimitznotz*.

Acatona, XVI, 1, 2. For *ac a tonan*. See V. 2.

Acatonalaya, III, 5. From *acatl*, reed (?).

Achalchiuhtla, XV, 3, Comp. of *atl*, and *chalchiuitl*.

Achtoquetl, XV, 3, 4. In the first place, first.

Acxolma, XIII, 2. Apparently related to *acxoyatl*, wild laurel.

Açan, XIII, 3. Much, many times.

Aça naxcan, XVIII, 5, 6; XX, 3, 4. Only now, for *çan axcan*.

Ahuia, II, 1. An interjection.

Amanteca, 1, 5. Workers in mechanic arts (Molina), especially feathers (Sahagun).

Amapanitl, III, 1. *Panitl*, banner, flag, with possessive pronoun.

Amo, *adv.*, no, not, negative; *pron.*, your.

Anauhcampa, III, 1. "To all four quarters of the water," i. e., in all directions.

Anneuaya, III, 2. Poetic for *in nehuatl*, "ego ipse."

Annotata, III, 4. Poetic for *in no-tauan*, my forefathers.

Annotequina, III, 3. According to the Gloss, equivalent to *in tino teuh*, thou my god.

Annoteua, III, 2. Poetic for in *no-teuh*, my lord.

Anomatia, XX, 1. Not to know, to be ignorant of.

{p. 70}

Aoyequene, III, i. For *aoc yequene*, "and also no one."

Apana, XV, 2. Comp. of *atl*, water, and *pani*, upon, postpos.

Aquamotla, III, 5. From *quammomotla*, to play ball (?).

Aquitoloc, II, x. A negative, *itoa*, to say, to tell, in the passive preterit.

Ateucuitlatl, XV, 3. Golden water. Comp. of *atl*, and *teocuitlatl*.

Atilili, VIII, 2. *Atilia*, to become clear or light.

Atl, XIV, 4. Water. In composition, *a*.

Atliyollo, XX, 3, 4. From *atli*, to drink water.

Aua, III, 7. An interjection (?).

Auatic, IV, 6. Mistress of the waters (*atl*, water).

A-uetztini, XI, 2. From *uetzi*, to fall; "your fall," "your destruction."

Auiallo, XIV, 7. From *auia*, to be content, to rejoice.

Axalaco, XVII, 4. From *axalli*, a water plant, and loc. term. *co*.

Ayac, I, 1, *et sæpe*. Nobody, no one.

Ayauh, III, 6. Fog, mist; compound form of *ayauitl*.

Ayauhcalcatl, VI, 6. One who has charge of the mist. Compare *tepancalcatl*, a gardener.

Ayaucalo, III, 6. From *ayauh*, *calli*, the house of mist, but the Gloss renders it by *auicalo*, the fresh,

dewy house (cf. Sah., p. 150).

Aylhuiçolla, III, 2. Derived by the Gloss from *ilhuice*, more, hence, to make to grow, to increase.

Ayouica, VI, 5. For *ayaic*, never.

Aytoloc, XVIII, 4; XX, 1, 2. From *itoa*, to say, to tell, with negative prefix.

Ayya, I, 1, *et sæpe*; also in the forms *yya*, *ya*, *yyo*, *yye*, *aya*, *ayyo*, etc. An interjection, or shout.

{p. 71}

C

Ca. 1. And, also. 2. To be.

Ça, Çan, VII, i. Only, solely.

Cacauantoc, VI, 5. Reduplicated from *caua*, to cease, stop, leave off.

Cacauatla, XI, 2. "Among the cacao trees."

Calli, I, 5, 6. House; *calipan*, in the house.

Cana, XII, 1. Somewhere.

Cane, XII, 1. For *ca nel*, and truly.

Caqui, VIII, 2. To hear, to listen.

Caquia, II, 1. From *caqui*, to hear.

Catlachtoquetl, III, 3. Apparently compounded of the interrogative *catli* and *tlacatl*, man, mortal; what mortal?

Catella, III, 4. For *catel*; who indeed?

Caua, XIV, 7; XV, 2. To cease, to stop; to surpass; to lay down.

Ce, 1. 2; XV, 4. One, a, an.

Cenpoliuiz, XIII, 7. From *cempoliui*, to perish wholly.

Centeutl, VII, 6; VIII, 1, 5; XIV, 4; XIX, 3. Prop. name. The god of maize.

Centla, XIII, 2. For *centli*, ear of corn, dried corn.

Centlalia, I, 5, 6. To assemble.

Chacalhoa, XIV, 11. For *chachaloo*, to tinkle, to resound.

Chalchimamatlaco, XV, 2. Compound of *chalchiuitl*, jade, turquoise; hence of that color; *mama*, to carry; ref. to betake oneself; *atl*, water; *co*, postposition.

Chalchimichuacan, XIV, 4. "The cerulean home of the fishes."

Chalchiuhec atl, XIV, 9. From *chalchiuitl*, jade; metaphorically, anything precious.

{p. 72}

Chalmecat l, XVIII, 1. From *chalani*, to beat, to strike. Apparently a proper name.

Chalmecatecutli, XIII, 5. "Ruler of the (drum) beaters." Comp. v. 1.

Chalima, XIII, 1. Apparently for *chalani*, to strike, to beat, especially a drum.

Chan, XVI, 1, 2; XVII, 2. House, home.

Chicauaztica, III, 6; XIII, 2, 3. Strongly, boldly, energetically.

Chicomoztoc, VII, 1. "At the seven caves." See Notes to Hymn VII.

Chicomollotzin, XVI, i. See Notes, p. 59.

Chicueyocan, VI, 2. In eight folds. From *chicuei*, eight.

Chicunau i, IV, 6. Nine; but used generally in the sense of "many," "numerous."

Chimal, XI, 2. For *chimalli*, buckler, shield.

Chimalticpac, XVIII, 3. "Above the shield."

Chipuchica, V, 1. Metastasis for *ichpochtica*, from *ichpochtli*, virgin.

Chiua, III, 3. To make, to form, to do.

Chocaya, III, 1, 7. From *choca*, to weep, to cry out.

Chocayotica, XII, 2. Adverbial from *choca*: "weepingly."

Cholola, XIV, 11; XX, 2. Proper name. "Place of the fugitives."

Cipactonalla, VIII, 2. From *tonalli*, the sun, day. Perhaps a proper name.

Ciuatontla, VI, 6. For *ciualontli*, little woman.

Coatepec, V, i. At the *Coatepetl*, or Serpent Hill.

Cochina, XIV, 12. From *cochi*, to sleep.

Colhoa, XIII, i. For Colhoacan, proper name.

Coliuacan, XVII, 2; XIX, 4. Proper name, for Colhoacan.

Cotiuana, X, 1. Probably for *xo(xi-on)titaana*, tie hands, join hands.

{p. 73}

Coçauic, IV, 1, 2. Poetic for *coztic*, yellow; literally, "yellowed," from *coçauia*.

Cozacapantica, XII, i. Adverbial, from *cozcatl*, a jewel, fig., an infant.

Cozacapilla, XII, 4. From *cozcatl*, *pilli*, "jewel of a babe."

Cuecuechiuia, V, 2. From *cuccuechoa*, to shake.

Cuecuexi, XI, 3. From *cuccuechoa*, to shake.

Cueponi, IV, 1, etc. To bloom, to blossom.

Cuicatl, I, 1, *et saepe*. Hymn, song. In compos., *cuic*.

E

Eztlamiyaua, III, 2. Apparently from *eztli*, blood, race, and *tlamiauati*, to surpass, to excel.

H

Huia, II, 3. See *Ahuia*.

Y

Y, I. For *in* (*yn*), he, it, the, that, etc.

Ya. See *Ayya*.

Yancuic, IV, 7. New, fresh, green.

Yancuipilla, XII, 3. New-born babe.

Yantata, XIV, 3. An exclamation.

Yaquetlaya, I, 1. Apparently a form of *tlayacati*, or of *yaque*, both from the root *yac-*, a point, a prominence, to be prominent. But the etymology is not clear.

Yauciuatzin, XIII, 6. *Yaotl-cihitatl-tzin*, "the revered war-woman."

Yauicaya, III, 2. From *yauh*, to go. 6

{p. 74}

Yauilili, XI, 5. Causative form of *yauh*, "to cause to go," to put to flight.

Yautiua, I, 5, 6. Freq. from *yaotia*, to fight.

Yautlatoaquetl, XV, 3,4. See *yautlatoaya*.

Yautlatoaya, I, 3; V. 1. From *yaotl*, war, *tlaloo*, to speak. Yautlatoani, ruler in war, was one of the titles of Huitzilopochtli.

Yaxcana, III, 9. *Axcan*, now. *Axcatl*, goods, property. *Yaxca*, his, its, property.

Yayalezqui, III, 7, 8. Frequent. of *yaliztli*; to go and come, go back and forth.

Yca, IV, 6. With which.

Iceotl, VI, 2. A tree planted in front of temples. Its bark was used for mats (Sahagun).

Incocaua, XVI, 1, 2. To leave unprotected, as orphans.

Ye, VIII, i. Already, this, but, nevertheless.

Yecoa, XIII, 8; XIV, 2. 1. To have carnal connection. 2. To end, to finish.

Yeua, I, 4, etc. For *yehuatl*, he, it, that.

Ihuitl, I, 3; IV, 7. A feather; *met.*, a model, pattern.

Ihiya, II, 2. Apparently for *ie*, yes, affirmative particle.

Ilhuiquetl, III, 8. From *ilhuia*, to say, to call. '

Iliuiz, XV, 5. Thoughtlessly; with negative prefix *a*, not thoughtlessly.

Ymocxi, I, 2. Poetic for in *micti*, from *mictia*, to slaughter.

Yoalticatla, VIII, 1. *Yoalli-ticatla*, midnight.

Yoalli, XV, 1. Night.

Yoatzin, XV, 3, 4. Reverential of *yoalli*, night.

Yocoxquia, XIX, 4. Peaceably, quietly.

Yolcan, XVIII, 5. Place of birth.

Yolceuiz, XV, 3, 4. To appease, to please.

Yollotl, IV, 6. Heart, mind, center.

{p. 75}

Itaca, IV, 6. For *itacatl*, food, sustenance.

Iteamic, XIV, 11. From *itta*, to see.

Itlani, XIV, 7. See *Tlani*.

Itontecuitl, VI, 5. Explained by the Gloss by in *tetecuti*, which I take to be an error for in *teteuctin*.

Itopanecauiloc, III, 9. The Gloss gives *ni topan*. The verbal is a passive from *caua*, to leave, to abandon.

Itta, IV, 8. To see, to esteem.

Ytzicotla, 11, 5. For *uitzicotla*, lit., place abounding in thorns; *fig.*, the south.

Itzipana, X, 4. Apparently a compound of *ixtli*, face, and, *pan*, for the more usual *ixpan*, before, in front of; *ixtli* in comp. sometimes becomes *itz*, as in *itzoca*, "tener sucia la cara," Molina, *Vocabulario*.

Itziueponi, XI, 4. For *itztle-cueponi*, "resplendent with spears."

Itzpapalotl, IV, 5. "The obsidian butterfly," an image of gold and feathers, worn as a royal insignia. See Sahagun, Lib. VII, Cap. 12.

Yua, III, 8. To send.

Yuitla, XIII, 6. See *ihuitl*.

Yuiyoc, II, 3, 4, 5. From *yuiyotl*, a feather, *yuiyoa*, to be dressed in feathers, or feather garments.

Ixtlauatl, IV, 6. Open field, uncultivated region.

Yyaconay, I, 1. For *ayac-on-ay*, as appears by the gloss.

Yya. See *Ayya*.

Izqui, XIV, 8. As many as.

Iztac, IV, 3, 4. White.

Iz tleica, VI, 3; XV, 1. "Here is why." The interrogative changed into the predicative form. See Paredes, *Compendio*, p. 154.

{p. 76}

M

Ma, VI, 1. 1. Sign of negative, no, not. 2. Sign of imperative.

Macaiui, XVII, 3, 4. From *macoa*, and *i*, to drink.

Maceualli, VI, 4. Subjects, servants.

Maceuh, XX, 3. From *maceua*, to seek for, to obtain.

Mach, XIV, 7. Intensive particle.

Machiyotla, II, 617. For *machiotl*, sign, example.

Macoa, I, 3; XVII, 3. To aid, to assist.

Macxoyauh, XVIII, 3. By the Gloss, for *ma-xi-yauh*, imper. of *yauh*, to go.

Malinalli, XIII, 4. A broom.

Malli, II, 3, 4, 5. Captive; one taken by hand.

Mama, XIV, 11. To carry a load on the shoulders.

Mamalia, XIX, 4. To penetrate.

Mamauia, I, 4. To frighten, frequentative-causative, from *maui*, to fear.

Maololo, XIV, 12. From *ma-ololo*, to cover with the hand.

Mati, II, 1. To know.

Matiuia, XIV, 11. For *matihuia*, from *mati*.

Matlauacal, VII, 4. A net-basket.

Ma-tonicaya, X, 1. Let it shine, let it be bright; from *tona*.

Mama, II, 3, 4, 5. To give into the hands of, to deliver up.

Maui noyol, XIV, 11. To fear in my heart.

Mauiztli, VI, 5, XIII, 5. An honor (*cosa de estima*, Molina). A person of honor.

Mazatl, IV, 6. (Doubtful.) Deer; any large wild animal.

Mecatla, VI, 2. For *mecatl*, cord, rope.

Milacatzoa, I, 4. *Mo-ilacatzoa* to twine oneself, as a serpent around a tree; refers to the *xiulicoatl*, fire-serpent, of Huitzilopochtli.

{p. 77}

Mimicha, IV, 8. Fish, for *Michin*.

Mimilcatoc, VI, 2. Twisted, twined.

Miquiyecauiz, XIV, 8. Compound of *miqui*, to die, and *yecau*, to cease; "to cease dying."

Mitoaya, I, 3. For *mo-itoa-ya*, it is said, they said.

Mixcoatepetl, XIX, 4. The mountain or town of Mixcoatl.

Mixcoatl, XIII, 5. A proper name.

Mixiui, XII, 1. To accouch, to bear a child.

Mixtecatl, I, 2. A proper name. The Mixteca lived on the Pacific coast, to the southwest, and were not of Nahuatl lineage.

Mixiuiloc, V, 1. From *mixiui*, to accouch, to bear a child.

Mo-cuiltonoa, VI, 5. To rejoice or enjoy greatly.

Moneçoya, XVIII, 3. From *neçi*, to appear.

Mo-neuila, XIII, 7. From *eua*, to rise up, to come forth.

Mo-quetzquetl, III, i. For *m-oquequetz*, frequent. of *quetza*; to flow forth, to run from and out. A poetic form, not uncommon.

Moquichtiuiui, V, 2. Oquichuia, to suffer manfully.

Mo-teca, XIV, 9. They assemble; impers. from *teca*, to place oneself, to lie down.

Moteua, XV, 4. Perhaps from *itua*, to say, "it is said."

Mo-tlaquechizca, XIII, 2, 3, 4. Strengthened form of *tlaquechia*, to rest upon; to bear down upon; to press upon.

Mo-tlaqueuia, XI, 2. To seek people, or to hire them to work injury to others.

Mo-tonacayouh, III, 3. Our flesh; the usual form is to-nacayo.

Moxayaua, V, 2. From *yaua*, to wander about.

Moxocha, IV, 2, 4. Probably a compound of *moxochill-cha-yau*, to sow flowers.

Mozcaltizqui, IV, 6. From mo-izcali, to resuscitate, to animate.

{p. 78}

Nacha, III, 7. For *nachcan*, there, in that place.

Nacochtla, XIV, 11. The ears.

Nahuia, III, 6. From *nau*, four.

Nanquilia, VII, 6; XIX, 3. To answer.

Nauaco, XI, 5. "With (my) skill."

Nauapilli, III, 3. "Master magician;" said by the Gloss to be a name of Tlaloc. Sahagun gives this as one of the gods of the goldsmiths (Lib. IX, cap. 18).

Naualachic, XIV, 9. Skilfully; from *nauachiu*, to do something skilfully.

Nauaquia, XIV, 6. Perhaps for *nahuaque*, an epithet of divinity.

Nauhxiuhtica, III, 9. "After four years" (Molina).

Neçazualcactla, XVIII, 1. From the Gloss equivalent to *neçauacautla*, from *neçaualiztli*, fast, fasting,

and *caua*, to leave.

Nechyatetemilli, XIII, 5. Reverential of *temi*, to lie down, to fill.

Necuilia, X, 2. To bring someone.

Nella, III, 3. For *nelli*, truly.

Nen, adv. I, 1. In vain, of no advantage.

Nenequia, XV, 1. To oppose, to be angry with.

Nenoualico, XI, 2. See *Onoalico*. *Ne* is the impersonal, pronominal prefix.

Nepaniui, VIII, 5. To join, to unite oneself to.

Nepanauia, III, 9. *Nepan*, thither, and *yauh*, to go.

Nepapan, II, 2; XIV, 5. Diverse, varied.

Ne-qui-macui, VII, 5. "I take them by the hand." Explained by the Gloss to be an archaic (*chicimeca*) expression used in leading or guiding (in dance or song).

Niuaya, X, 2. For *ni-ihua-ya*, I sent (some one).

{p. 79}

Ni-yocoloc, III, 2. Passive preterit from *yocoya*; *yocolia*, to be made, composed, created.

No. 1. Possess. pron. my, mine. 2. Adv. also, yet.

Noca, I, 1. Of me, my, mine.

Nohuihuihua, I, 1. Poetic form for *neuiiulia*, to equal some one.

Nomactemi, XIII, 3, 4. *Xo-maitl-c-temi*, my hand it fills, with full hands.

Nomauilia, X, 4. To do a thing personally.

Nomiuh, XVIII, 4. *No-omitl*, my bone, point, arrow.

Nopeltzin, XIII, 5. *No-pilli-tzin*, "my revered lord."

No-tauane, VI, i. Our fathers.

No-tecua, VI, 2. For *nic-tecuia*, I tie it, I make it fast. The Gloss, *amo-tecuhuan*, is not intelligible.

No-teuh, I, 3; XX, 2, 4. "My god."

Noyoco, XI, 5. Apparently for *niyoco*, "with me alone."

Noyollo, XV, 3. From *yollotl*, heart, soul, courage, etc.

O

Oc, II, 2. Yet, besides this.

Ocelocoatl, III, 4. "Tiger snake."

Ocoyoalle, VIII, 2. "The night pine." Apparently a proper name.

Ocutitlana, XI, 2. "Among the pine woods."

Oholopa, II, 3. Poetic compound of *ololoa*, to cover, to dress, and *oppa*, twice.

Ollama, XIV, 9. To play at ball; from *olli*, a ball.

Olya, XVIII, 1. A form from *ololoa*, to cover or clothe oneself.

Omei, XIII, 5. For *ome*, two; the Gloss reads *matlactli ome*, twelve.

{p. 80}

On, I, 1, *et sæpe*. A particle, merely euphonic, or signifying action at a distance.

Onca, *sæpe*. There.

Onoalico, XI, i. Proper name, derived from *onoua*, the impersonal form of *onoc*, and meaning "a peopled place," a thickly inhabited spot. The terminal, *co*, is the postposition, at.

Opuchi, XVIII, 6. "Left-handed;" by the Gloss = *tiacauh*, brave, valiant.

Oquixanimanico, X, 1. A form in the second person plural, compounded of *quiça* and *mani*, "coming forth, scatter yourselves around."

Otlacatqui, XIV, 3, 4. *Ilacati*, to be born.

Otli, VIII, 5. Path, road.

Ouayyeo, I, 2. An interjection.

Oya, *sæpe*. I. An interjection. 2. Preterit of *yauh*, to go.

Oyatonac, II, 6, 7. For *otonac*, from *tona*, to shine.

Oztomecatl, XIV, ii. A merchant.

P

Petlascalco, XX, 4. From *petlatl*, mat, *calli*, house, and *co*, post-position.

Peua, VI, 3. To begin.

Picha-huazteca, I, 2. Proper name, "The frozen Huastecs," perhaps those living on the high Sierra, who were the nearest to the Nahuas.

Pillachiualoyan, XIV, 4. Locative from *pilli-chiua*, to engender offspring.

Piltzintecutli, IX, 2; XIV, 9. Lord of the youths or children, *piltzintli*.

Pipiteca, I, 6. Those having charge of the spies, from *pipia*, to spy.

Pipitla, XX, 2. Reduplicated locative from *pilli*, a child.

{p. 81}

Pinauhtia, VI, 1. To make ashamed.

Pinauia, II, 1; III, 3, 4. To affront, to put to shame; to censure, to blame.

Poliuiz, XV, 3. From *poloa*, to destroy.

Pomaya, I, 2; XI, 1. Apparently for *panauia*, to conquer.

Potocaya, XIII, 6, 7. *Potli*, companion.

Potonia, IV, 7; XIV, 10. To be liberal, to give equally or freely; to adorn with feathers.

Poyauhtla, III, 6. Among the fogs, from *poctli*, smoke, fog, mist; *atl*, water.

Pupuxotiu, I, 3. A gerundive form from *popoxoa*, to till, to work the soil; here used figuratively.

Q

Quacuillo, III, 4; XX, 3. From *qua*, to eat.

Quatonalla, XVIII; 1. "Head bright," the helmet on the head.

Quaui, XIII, 1. A shortented form of quauiuil, in the same verse; compound of quauhtli, eagle, iuitl, feather; a decoration explained in the Gloss, usually called the *quauhtzontli*, eagle crest.

Quauinochitla, XI, 2. "Among the tuna trees."

Quauiquemiltl, II, 2. From *quauhtli*, eagle, *quemiltl*, clothing, garb.

Quechol, XIV, 5, 7. A bird.

Quentia, XV, 1. To dress oneself.

Quetl, II, 2. Poetic for *quetza*, to rise, to come out of or from. See Gloss to III, 7.

Quetza, XIV, 6. To arise from.

Quetzalaueuetl, XV, 2. Of *quetzal*, beautiful, and *auueetl*, the water cypress, fig. chief, lord.

{p. 82}

Quetzalcalla, III, 9. "The house of the quetzal," beautiful as the quetzal bird. Explained in the Gloss to be the Place of joy.

Quetzalcoatli, XI, 3; XIV, 6. Proper name.

Quetzalcocox, VII, 6; VIII, 7. The pheasant.

Queyamica, III, 8. For *quenamican*, how there?

Queyanoca, I, i. According to the Gloss, equivalent to *onoca*, from *onoc*.

Quiauiteteu, VIII, 6. Rain gods; *quiauitl*, rain; *teteu*, plural of *teotl*, god.

Quilaztla, XIII, i. For Quilaztli, another name of Cihuacoatl.

Quilazteutl, XVIII, 2. *See Quilaztla*.

Quinexaqui, VII, 1. Explained by the Gloss by *oniualleuac*, I came quickly (*eua*, in composition, signifies precipitation). Hence it is a form from *yauh*, *yaqui*.

Quiyauatla, VI, 6. Poetic for *quiauitl*, rain.

T

Tamoanchan, IV, 1, etc. "We seek our home," a name applied to the Earthly Paradise. See p. 29.

Teacuitlaquemitl, XV, i. Golden garb.

Teca, III, 6. To spread out, especially of liquids.

Tecpanteutl, XVII, 3,4. "Palace god."

Teicnellili, VI, 5. A benefit, an advantage.

Teizcaltequetl, III, 9. That which gives wisdom and life. "Teizcali, cosa que da doctrina, y aviva, y da entendimiento" (Molina).

Telipuchtla, II, 3, 4, 5. For *telpochtli*, a youth.

Temacouia, VI, 4. From *temaca*, to give, to deliver into the hands of.

{p. 83}

Temoquetl, III, 8. From *temoa*, to seek, *quiza*, to go forth.

Tenamitl, I, 3. The wall of a city; hence, a town or city.

TepanecatI, XI, 3. "Dweller in the palace." A proper name. Tepanquizqui, I, 3. A substitute, one who represents another.

Tepetitlan, V, 2. "Among the mountains."

Tepeuh, XX, 3, 4. From *peua*, to begin.

Tepeyocpa, XV, 4. From *tepetl*, *pan*.

Tequiua, II, 1; V, 2. From *tequiutl*, task, labor, but explained by the Gloss as equivalent to *tepeua*, to overthrow, to conquer.

Tetemoya, II, 6, 7. Frequentative from *temo*, to descend, to come down, *tetemo*.

Tetoma, XVIII, 5. From *toma*, to open, to send forth, to let loose.

TezauhpiIIa, III, 8. "Master of fear."

Tetzauiztli, I, 2. An object which causes fear. A name of Huitzilopochtli. See Tezozomoc, *Cronica Mexicana*, cap. VI.

Teuaqui, II ,6 ,7. From *teotl*, god, *aqui*, to enter, to penetrate.

Teucontlipaca, IV, 5. Explained by the Gloss as *teucumitl icpac*, upon the thorn bush (*teocumitl*, espina grande, Molina). But I should think it to be a compound of *teotl*, *conetl*, *icpac*, "upon the son of the goddess." The son of Teteunan was especially Centeotl, god of maize.

Teueuel, V, 2. Poetic from *ueue*, the ancients, the elders.

Teumechaue, IV, 1, 2, 3, 4; VIII, 2; XIX, 2. Perhaps from *teo-ome-chayaue*, "the twice divine seed-thrower," or *teometl-chayaue*, the planter of the divine maguey.

Teumilco, XIII, 2. From *teotl*, *milli*, *co*, "in the divine cornfield," fig. reference to the battlefield.

Teutualcoya, III, 2. The Gloss reads *teutualcoya*, from *teotl*, god, *ittualo*, passive of *itta*, to see.

{p. 84}

Teu-tlaneuiloc, III, I. Explained by the Gloss as equivalent to *onetlanauiloc*, an impersonal, passive, preterit, from *naua*, "it was danced." The peculiar sacred dance called *tlanaua*, performed by young girls, is described by Sahagun, Lib. II, cap. 24.

Teutlalipan, IV, 8. In the divine earth.

Teyomi, VII, 1. From *teyo*, esteemed, honored.

Tezcatlipuca, XIX, 2. Proper name of a divinity.

Tematzintli, XIX, 5. Proper name from *tezcatl*, mirror.

Tezcatzonco, XVII, 3; XIX, 4. Apparently the name of a part of the temple.

Tianquiz, XIV, 6. The market place.

Tiçatl, IV, 7. Chalk; fig., model, pattern.

Timalla, XVIII, 4. Form of *timalloa*, to swell, to increase; fig., to rejoice, to glorify oneself.

Tlacaluaz, XIV, 7. For *tlacaluaztli*, a blow-pipe.

Tlacati, XV, 3, 4. For *tlacatl*.

Tlacatl, II, 1; XIII, 7. Mortal, creature, person.

Tlaçaz, XIX, 4. From *tlaça*, to overturn.

Tlachco, XIV, 10. The place of the ball play.

Tlachinaya, XIV, 5. From *tlachia*, to see.

Tlachtli, VII, 6. The ball.

Tlacochealco, II, 1; X, 1. From *tlacochtli*, arrow, or generally, weapon, *calli*, house, *co*, post-position, in "the hall of weapons," or arsenal. It was a room in that part of the temple dedicated to Huitzilopochtli, and was filled with arrows, spears, etc. Sahagun, Lib. VIII, cap. 32.

Tlaçolteutla, XIV, 2. Name of a Mexican goddess.

Tlacoyoalle, XIV, 1. At midnight.

Tlacyaniuitza, IX, i. Probably for *tlayauani ni-huitz*, I come dancing, as a dancer.

{p. 85}

Tlaixtotoca, X, 3. *Ixtotoca*, to search for.

Talli, XIV, 10. To place oneself; earth, ground.

Tlalocan, III, 5; XVI, 1. The home of Tlaloc. See p. 25.

Tlaloc tlamacazque, VIII, 3, 4, 6. "Dispensers of the benefits of Tlaloc"; the name applied to the priests of this divinity.

Tlalpa, XIV, 6. From *tlalli*, earth, and *pan*.

Tlaltecutli, IV, 6. *Tlalli*, *tecutli*; lord of the earth or land.

Tlamacazecatlo, XIX, 2. For *tlamacaztecatl*, one concerned with the priestly office.

Tlamocoyoualca, XIX, 1, 2. Apparently from *tlamaca*, to serve.

Tlani, XIV, 7. Below; *i-tlani*, below it.

Tlanuati, VIII, 3, 4. To send.

Tlapani, XVIII, 2. To break.

Tlapitza, XIV, 7. A flute.

Tapoalli, III, 9. To number, to reckon.

Tlapomaya, *see Pomaya*.

Tlaquaua, XV, 3, 4. To make strong, or hard.

Tatia, XV, 1. 1. To hide oneself. 2. To burn oneself.

Tlatoa, XIV, 7, 11. To sing, to chant, to speak.

Tatol, III, 8. For *tlatolli*, speech, discourses, prayers.

Tlatonazqui, XIV, 5. From *tona*, to shine.

Tlauana, XV, i. To drink wine (*octli*).

Tlauia, XV, i. To appear red or shining.

Tlauizcalle, XIV, 5; XIX, 2. Master of the house of the dawn. The terminal *ê* signifies an active possessive.

Tlayauican, IX, i. The dancing-place; from *tlayaua*, to dance in a certain manner.

Tlaxotecatl *teuhtla*, I, 4. *See* Tlaxotla.

{p. 86}

Tlaxotla, 1, 3. Passive form from *tlaça*, to hurl, to throw. Huitzilopochtli was specifically "the hurler." *See* Notes to Hymn I.

Toçiquemítl, I, 1. From *to-citli-quemítl*, vestment of our ancestress.

Tocniuaya, VIII, i. *To-icniuh*, our friend.

Tocuilítla, II, 7. *See* Tocuilechcatl.

Toçiuítica, XIV, 10. From *to-citli-yuítl*, with adverbial ending "in the feather garb of our ancestors."

Tocuilechcatl, II, 2. To, our, *cuilia*, to paint, adorn; "our adornment."

To-naca, XIII, 2. "Our flesh."

Tonanaya, XIII, 5. Reduplicated for *tonaya*, to shine forth.

Tonaqui, I, 1. A form from *tona*, to shine.

Tonana, IV, 1. "Our mother;" *nantli*.

Topaniaz, IX, 2. The Gloss reads more correctly, *no umpa niaz*, "also there I shall go."

Totoch, X, 1; XVII, title. *Tochtli*, a rabbit; the name of a god of wine; also, of a day of the week.

Toyauan, I, 5, 6. *To-yauan*, our enemies. (*See* Olmos. *Gram.*, p. 25.)

Tozquiuaua, XIX, 5. From *tozquitl*, voice.

Tzioac, XIII, 5. For *tzioactli*, a sacred tree; here apparently fig. for a sacred person.

Tzioactitlan, VII, 2. "In the tzihuac bushes;" the tzihuac was a kind of maguey of a sacred character. See my *Ancient Nahuatl Poetry*, p. 140.

Tziuaquimiuh, VII, 3. "My havresac made of tzihuac fibres."

Tzocotzontla, XX, i. From *tzocoton*, little, *tzontli*, hair.

Tzonimolco, VI, i. "Where the hair spreads abroad." The name of the hall sacred to the god of fire in the temple. The expression refers figuratively to the flames blazing upwards like hair from a head.

Tzotzonia, XIX, 5. To play on an instrument.

{p. 87}

U

Ualitla, XV, 4. Comp. of *uallauh* and *illa*.

Uallaçic, VIII, 5. From *uallauh*, to come, and *acic*, which adds the sense of approaching near.

Ualmeua, XII, 3. To cry lustily.

Ueca, X, 1. Far.

Uel, or Huel, adv., I, 4. Well.

Uelmatia, III, 4. To appear well, to be well.

Ueponi, VII, i. *Uepollotl*, kin, relations.

Uexcaitoa, II, i. To offer harm, to curse.

Uicacapa, IV, 7. Towards, to.

Uitzalochpan, XIII, i. Compound of *huitz*, to come, and *tlalooa*, to run.

Uitzetla, II, 2. For *uitzlan*, in at the south, or the place of thorns.

Uitznauac, II, 4. For Huitznauac. See Notes to Hymn II.

Uitztla, XIII, 3. According to the Gloss to v. 4, this is a poetic form for *uictli*, a hoe, the native agricultural implement.

X

Xamontoca, IV, 7. *Xi-am-on-itta*, from *itta*, to look, to see. Compare the Gloss.

Xatenonotza, VI, 6. For *xi-tenonotza*, call ye upon, pray ye to.

Xayaualli, XIII, 8. From *xayaua*, to adorn oneself in the ancient manner.

Xeliui, XVIII, 4. To split, to divide.

Ximocaya, III, 9. Rendered by the Gloss as equivalent to *ximoayan*, the Paradise of Souls; see my *Ancient Nahuatl Poetry*, p. 132.

Ximiçotica, XVI, 1, 2. From *iça*, to wake up, awake.

{p. 88}

Xiuh, IV, 8. Green; grass.

Xiuacalco, III, 5. From *xiuh*, *calli*, *co*, in the green house; the Gloss explains it by *acxoyacalco*, "in the house of the wild laurel," or decorated with wild laurel, a plant probably sacred to Tlaloc.

Xiuiçotl, XV, 2. Grass snake, or green snake. From *xiuitl*, *çotl*.

Xiyanouia, III, 6. Imperative from *yauh*, to go.

Xochinquauitl, XIV, 7. The flower-tree.

Xochiquetzal, XIV, 11. Proper name of a deity.

Xochitla, IV, 1, etc. Flowers, place of, or abundance of. From *xochitl*.

Xochitlicacan, XIV, 3, 5. The place of flowers.

Xoconoctli, XIX, 5. From *xocotl*, fruit, apple.

Xocoyeua, XIX, 5. From *xococtl*, fruit.

Xolotl, XIV, 9. A servant, a page.

Xoyauia, IX, 2. From *xoyauí*, to begrime, to spoil; *xoyauian*, the place of blackness, or of decay.

Xoxolcuicatl, VI, 5. From *xolotl*, servant, page, and *cuicatl*, song.

[Next: Index](#)

Index

- Abundance, the fabled house of, 59.
- Amanteca, 17.
- Amantlan; a quarter of the city of Tenochtitlan, 17.
- Amimitl, the god,, hymn to, 43; his functions, 44.
- Ancient god, the, a name of the god of fire, 34.
- "Ancient Nahuatl Poetry," quoted, 37, 51.
- Arrows, the house of, 21; god of, 64.
- Artists, the goddess of, 41.
- Atlaua, the god, hymn to, 63; signification of, 64.
- Auroras, the four, 44.
- Ayopechtli or Ayopechcatl, a goddess, hymn to, 47; functions of, 48.
- Aztec Mythology, Paradise of, 26, 29; nation, wars of, 46.
- Ball, the game of, 54, 55.
- Bibliotheca Laurentio-Mediceana, ix.
- Bread and water, fasting on, 55.
- Bustamente, his edition of Sahagun's Historia, ix.

- Cardinal points as symbols, 25.
- Chalchiucihuatl, a name of the goddess Chicomecoatl, 59.
- Chalmecatl, name of a deity, 64.
- Chichimecs, an ancient tribe, 37, 44.
- Chicomecoatl, the goddess, hymn to, 59; functions Of, 59, 60; her names, 60.
- Chicomolotl, a name of the goddess Chicomecoatl, 59
- {p. 90}
- Chicomoztoc, the "seven caves," 37.
- Childbirth, goddess of, 29, 47, 48.
- Chimalman, the goddess of, 31.
- Chimalipan, the virgin-mother, 31.
- Cholula or Chollolan, a place name, 54, 68.
- Cihuacoatl, the goddess, hymn to, 49; functions of, 51.
- Cinteotl or Centeotl, the god, 40; his birthplace, 53; his functions, 55.
- Cipactonalli, a fabled personage, 40.
- Clavigero, quoted, 44.
- Coatepec, the sacred serpent mountain, 31.
- Codex Ramirèz, the, 29.
- Codex Telleriano-Remensis, the, 29, 41.
- Codex Vaticanus, the, 58.

Colhuacan, first King of, 29; derivation of, 51 reference to, 61, 62, 66.

Colors, symbolism of, 34, 44.

Cuauhtitlan, the Annals of, 37, 38.

Cuezaltzin, a name of the god of fire, 34.

Dance, the jar, 42; of the "four auroras," 44.

Death-song a, 68.

Drum, use of the, 64.

Drum-beating, goddess of, 50.

Drunkenness, deities of, 61, 62.

Duran, Diego, quoted, 25, 29, 41, 42, 57, 59, 68.

Eagle's crest, as ornament, 51.

Earth, goddess of the, 28; heart of the, 29.

Eight, as a sacred number, 54.

Emerald, the Lady of the, 60.

Feathers, as ornaments, 20; symbol of the spirit, 32.

Fertility, genius of, 29, 51.

{p. 91}

Fire, the Mexican god of, 34.

Fire-stick, the, 18.

Fish-spear, god of the, 44.

"Five flowers," the, a plant, 40, 66.

Flames, the Hall of, 35

Flowers, the god of, 40, 66; plumage of, 41; as symbols, 54, 55.

Food, the goddess of, 59.

Four, as sacred number, 25, 26, 43, 44.

Gods, mother of the, 28; home of the, 29, 40.

Green corn, goddess of, 60.

Guadalupe, Our Lady Of, 29.

Hair, as a symbol of flames, 35.

Heads, serpent of seven, 59.

Hearts of victims torn out, 58.

Hieroglyphic books, native, xi.

Huasteca, a tribe, 17.

Huehuetotl, a name of the god of fire, 34.

Huitzilopochtli, hymn to, 15; his functions, 17 description of his idol, 18; festival of, 20; temple of, 21; mother of, 32.

Huitznahuac, war song of, 19; brother of Huitzilopochtli, 32.

Hurler, the; epithet applied to Huitzilopochtli, 17.

Ichpochtli, the virgin goddess, 41.

Illustrations, colored, xi.

Inquisition, action on Sahagun's *Historia*, xi.

Intoxicating drink, the gods of, 61, 62.

Itzpapalotl, a goddess, 41.

Ixcoçauhqui, the god of fire, hymn to, 33.

Jade, ornaments of, mentioned, 54.

Jourdanet, Dr., his translation of Sahagun's *Historia*, ix.

{p. 92}

Kingsborough, Lord, his edition of Sahagun's *Historia*, ix, xi; his *Mexican Antiquities*, 58.

Lightning, as a serpent, 17, 18.

Lying-in, goddesses of. See Childbirth.

Macuilxochitl, name of a deity, 40; hymn to, 65.

Maguey, brought from Paradise, 28.

Maize, the god of, 40; goddess of, 60.

- Maya tribes in Mexico, 17.
- Mazateca, a certain tribe or caste, 54
- Merchants, the god of, 68.
- Mexicans, the, 45.
- Mexicans, poetry of, ix, 37.
- Mexico, ancient, 24.
- Mimixcoa. See Mixcoatl.
- Mirror, the use of, 66.
- Mist, the house of, 25.
- Mixcoatl, the god, hymn of, 36; his functions, 37, 50; hill of, 66.
- Mixcoatepec, mountain so called, 66.
- Mixteca, Mixtecatl a nation, 16, 17.
- Mixtecapan, a locality, 16, 17.
- Mother of the gods, 28, 29; "our mother," 51; the virgin, 31.
- Nahua, the, as tribal name, 38.
- Nahuatl language, the, ix; MSS., x.
- Naualpilli, "noble magician," a name of Tlaloc, 23.
- Night, the god of, 57, 58.
- Nonoalco, a place name, 44.

Obsidian butterfly, "a kind of ornament, 41.

Olmos, quoted, 64.

{p. 93}

Opochtli, the god of netmakers, 44.

Otomis, the tribe so-called, 37; war song of, 46.

Otontecutli, the god, hymn to, 43; his functions, 46.

Paradise, the terrestrial, 26, 28, 29, 53, 68.

Paynal, the god, 20.

Parturition, goddess of *See* Childbirth.

Picha-Huasteca, a tribe, 16, 17.

Pipitlan, a place name, 68.

Pipiteca, a nomen gentile, 17.

Poetry, ancient Mexican, ix, 37, 51.

Pulque, the god of, 62.

Quechol bird, the, 54.

Quetzal bird, the, 40, 64.

Quetzalcoatl, priests adopt his garb, 17 as speaker, 45, 54 his companion, 57.

Quilaztli, name of a goddess, 50, 51 related to Atlaua, 64.

Rain, the god Of, 40.

Rain gods, the, the house of, 40.

Reproduction, the goddess of, 51.

Sacrifices, human, 18, 20, 21, 24, 35.

Sahagun, Bernardino de, MS. of his *Historia*, ix; his remarks on the chants, x; action of Inquisition on, xi; quoted, 17, 18, 21, 25, 29, 301 34, 56, 57 *et saepe*.

Serpent, the lightning, 17, 18; mountain, 32; the serpent woman, 51; serpent's blood, 50; swallowing of, 54; of seven heads, 59.

Seven, as a sacred number, 59.

Simeon, Remi, his notes to Sahagun's *Historia*, ix.

Slaves, sacrifice of, 18, 20, 21.

Soul, place in Aztec mythology, 26.

{p. 94}

South, the, as origin of deities, 19, 20.

Sun-god, the, 34.

Tamoanchan, its signification, 29; the houses of, 41.

Teatlahuiani, a name of the god of the pulque, 62.

Temple of Tenochtitlan, 20, 34.

Tenochtitlan, ancient name of the city of Mexico, temple of, 20, 34.

Tepeyacac, temple at, 29.

- Tequechmecaniani, a name of the god of drunkenness, 62.
- Teteuinan, hymn of, 27.
- Tezcatlipoca, the god, 66.
- Tezcatzoncatl, god of the pulque, 61; hymn to, 61, 62.
- Tezcatzontli, 66.
- Thorns, diviners with, 20.
- Tlaloc, the god, song of, 22, 24; house of, 24, 40, 59; functions of, 25; figure of, 26.
- Tlalocan, the terrestrial Paradise, 24, 25, 26; guide to, 59; explained, 68.
- Tlazolteotl, the love goddess, 53.
- Toçi, our mother, a goddess, 29.
- Toltecs, the fabulous nation of, 31.
- Torquemada, quoted, 34, 44, 51.
- Totec, the god, hymn to, 56; a companion of Quetzalcoatl, 57.
- Totochtin, gods of intoxication, 61.
- Tochtli, the rabbit, as a god of drunkards, 62.
- Tonan or Tonantzin, the goddess, 51, 53.
- Travelers, the deity of, 68.
- Tulan, the site of, 31.
- Turquoises as ornaments, 18.
- Twins, the goddess of, 51.
- Tzatzitepec, the hill of proclamation, 58.

Tziuactitlan, a place name, 37.

Tzocatzontlan, a place name, 61

{p. 95}

Uitznahuac. See Huitznahuac.

Venus impudica, the Mexican, 55.

Vitzilopochtli. See Huitzilopochtli.

War, the god of, 17; goddess of, 50.

Water cypress, the, 57.

Waters, master of the, 64.

Woman, sacrifice of, 35.

Xilonen, goddess of green corn, 60.

Xippe Totec, the god, hymn to, 56.

Xiuhtecutli, a name of the god of fire, 34.

Xochipilli, the god of flowers, hymn to, 39; functions of, 40; synonym, 66.

Xochitlycacan, name of the earthly Paradise, its meaning, 29.

Xochiquetzal, the goddess, hymn to, 41; functions of, 41; reference to 54, 55.

Yacatecutli, god of travelers, hymn to, 67.

Yoatzin, the god of night, 57, 58.

Youallauan, the nocturnal tippler, high priest of Totec, 53.

The Myths of Mexico and Peru By Lewis Spence (1913)

[Preface](#)

[CHAPTER I: The Civilisation of Mexico](#)

[CHAPTER II: Mexican Mythology](#)

[CHAPTER III: Myths and Legends of the Ancient Mexicans](#)

[CHAPTER IV: The Maya Race and Mythology](#)

[CHAPTER V: Myths of the Maya](#)

[CHAPTER VI: The Civilisation of Old Peru](#)

[CHAPTER VII; The Mythology of Peru](#)

THE MYTHS OF MEXICO AND PERU

by Lewis Spence

PREFACE

IN recent years a reawakening has taken place in the study of American archæology and antiquities, owing chiefly to the labours of a band of scholars in the United States and a few enthusiasts in the continent of Europe. For the greater part of the nineteenth century it appeared as if the last word had been written upon Mexican archæology. The lack of excavations and exploration had cramped the outlook of scholars, and there was nothing for them to work upon save what had been done in this respect before their own time. The writers on Central America who lived in the third quarter of the last century relied on the travels of Stephens and Norman, and never appeared to consider it essential that the country or the antiquities in which they specialised should be examined anew, or that fresh expeditions should be equipped to discover whether still further monuments existed relating to the ancient peoples who raised the teocallis of Mexico and the huacas of Peru. True, the middle of the century was not altogether without its Americanist explorers, but the researches of these were performed in a manner so perfunctory that but few additions to the science resulted from their labours.

Modern Americanist archaeology may be said to have been the creation of a brilliant band of scholars who, working far apart and without any attempt at co-operation, yet succeeded in accomplishing much. Among these may be mentioned the Frenchmen Charnay and de Rosny, and the Americans Brinton, H. H. Bancroft, and Squier. To these succeeded the German scholars Seler, Schellhas, and Förstemann, the Americans Winsor, Starr, Savile, and Cyrus Thomas, and the Englishmen Payne and Sir Clements Markham. These men, splendidly equipped for the work they had taken in hand, were yet hampered by the lack of reliable data - a want later supplied partly by their own excavations and partly by the painstaking labours of Professor Maudslay, principal of the International College of Antiquities at Mexico, who, with his wife, is responsible for the exact pictorial reproductions of many of the ancient edifices in Central America and Mexico.

Writers in the sphere of Mexican and Peruvian myth have been few. The first to attack the subject in the light of the modern science of comparative religion was Daniel Garrison Brinton, professor of American languages and archaeology in the University of Philadelphia. He has been followed by Payne, Schellhas, Seler, and Förstemann, all of whom, however, have confined the publication of their researches to isolated articles in various geographical and scientific journals. The remarks of mythologists who are not also Americanists upon the subject of American myth must be accepted with caution.

The question of the alphabets of ancient America is perhaps the most acute in present-day pre-Columbian archaeology. But progress is being made in this branch of the subject, and several scholars are working in whole-hearted co-operation to secure final results.

What has Great Britain accomplished in this new and fascinating field of science? If the lifelong and valuable labours of the late Sir Clements Markham be excepted, almost nothing. It is earnestly hoped that the publication of this volume may prove the means of leading many English students to the study and consideration of American archaeology.

There remains the romance of old America. The real interest of American mediaeval history must ever circle around Mexico and Peru-her golden empires, her sole exemplars of civilisation; and it is to the books upon the character of these two nations that we must turn for a romantic interest as curious and as absorbing as that bound up in the history of Egypt or Assyria.

If human interest is craved for by any man, let him turn to the narratives of Garcilasso el Inca de la Vega and Ixtlilxochitl, representatives and last descendants of the Peruvian and Tezcucan monarchies, and read there the frightful story of the path to fortune of red-heeled Pizarro and cruel Cortés, of the horrible cruelties committed upon the red man, whose colour was "that of the devil," of the awful pageant of fold-sated pirates laden with the treasures of palaces, of the stripping of temples whose very bricks were of gold, whose very drain-pipes were of silver, of rapine and the sacrilege of high places, of porphyry gods dashed down the pyramidal sides of lofty teocallis, of princesses tom from the very steps of the throne-ay, read these for the most wondrous tales ever writ by the hand of man, tales by the side of which the fables of Araby seem dim -the story of a clash of worlds, the conquest of a new, of an isolated hemisphere.

It is usual to speak of America as "a continent without a history." The folly of such a statement is extreme. For centuries prior to European occupation Central America was the seat of civilisations boasting a history and a semi-historical mythology second to none in richness and interest. It is only because the sources of that history are unknown to the general reader that such assurance upon the lack of it exists.

Let us hope that this book may assist in attracting many to the head-fountain of a river whose affluents water many a plain of beauty not the less lovely because bizarre, not the less fascinating because somewhat remote from modern thought.

In conclusion I have to acknowledge the courtesy of the Bureau of American Ethnology, which placed in my hands a valuable collection of illustrations and allowed me to select from these at my discretion. The pictures chosen include the drawings used as tailpieces to chapters; others, usually half-tones, are duly acknowledged where they occur.

LEWIS SPENCE

CONTENTS

CHAPTER

I. THE CIVILISATION OF MEXICO

II. MEXICAN MYTHOLOGY

III. MYTHS AND LEGENDS OF THE ANCIENT MEXICANS

IV. THE MAYA RACE AND MYTHOLOGY

V. MYTHS OF THE MAYA

VI. THE CIVILISATION OF OLD PERU

VII. THE MYTHOLOGY OF PERU

BIBLIOGRAPHY

INDEX AND GLOSSARY

[Next: CHAPTER I: The Civilisation of Mexico](#)

CHAPTER I: The Civilisation of Mexico

The Civilisations of the New World

THERE is now no question as to the indigenous origin of the civilisations of Mexico, Central America, and Peru. Upon few subjects, however, has so much mistaken erudition been lavished. The beginnings of the races who inhabited these regions, and the cultures which they severally created, have been referred to nearly every civilised or semicivilised nation of antiquity, and wild if fascinating theories have been advanced with the intention of showing that civilisation was initiated upon American soil by Asiatic or European influence. These speculations were for the most part put forward by persons who possessed but a merely general acquaintance with the circumstances of American aboriginal civilisation, and who were struck by the superficial resemblances which undoubtedly exist between American and Asiatic peoples, customs, and art-forms, but which cease to be apparent to the Americanist, who perceives in them only such likenesses as inevitably occur in the work of men situated in similar environments and surrounded by similar social and religious conditions.

The Maya of Yucatan may be regarded as the most highly civilised of the peoples who occupied the American continent before the advent of Europeans, and it is usually their culture which we are asked to believe had its seat of origin in Asia. It is unnecessary to refute this theory in detail, as that has already been ably accomplished. [By Payne in *The New World called America*, London 1892-99] But it may be remarked that the surest proof of the purely native origin of American civilisation is to be found in the unique nature of American art, the undoubted result of countless centuries of isolation. American language, arithmetic, and methods of time-reckoning, too, bear no resemblance to other systems, European or Asiatic, and we may be certain that had a civilising race entered America from Asia it would have left its indelible impress upon things so intensely associated with the life of a people as well as upon the art and architecture of the country, for they are as much the product of culture as is the ability to raise temples.

Evidence of Animal and Plant Life

It is, impossible in this connection to ignore the evidence in favour of native advancement which can be adduced from the artificial production of food in America. Nearly all the domesticated animals and cultivated food-plants found on the continent at the period of the discovery were totally different from those known to the Old World. Maize, cocoa, tobacco, and the potato, with a host of useful plants, were new to the European conquerors, and the absence of such familiar animals as the horse, cow, and sheep, besides a score of lesser animals, is eloquent proof of the prolonged isolation which the American continent underwent subsequent to its original settlement by man.

Origin of American Man

An Asiatic origin is, of course, admitted for the aborigines of America, but it undoubtedly stretched back into that dim Tertiary Era when man was little more than beast, and language as yet was not, or at the best was only half formed. Later immigrants there certainly were, but these probably arrived by way of Behring Strait, and not by the land-bridge connecting Asia and America by which the first-comers found entrance. At a later geological period the general level of the North American continent was higher than at present., and a broad isthmus connected it with Asia. During this prolonged elevation vast littoral plains, now submerged, extended continuously from the American to the Asiatic shore, affording an easy route of migration to a type of man from whom both the Mongolian branches may have sprung. But this type, little removed from the animal as it undoubtedly was, carried with it none of the refinements of art or civilisation; and if any resemblances occur between the art-forms or polity of its equal descendants in Asia and America, they are due to the influence of a remote common ancestry, and not to any later influx of Asiatic civilisation to American shores.

Traditions of Intercourse with Asia

The few traditions of Asiatic intercourse with America are, alas! easily dissipated. It is a dismal business to be compelled to refute the dreams of others. How much more fascinating would American history have been had Asia sowed the seeds of her own peculiar civilisation in the western continent, which would then have become a newer and further East, a more glowing and golden Orient I But America possesses a fascination almost as intense when there falls to be considered the marvel of the evolution of her wondrous civilisations-the flowers of progress of a new, of an isolated world.

The idea that the "Fu-Sang" of the Chinese annals alluded to America was rendered illusory by Klaproth, who showed its identity with a Japanese island. It is not impossible that Chinese and Japanese vessels may have drifted on to the American coasts) but that they sailed thither of set purpose is highly improbable. Gomara, the Mexican historian, states that those who served with Coronado's expedition in 1542 saw off the Pacific coast certain ships having their prows decorated with gold and silver, and laden with merchandise, and these they supposed to be of Cathay or China, "because they intimated by signs that they had been thirty days on their voyage." Like most of these interesting stories, however, the tale has no foundation in fact, as the incident cannot be discovered in the original account of the expedition, published in 1838 in the travel-collection of Ternaux-Compans.

Legends of European Intercourse

We shall find the traditions, one might almost call them legends, of early European intercourse with America little more satisfactory than those which recount its ancient connection with Asia. We may dismiss the sagas of the discovery of America by the Norsemen, which are by no means mere tradition., and pass on to those in which the basis of fact is weaker and the legendary interest more strong. We are

told that when the Norsemen drove forth those Irish monks who had settled in Iceland, the fugitives voyaged to

Great Ireland, by which many antiquarians of the older school imagine the author of the myth to have meant America. The Irish *Book of Lismore* recounts the voyage of St. Brandan, Abbot of Cluainfert, in Ireland, to an island in the ocean which Providence had intended as the abode of saints. It gives a glowing account of his seven years' cruise in western waters, and tells of numerous discoveries, among them a hill of fire and an endless island, which he quitted after an unavailing journey of forty days, loading his ships with its fruits, and returning home. Many Norse legends exist regarding this "Greater Ireland," or "Huitramanna Land" (White Man's Land), among them one concerning a Norseman who was cast away on its shores, and who found there a race of white men who went to worship their gods bearing banners, and "shouting with a loud voice." There is, of course, the bare possibility that the roving Norsemen may have on occasions drifted or have been cast away as far south as Mexico, and such an occurrence becomes the more easy of belief when we remember that they certainly reached the shores of North America.

The Legend of Madoc

A much more interesting because more probable story is that which tells of the discovery of distant lands across the western ocean by Madoc, a princeling of North Wales, in the year 1170. It is recorded in Hakluyt's *English Voyages* and Powel's *History of Wales*. Madoc, the son of Owen Gwyneth, disgusted by the strife of his brothers for the principality of their dead father, resolved to quit such an uncongenial atmosphere, and, fitting out ships with men and munition, sought adventure by sea, sailing west, and leaving the coast of Ireland so far north that he came to a land unknown, where he saw many strange things. "This land," says Hakluyt, "must needs be some part of that country of which the Spaniards affirm themselves to be the first finders since Hanno's time, and through this allusion we are enabled to see how these legends relating to mythical lands came to be associated with the American continent. Concerning the land discovered by Madoc many tales were current in Wales in mediæval times. Madoc on his return declared that it was pleasant and fruitful, but uninhabited. He succeeded in persuading a large number of people to accompany him to this delectable region, and, as he never returned, Hakluyt concludes that the descendants of the folk he took with him composed the greater part of the population of the America of the seventeenth century, a conclusion in which he has been supported by more than one modern antiquarian. Indeed, the wildest fancies have been based upon this legend, and stories of Welsh-speaking Indians who were able to converse with Cymric immigrants to the American colonies have been received with complacency by the older school of American historians as the strongest confirmation of the saga. It is notable, however, that Henry VII of England, the son of a Welshman, may have been influenced in his patronage of the early American explorers by this legend of Madoc, as it is known that he employed one Guttyn Owen, a Welsh historiographer, to draw up his paternal pedigree, and that this same Guttyn included the story in his works. Such legends as those relating to Atlantis and Antilia scarcely fall within the scope of American myth, as they undoubtedly relate to early communication with the Canaries and Azores.

American Myths of the Discovery

But what were the speculations of the Red Men on the other side of the Atlantic? Were there no rumours there, no legends of an Eastern world? Immediately prior to the discovery there was in America a widely disseminated belief that at a relatively remote period strangers from the east had visited American soil, eventually returning to their own abodes in the Land of Sunrise. Such, for example, was the Mexican legend of Quetzalcoatl, to which we shall revert later in its more essentially mythical connection. He landed with several companions at Vera Cruz, and speedily brought to bear the power of a civilising agency upon native opinion. In the ancient Mexican pinturas, or paintings, he is represented as being habited in a long black gown, fringed with white crosses. After sojourning with the Mexicans for a number of years, during which time he initiated them into the arts of life and civilisation, he departed from their land on a magic raft, promising, however, to return. His second advent was anxiously looked for, and when Cortés and his companions arrived at Vera Cruz, the identical spot at which Quetzalcoatl was supposed to have set out on his homeward journey, the Mexicans fully believed him to be the returned hero. Of course Montezuma, their monarch, was not altogether taken by surprise at the coming of the white man, as he had been informed of the arrival of mysterious strangers in Yucatan and elsewhere in Central America; but in the eyes of the commonalty the Spanish leader was a "hero-god" indeed. In this interesting figure several of the monkish chroniclers of New Spain saw the Apostle St. Thomas, who had journeyed to the American continent to effect its conversion to Christianity.

A Peruvian Prophecy

The Mexicans were by no means singular in their presentiments. When Hernando de Soto, on landing in Peru, first met the Inca Huascar, the latter related an ancient prophecy which his father, Huaina Ccapac, had repeated on his death-bed, that in the reign of the thirteenth Inca white men of surpassing strength and valour would come from their father the Sun, and subject the Peruvians to their rule. "I command you," said the dying king, "to yield them homage and obedience, for they will be of a nature superior to ours." [Garcilasso el Inca de la Vega, *Hist. des Incas*, lib. ix. cap. 15.]

But the most interesting of American legends connected with the discovery is that in which the prophecy of the Maya priest Chilán Balam is described. Father Lizana, a venerable Spanish author, records the prophecy, which he states was very well known throughout Yucatan, as does Villagutierre, who quotes it.

The Prophecy of Chilán Balam

Part of this strange prophecy runs as follows: "At the end of the thirteenth age, when Itza is at the height of its power, as also the city called Tancah, the signal of God will appear on the heights, and the Cross with which the world was enlightened will be manifested. There will be variance of men's will in future times, when this signal shall be brought. . . . Receive your barbarous bearded guests from the east, who bring the signal of God, who comes to us in mercy and pity. The time of our life is coming. . . ."

It would seem from the perusal of this prophecy that a genuine substratum of native tradition has been

overlaid and coloured by the influence of the early Spanish missionaries. The terms of the announcement are much too exact, and the language employed is obviously Scriptural. But the native books of Chilán Balam, whence the prophecy is taken, are much less explicit, and the genuineness of their character is evinced by the idiomatic use of the Maya tongue, which, in the form they present it in, could have been written by none save those who had habitually employed it from infancy. As regards the prophetic nature of these deliverances it is known that the Chilán, or priest, was wont to utter publicly at the end of certain prolonged periods a prophecy forecasting the character of the similar period to come, and there is reason to believe that some distant rumours of the coming of the white man had reached the ears of several of the seers.

These vague intimations that the seas separated them from a great continent where dwelt beings like themselves seem to have been common to white and red men alike. And who shall say by what strange magic of telepathy they were inspired in the minds of the daring explorers and the ascetic priests who gave expression to them in act and utterance? The discovery of America was much more than a mere scientific process, and romance rather than the cold speculations of mediæval geography urged men to tempt the dim seas of the West in quest of golden islands seen in dreams.

The Type of Mexican Civilisation

The first civilised American people with whom the discoverers came into contact were those of the Nahua or ancient Mexican race. We use the term "civilised" advisedly, for although several authorities of standing have refused to regard the Mexicans as a people who had achieved such a state of culture as would entitle them to be classed among civilised communities, there is no doubt that they had advanced nearly as far as it was possible for them to proceed when their environment and the nature of the circumstances which handicapped them are taken into consideration. In architecture they had evolved a type of building, solid yet wonderfully graceful, which, if not so massive as the Egyptian and Assyrian, was yet more highly decorative. Their artistic outlook as expressed in their painting and pottery was more versatile and less conventional than that of the ancient people of the Orient, their social system was of a more advanced type, and a less rigorous attitude was evinced by the ruling caste toward the subject classes. Yet, on the other hand, the picture is darkened by the terrible if picturesque rites which attended their religious ceremonies, and the dread shadow of human sacrifice which eternally overhung their teeming populations. Nevertheless, the standard of morality was high, justice was even-handed, the forms of government were comparatively mild, and but for the fanaticism which demanded such troops of victims, we might justly compare the civilisation of ancient Mexico with that of the peoples of old China or India, if the literary activity of the Oriental states be discounted.

The Mexican Race

The race which was responsible for this varied and highly coloured civilisation was that known as the Nahua (Those who live by Rule), a title adopted by them to distinguish them from those tribes who still roamed in an unsettled condition over the contiguous plains of New Mexico and the more northerly tracts.

This term was employed by them to designate the race as a whole, but it was composed of many diverse elements, the characteristics of which were rendered still more various by the adoption into one or other of the tribes which composed it of surrounding aboriginal peoples. Much controversy has raged round the question regarding the original home of the Nahua, but their migration legends consistently point to a northern origin; and when the close affinity between the art-forms and mythology of the present-day natives of British Columbia and those of the Nahua comes to be considered along with the very persistent legends of a prolonged pilgrimage from the North, where they dwelt in a place "by the water," the conclusion that the Nahua emanated from the region indicated is well-nigh irresistible. [See Payne, *History of the New World called America*, vol. ii. pp 373 *et seq.*]

In Nahua tradition the name of the locality whence the race commenced its wanderings is called Aztlan (The Place of Reeds), but this place-name is of little or no value as a guide to any given region, though probably every spot betwixt Behring Strait and Mexico has been identified with it by zealous antiquarians. Other names discovered in the migration legends are Tlapallan (The Country of Bright Colours) and Chicomoztoc (The Seven Caves), and these may perhaps be identified with New Mexico or Arizona.

Legends of Mexican Migration

All early writers on the history of Mexico agree that the Toltecs were the first of the several swarms of Nahua who streamed upon the Mexican plateau in ever-widening waves. Concerning the reality of this people so little is known that many authorities of standing have regarded them as wholly mythical, while others profess to see in them a veritable race, the founders of Mexican civilisation. The author has already elaborated his theory of this difficult question elsewhere,' but will briefly refer to it when he comes to deal with the subject of the Toltec civilisation and the legends concerning it. For the present we must regard the Toltecs merely as a race alluded to in a migration myth as the first Nahua immigrants to the region of Mexico. Ixtlilxochitl, a native chronicler who flourished shortly after the Spanish conquest of Mexico, gives two separate accounts of the early Toltec migrations, the first of which goes back to the period of their arrival in the fabled land of Tlapallan, alluded to above. In this account Tlapallan is described as a region near the sea, which the Toltecs reached by voyaging southward, skirting the coasts of California.

This account must be received with the greatest caution. But we know that the natives of British Columbia have been expert in the use of the canoe from an early period, and that the Mexican god Quetzalcoatl, who is probably originally derived from a common source with their deity Yed, is represented as being skilled in the management of the craft. It is, therefore, not outside the bounds of possibility that the early swarms of Nahua immigrants made their way to Mexico by sea, but it is much more probable that their migrations took place by land, following the level country at the base of the Rocky Mountains.

The Toltec Upheaval

Like nearly all legendary immigrants, the Toltecs did not set out to colonise distant countries from any impulse of their own, but were the victims of internecine dissension in the homeland, and were expelled from the community to seek their fortunes elsewhere. Thus thrust forth, they set their faces southward, and reached Tlapallan in the year 1 Tecpatl (A.D. 387). Passing the country of Xalisco, they effected a landing at Huatulco, and journeyed down the coast until they reached Tochtepec, whence they pushed inland to Tollantzinco. To enable them to make this journey they required no less than 104 years. Ixtlilxochitl furnishes another account of the Toltec migration in his *Relaciones*, a work dealing with the early history of the Mexican races. In this he recounts how the chiefs of Tlapallan, who had revolted against the royal power, were banished from that region in A. D. 439. Lingered near their ancient territory for the space of eight years, they then journeyed to Tlapallantzinco, where they halted for three years before setting out on a prolonged pilgrimage, which occupied the tribe for over a century, and in the course of which it halted at no less than thirteen different resting-places, six of which can be traced to stations on the Pacific coast, and the remainder to localities in the north of Mexico.

Artificial Nature of the Migration Myths

It is plain from internal evidence that these two legends of the Toltec migrations present an artificial aspect. But if we cannot credit them in detail, that is not to say that they do not describe in part an actual pilgrimage. They are specimens of numerous migration myths which are related concerning the various branches of the Mexican races. Few features of interest are presented in them, and they are chiefly remarkable for wearisome repetition and divergence in essential details.

Myths of the Toltecs

But we enter a much more fascinating domain when we come to peruse the myths regarding the Toltec kingdom and civilisation, for, before entering upon the origin or veritable history of the Toltec race, it will be better to consider the native legends concerning them. These exhibit an almost Oriental exuberance of imagination and colouring, and forcibly remind the reader of the gorgeous architectural and scenic descriptions in the *Arabian Nights*. The principal sources of these legends are the histories of Zumarraga and Ixtlilxochitl. The latter is by no means a satisfactory authority, but he has succeeded in investing the traditions of his native land with no inconsiderable degree of charm. The Toltecs, he says, founded the magnificent city of Tollan in the year 566 of the Incarnation. This city, the site of which is now occupied by the modern town of Tula, was situated north-west of the mountains which bound the Mexican valley. Thither were the Toltecs guided by the powerful necromancer Hueymatzin (Great Hand), and under his direction they decided to build a city upon the site of what had been their place of bivouac. For six years they toiled at the building of Tollan, and magnificent edifices, palaces, and temples arose, the whole forming a capital of a splendour unparalleled in the New World. The valley wherein it stood was known as the "Place of Fruits," in allusion to its great fertility. The surrounding rivers teemed with fish, and the hills which encircled this delectable site sheltered large herds of game. But as yet the Toltecs were without a ruler, and in the seventh year of their occupation of the city the assembled chieftains took counsel together, and resolved to surrender their power into the hands of a monarch whom the people

might elect. The choice fell upon Chalchiuh Tlatonac (Shining Precious Stone), who reigned for fifty-two years.

Legends of Toltec Artistry

Happily settled in their new country, and ruled over by a king whom they could regard with reverence, the Toltecs made rapid progress in the various arts, and their city began to be celebrated far and wide for the excellence of its craftsmen and the beauty of its architecture and pottery. The name of "Toltec," in fact, came to be regarded by the surrounding peoples as synonymous with "artist," and as a kind of hall-mark which guaranteed the superiority of any article of Toltec workmanship. Everything in and about the city was eloquent of the taste and artistry of its founders. The very walls were encrusted with rare stones, and their masonry was so beautifully chiselled and laid as to resemble the choicest mosaic. One of the edifices of which the inhabitants of Tollan were most justly proud was the temple wherein their high-priest officiated. This building was a very gem of architectural art and mural decoration. It contained four apartments. The walls of the first were inlaid with gold, the second with precious stones of every description, the third with beautiful sea-shells of all conceivable hues and of the most brilliant and tender shades encrusted in bricks of silver, which sparkled in the sun in such a manner as to dazzle the eyes of beholders. The fourth apartment was formed of a brilliant red stone, ornamented with shells.

The House of Feathers

Still more fantastic and weirdly beautiful was another edifice, "The House of Feathers." This also possessed four apartments, one decorated with feathers of a brilliant yellow, another with the radiant and sparkling hues of the Blue Bird. These were woven into a kind of tapestry, and placed against the walls in graceful hangings and festoons. An apartment described as of entrancing beauty was that in which the decorative scheme consisted of plumage of the purest and most dazzling white. The remaining chamber was hung with feathers of a brilliant red, plucked from the most beautiful birds.

Huemac the Wicked

A succession of more or less able kings succeeded the founder of the Toltec monarchy, until in A.D. 994 Huemac II ascended the throne of Tollan. He ruled first with wisdom, and paid great attention to the duties of the state and religion. But later he fell from the high place he had made for himself in the regard of the people by his faithless deception of them and his intemperate and licentious habits. The provinces rose in revolt, and many signs and gloomy omens foretold the downfall of the city. Toveyo, a cunning sorcerer, Collected a great concourse of people near Tollan, and by dint of beating upon a magic drum until the darkest hours of the night, forced them to dance to its sound until, exhausted by their efforts, they fell headlong over a dizzy precipice into a deep ravine, where they were turned into stone. Toveyo also maliciously destroyed a stone bridge, so that thousands of people fell into the river beneath and were drowned. The neighbouring volcanoes burst into eruption, presenting a frightful aspect, and grisly

apparitions could be seen among the flames threatening the city with terrible gestures of menace.

The rulers of Tollan resolved to lose no time in placating the gods, whom they decided from the portents must have conceived the most violent wrath against their capital. They therefore ordained a great sacrifice of war-captives. But upon the first of the victims being placed upon the altar a still more terrible catastrophe occurred. In the method of sacrifice common to the Nahua race the breast of a youth was opened for the purpose of extracting the heart, but no such organ could the officiating priest perceive. Moreover the veins of the victim were bloodless. Such a deadly odour was exhaled from the corpse that a terrible pestilence arose, which caused the death of thousands of Toltecs. Huemac, the unrighteous monarch who had brought all this suffering upon his folk, was confronted in the forest by the Tlalocs, or gods of moisture, and humbly petitioned these deities to spare him, and not to take from him his wealth and rank. But the gods were disgusted at the callous selfishness displayed in his desires, and departed, threatening the Toltec race with six years of plagues.

The Plagues of the Toltecs

In the next winter such a severe frost visited the land that all crops and plants were killed. A summer of torrid heat followed, so intense in its suffocating fierceness that the streams, were dried up and the very rocks were melted. Then heavy rain-storms descended, which flooded the streets and ways, and terrible tempests swept through the land. Vast numbers of loathsome toads invaded the valley, consuming the refuse left by the destructive frost and heat, and entering the very houses of the people. In the following year a terrible drought caused the death of thousands from starvation, and the ensuing winter was again a marvel of severity. Locusts descended in cloud-like swarms, and hail- and thunder-storms completed the wreck. During these visitations nine-tenths of the people perished, and all artistic endeavour ceased because of the awful struggle for food.

King Acxiti

With the cessation of these inflictions the wicked Huemac resolved upon a more upright course of life, and became most assiduous for the welfare and proper government of his people. But he had announced that Acxiti, his illegitimate son, should succeed him, and had further resolved to abdicate at once in favour of this youth. With the Toltecs, as with most primitive peoples, the early kings were regarded as divine, and the attempt to place on the throne one who was not of the royal blood was looked upon as a serious offence against the gods. A revolt ensued, but its two principal leaders were bought over by promises of preferment. Acxiti ascended the throne, and for a time ruled wisely. But he soon, like his father, gave way to a life of dissipation, and succeeded in setting a bad example to the members of his court and to the priesthood, the vicious spirit communicating itself to all classes of his subjects and permeating every rank of society. The iniquities of the people of the capital and the enormities practised by the royal favourites caused such scandal in the outlying provinces that at length they broke into open revolt, and Huehuetzin, chief of an eastern viceroyalty, joined to himself two other malcontent lords and marched upon the city of Tollan at the head of a strong force. Acxiti could not muster an army sufficiently

powerful to repel the rebels, and was forced to resort to the expedient of buying them off with rich presents, thus patching up a truce. But the fate of Tollan was in the balance. Hordes of rude Chichimec savages, profiting by the civil broils in the Toltec state, invaded the lake region of Anahuac, or Mexico, and settled upon its fruitful soil. The end was in sight!

A Terrible Visitation

The wrath of the gods increased instead of diminishing, and in order to appease them a great convention of the wise men of the realm met at Teotihuacan, the sacred city of the Toltecs. But during their deliberations a giant of immense proportions rushed into their midst, and, seizing upon them by scores with his bony hands, hurled them to the ground, dashing their brains out. In this manner he slew great numbers, and when the panic-stricken folk imagined themselves delivered from him he returned in a different guise and slew many more. Again the grisly monster appeared, this time taking the form of a beautiful child. The people, fascinated by its loveliness, ran to observe it more closely, only to discover that its head was a mass of corruption, the stench from which was so fatal that many were killed outright. The fiend who had thus plagued the Toltecs at length deigned to inform them that the gods would listen no longer to their prayers, but had fully resolved to destroy them root and branch, and he further counselled them to seek safety in flight.

Fall of the Toltec State

By this time the principal families of Tollan had deserted the country, taking refuge in neighbouring states. Once more Huehuetzin menaced Tollan, and by dint of almost superhuman efforts old King Huemac, who had left his retirement, raised a force sufficient to face the enemy. Acxitzil's mother enlisted the services of the women of the city, and formed them into a regiment of Amazons. At the head of all was Acxitzil, who divided his forces, despatching one portion to the front under his commander-in-chief, and forming the other into a reserve under his own leadership. During three years the king defended Tollan against the combined forces of the rebels and the semi-savage Chichimecs. At length the Toltecs, almost decimated, fled after a final desperate battle into the marshes of Lake Tezcuco and the fastnesses of the mountains. Their other cities were given over to destruction, and the Toltec empire was at an end.

The Chichimec Exodus

Meanwhile the rude Chichimecs of the north, who had for many years carried on a constant warfare with the Toltecs, were surprised that their enemies sought their borders no more, a practice which they had engaged in principally for the purpose of obtaining captives for sacrifice. In order to discover the reason for this suspicious quiet they sent out spies into Toltec territory, who returned with the amazing news that the Toltec domain for a distance of six hundred miles from the Chichimec frontier was a desert, the towns ruined and empty and their inhabitants scattered. Xolotl, the Chichimec king, summoned his chieftains to his capital, and, acquainting them with what the spies had said) proposed an expedition for the purpose of

annexing the abandoned land. No less than 3,202,000 people composed this migration, and only 1,600,000 remained in the Chichimec territory.

The Chichimecs occupied most of the ruined cities, many of which they rebuilt. Those Toltecs who remained became peaceful subjects, and through their knowledge of commerce and handicrafts amassed considerable wealth. A tribute was, however, demanded from them, which was peremptorily refused by Nauhoyotl, the Toltec ruler of Colhuacan; but he was defeated and slain, and the Chichimec rule was at last supreme.

The Disappearance of the Toltecs

The transmitters of this legendary account give it as their belief which is shared by some authorities of standing, that the Toltecs, fleeing from the civil broils of their city and the inroads of the Chichimecs, passed into Central America, where they became the founders of the civilisation of that country, and the architects of the many wonderful cities the ruins of which now litter its plains and are encountered in its forests. But it is time that we examined the claims put forward on behalf of Toltec civilisation and culture by the aid of more scientific methods.

Did the Toltecs Exist?

Some authorities have questioned the existence of the Toltecs, and have professed to see in them a race which had merely a mythical significance. They base this theory upon the circumstance that the duration of the reigns of the several Toltec monarchs is very frequently stated to have lasted for exactly fifty-two years, the duration of the great Mexican cycle of years which had been adopted so that the ritual calendar might coincide with the solar year. The circumstance is certainly suspicious, as is the fact that many of the names of the Toltec monarchs are also those of the principal Nahua deities, and this renders the whole dynastic list of very doubtful value. Dr. Brinton recognised in the Toltecs those children of the sun who, like their brethren in Peruvian mythology, were sent from heaven to civilise the human race, and his theory is by no means weakened by the circumstance that Quetzalcoatl, a deity of solar significance, is alluded to in Nahua myth as King of the Toltecs. Recent considerations and discoveries, however, have virtually forced students of the subject to admit the existence of the Toltecs as a race. The author has dealt with the question at some length elsewhere, [see *Civilization of Ancient Mexico*, chap ii] and is not of those who are free to admit the definite existence of the Toltecs from a historical point of view. The late Mr. Payne of Oxford, an authority entitled to every respect, gave it as his opinion that " the accounts of Toltec history current at the conquest contain a nucleus of substantial truth, and he writes convincingly: "To doubt that there once existed in Tollan an advancement superior to that which prevailed among the Nahuatlaca generally at the conquest, and that its people spread their advancement throughout Anahuac, and into the districts eastward and southward, would be to reject a belief universally entertained, and confirmed rather than shaken by the efforts made in later times to construct for the Pueblo something in the nature of a history." [Payne, *Hist. New World*, vol ii. p. 430]

A Persistent Tradition

The theory of the present author concerning Toltec historical existence is rather more non-committal. He admits that a most persistent body of tradition as to their existence gained general credence among the Nahua, and that the date (1055) of their alleged dispersal admits of the approximate exactness and probability of this body of tradition at the time of the conquest. He also admits that the site of Tollan contains ruins which are undoubtedly of a date earlier than that of the architecture of the Nahua as known at the conquest, and that numerous evidences of an older civilisation exist. He also believes that the early Nahua having within their racial recollection existed as savages, the time which elapsed between their barbarian condition and the more advanced state which they achieved was too brief to admit of evolution from savagery to culture. Hence they must have adopted an older civilisation, especially as through the veneration of civilisation possessed by them they exhibited every sign of gross barbarism.

A Nameless People

If this be true it would go to show that a people of comparatively high culture existed at a not very remote period on the Mexican tableland. But what their name was or their racial affinity the writer does not profess to know. Many modern American scholars of note have conferred upon them the name of "Toltecs," and speak freely of the "Toltec period" and of "Toltec art." It may appear pedantic to refuse to recognise that the cultured people who dwelt in Mexico in pre-Nahua times were "the Toltecs." But in the face of the absence of genuine and authoritative native written records dealing with the question, the author finds himself compelled to remain unconvinced as to the exact designation of the mysterious older race which preceded the Nahua. There are not wanting authorities who appear to regard the pictorial chronicles of the Nahua as quite as worthy of credence as written records, but it must be clear that tradition or even history set down in pictorial form can never possess that degree of definiteness contained in a written account.

Toltec Art

As has been stated above, the Toltecs of tradition were chiefly remarkable for their intense love of art and their productions in its various branches. Ixtlilxochitl says that they worked in gold, silver, copper, tin, and lead, and as masons employed flint, porphyry, basalt, and obsidian. In the manufacture of jewellery and objets d'art they excelled, and the pottery of Cholula, of which specimens are frequently recovered, was of a high standard.

Other Aboriginal Peoples

Mexico contained other aboriginal races besides the Toltecs. Of these many and diverse peoples the most remarkable were the Otomi, who still occupy Guanajuato and Queretaro, and who, before the coming of the Nahua, probably spread over the entire valley of Mexico. In the south we find the Huasteca, a people

speaking the same language as the Maya of Central America, and on the Mexican Gulf the Totonacs and Chontals. On the Pacific side of the country the Mixteca and Zapoteca, were responsible for a flourishing civilisation which exhibited many original characteristics, and which in some degree was a link between the cultures of Mexico and Central America. Traces of a still older population than any of these are still to be found in the more remote parts of Mexico, and the Mixe, Zaque, Kuicatec, and Popolcan are probably the remnants of prehistoric races of vast antiquity.

The Cliff-dwellers

It is probable that a race known as "the Cliff. dwellers," occupying the plateau country of Arizona, New Mexico, Colorado, and Utah, and even extending in its ramifications to Mexico itself, was related ethnologically to the Nahua. The present-day Pueblo Indians dwelling to the north of Mexico most probably possess a leaven of Nahua blood. Ere the tribes who communicated this leaven to the whole had intermingled with others, of various origin, it would appear that they occupied' with others those tracts of country now inhabited by the Pueblo Indians, and in the natural recesses and shallow caverns found in the faces of the cliffs erected dwellings and fortifications, displaying an architectural ability of no mean order. These communities extended as far south as the Gila river, the most southern affluent of the Colorado, and the remains they have left there appear to be of a later date architecturally than those situated farther north. These were found in ruins by the first Spanish explorers, and it is thought that their builders were eventually driven back to rejoin their kindred in the north. Farther to the south in the cañons of the Piedras Verdes river in Chihuahua., Mexico, are cliff-dwellings corresponding in many respects with those of the Pueblo region, and Dr. Hrdlicka has examined others so far south as the State of Jalisco, in Central Mexico. These may be the ruins of dwellings erected either by the early Nahua or by some of the peoples relatively aboriginal to them, and may display the architectural features general among the Nahua prior to their adoption of other alien forms. Or else they may be the remains of dwellings similar to those of the Tarahumare, a still existing tribe of Mexico, who, according to Lumholtz, [*Unknown Mexico*, vol. i., 1902; also see Bulletin 30, Bureau of American Ethnology, p. 309] inhabit similar structures at the present day. It is clear from the architectural development of the cliff-dwellers that their civilisation developed generally from south to north, that this race was cognate to the early Nahua, and that it later withdrew to the north, or became fused with the general body of the Nahua peoples. It must not be understood, however, that the race arrived in the Mexican plateau before the Nahua, and the ruins of Jalisco and other mid-Mexican districts may merely be the remains of comparatively modern cliff-dwellings, an adaptation by mid-Mexican communities of the "Cliff-dweller" architecture, or a local development of it owing to the exigencies of early life in the district.

The Nahua Race

The Nahua peoples included all those tribes speaking the Nahuatlatoalli (Nahua tongue), and occupied a sphere extending from the southern borders of New Mexico to the Isthmus of Tehuantepec on the south, or very much within the limits of the modern Republic of Mexico. But this people must not be regarded as one race of homogeneous origin. A very brief account of their racial affinities must be sufficient here. The

Chichimecs were probably related to the Otomi, whom we have alluded to as among the first-comers to the Mexican valley. They were traditionally supposed to have entered it at a period subsequent to the Toltec occupation. Their chief towns were Tezcuco and Tena, yucan, but they later allied themselves with the Nahua in a great confederacy, and adopted the Nahua language. There are circumstances which justify the assumption that on their entrance to the Mexican valley they consisted of a number of tribes loosely united, presenting in their general organisation a close resemblance to some of the composite tribes of modern American Indians.

The Aculhuaque

Next to them in point of order of tribal arrival were the Aculhuaque, or Acolhuans. The name means "tall" or "strong" men, literally "People of the Broad Shoulder," or "Pushers," who made a way for themselves. Gomara states in his *Conquista de Mexico* that they arrived in the valley from Acolhuacan about A.D. 780, and founded the towns of Tollan, Colhuacan, and Mexico itself. The Acolhuans were pure Nahua, and may well have been the much-disputed Toltecs, for the Nahua people always insisted on the fact that the Toltecs were of the same stock as themselves, and spoke an older and purer form of the Nahua tongue. From the Acolhuans sprang the Tlascalans, the inveterate enemies of the Aztecs, who so heartily assisted Cortés in his invasion of the Aztec capital, Tenochtitlan, or Mexico.

The Tecpanecs

The Tecpanecs were a confederacy of purely Nahua tribes dwelling in towns situated upon the Lake of Tezcuco, the principal of which were Tlacopan and Azcapozalco. The name Tecpanec signifies that each settlement possessed its own chief's house, or *tecpan*. This tribe were almost certainly later Nahua immigrants who arrived in Mexico after the Acolhuans, and were great rivals to the Chichimec branch of the race.

The Aztecs

The Aztecâ or Aztecs, were a nomad tribe of doubtful origin, but probably of Nahua blood. Wandering over the Mexican plateau for generations, they at length settled in the marshlands near the Lake of Tezcuco, hard by Tlacopan. The name Aztecâ means "Crane People," and was bestowed upon the tribe by the Tecpanecs, probably because of the fact that, like cranes, they dwelt in a marshy neighbourhood. They founded the town of Tenochtitlan, or Mexico, and for a while paid tribute to the Tecpanecs. But later they became the most powerful allies of that people, whom they finally surpassed entirely in power and splendour.

The Aztec Character

The features of the Aztecs as represented in the various Mexican paintings are typically Indian, and argue

a northern origin. The race was, and is, of average height, and the skin is of a dark brown hue. The Mexican is grave, taciturn, and melancholic, with a deeply rooted love of the mysterious, slow to anger, yet almost inhuman in the violence of his passions when aroused. He is usually gifted with a logical mind, quickness of apprehension, and an ability to regard the subtle side of things with great nicety. Patient and imitative, the ancient Mexican excelled in those arts which demanded such qualities in their execution. He had a real affection for the beautiful in nature and a passion for flowers, but the Aztec music lacked gaiety, and the national amusements were too often of a gloomy and ferocious character. The women are more vivacious than the men, but were in the days before the conquest very subservient to the wills of their husbands. We have already very briefly outlined the trend of Nahua civilisation, but it will be advisable to examine it a little more closely, for if the myths of this people are to be understood some knowledge of its life -and general culture is essential.

Legends of the Foundation of Mexico

At the period of the conquest of Mexico by Cortés the city presented an imposing appearance. Led to its neighbourhood by Huitzilopochtli, a traditional chief, afterwards deified as the god of war, there are several legends which account for the choice of its site by the Mexicans. The most popular of these relates how the nomadic Nahua beheld perched upon a cactus plant an eagle of great size and majesty, grasping in its talons a huge serpent, and spreading its wings to catch the rays of the rising sun. The soothsayers or medicine-men of the tribe, reading a good omen in the spectacle, advised the leaders of the people to settle on the spot, and, hearkening to the voice of what they considered divine authority, they proceeded to drive piles into the marshy ground, and thus laid the foundation of the great city of Mexico.

An elaboration of this legend tells how the Aztecs had about the year 1325 sought refuge upon the western shore of the Lake of Tezcuco, in an island among the marshes on which they found a stone on which forty years before one of their priests had sacrificed a prince of the name of Copal, whom they had made prisoner. A nopal plant [cactus] had sprung from an earth-filled crevice in this rude altar, and upon this the royal eagle alluded to in the former account had alighted, grasping the serpent in his talons. Beholding in this a good omen, and urged by a supernatural impulse which he could not explain, a priest of high rank dived into a pool close at hand, where he found himself face to face with Tlaloc, the god of waters. After an interview with the deity the priest obtained permission from him to found a city on the site, from the humble beginnings of which arose the metropolis of Mexico-Tenochtitlan.

Mexico at the Conquest

At the period of the conquest the city of Mexico had a circumference of no less than twelve miles, or nearly that of modern Berlin without its suburbs. It contained 60,000 houses, and its inhabitants were computed to number 300,000. Many other towns, most of them nearly half as large, were grouped on the islands or on the margin of Lake Tezcuco, so that the population of what might almost be called "Greater Mexico" must have amounted to several millions. The city was intersected by four great roadways or avenues built at right angles to one another, and laid four-square with the cardinal points. Situated as it

was in the midst of a lake, it was traversed by numerous canals, which were used as thoroughfares for traffic. The four principal ways described above were extended across the lake as dykes or viaducts until they met its shores. The dwellings of the poorer classes were chiefly composed of adobes, but those of the nobility were built of a red porous stone quarried close by. They were usually of one story only, but occupied a goodly piece of ground and had flat roofs, many of which were covered with flowers. In general they were coated with a hard, white cement, which gave them an added resemblance to the Oriental type of building.

Towering high among these, and a little apart from the vast squares and market-places, were the *teocallis*, or temples. These were in reality not temples or covered-in buildings, but "high places," great pyramids of stone, built platform on platform, around which a staircase led to the summit, on which was usually erected a small shrine containing the tutelary deity to whom the *teocalli* had been raised. The great temple of Huitzilopochtli, the war-god, built by King Ahuizotl, was, besides being typical of all, by far the greatest of these votive piles. The enclosing walls of the building were 4,800 feet in circumference, and strikingly decorated by carvings representing festoons of intertwined reptiles, from which circumstance they were called *coetpantli* (walls of serpents). A kind of gate-house on each side gave access to the enclosure. The *teocalli*, or great temple, inside the court was in the shape of a parallelogram, measuring 375 feet by 300 feet, and was built in six platforms, growing smaller in area as they descended. The mass of this structure was composed of a mixture of rubble, clay, and earth, covered with carefully worked stone slabs, cemented together with infinite care, and coated with a hard gypsum. A flight of 340 steps circled round the terraces and led to the upper platform, on which were raised two three-storied towers 56 feet in height, in which stood the great statues of the tutelary deities and the jasper stones of sacrifice. These sanctuaries, say the old Conquistadores who entered them, had the appearance and odour of shambles, and human blood was bespattered every where. In this weird chapel of horrors burned a fire the extinction of which it was supposed would have brought about the end of the Nahua power. It was tended with a care as scrupulous as that with which the Roman Vestals guarded their sacred flame. No less than 600 of these sacred braziers were kept alight in the city of Mexico alone.

A Pyramid of Skulls

The principal fane of Huitzilopochtli was surrounded by upwards of forty inferior *teocallis* and shrines. In the Tzompantli (Pyramid of Skulls) were collected the grisly relics of the countless victims to the implacable war-god of the Aztecs, and in this horrid structure the Spanish conquerors counted no less than 136,000 human skulls. In the court or teopan which surrounded the temple were the dwellings of thousands of priests, whose duties included the scrupulous care of the temple precincts, and whose labours were minutely apportioned.

Nahua Architecture and Ruins

As we shall see later, Mexico is by no means so rich in architectural antiquities as Guatemala or Yucatan, the reason being that the growth of tropical forests has to a great extent protected ancient stone edifices in

the latter countries from destruction. The ruins discovered in the northern regions of the republic are of a ruder type than those which approach more nearly to the sphere of Maya influence, as, for example, those of Mitla, built by the Zapotecs, which exhibit such unmistakable signs of Maya influence that we prefer to describe them when dealing with the antiquities of that people.

Cyclopean Remains

In the mountains of Chihuahua, one of the most northerly provinces, is a celebrated group called the Casas Grandes (Large Houses), the walls of which are still about 30 feet in height. These approximate in general appearance to the buildings of more modern tribes in New Mexico and Arizona, and may be referred to such peoples rather than to the Nahua. At Quemada, in Zacatecas, massive ruins of Cyclopean appearance have been discovered. These consist of extensive terraces and broad stone causeways, teocallis which have weathered many centuries, and gigantic pillars, 18 feet in height and 17 feet in circumference. Walls 12 feet in thickness rise above the heaps of rubbish which litter the ground. These remains exhibit little connection with Nahua architecture to the north or south of them. They are more massive than either, and must have been constructed by some race which had made considerable strides in the art of building.

Teotihuacan

In the district of the Totonacs, to the north of Vera Cruz, we find many architectural remains of a highly interesting character. Here the teocalli or pyramidal type of building is occasionally crowned by a covered temple with the massive roof characteristic of Maya architecture. The most striking examples found in this region are the remains of Teotihuacan and Xochicalco. The former was the religious Mecca of the Nahua races, and in its proximity are still to be seen the teocallis of the sun and moon, surrounded by extensive burying-grounds where the devout of Anahuac were laid in the sure hope that if interred they would find entrance into the paradise of the sun. The teocalli of the moon has a base covering 426 feet and a height of 137 feet. That of the sun is of greater dimensions, with a base of 735 feet and a height of 203 feet. These pyramids were divided into four stories, three of which remain. On the summit of that of the sun stood a temple containing a great image of that luminary carved from a rough block of stone. In the breast was inlaid a star of the purest gold, seized afterwards as loot by the insatiable followers of Cortés. From the *teocalli* of the moon a path runs to where a little rivulet flanks the "Citadel." This path is known as "The Path of the Dead," from the circumstance that it is surrounded by some nine square miles of tombs and tumuli, and, indeed, forms a road through the great cemetery. The Citadel, thinks Charnay, was a vast tennis or *tlachtli* court, where thousands flocked to gaze at the national sport of the Nahua with a zest equal to that of the modern devotees of football. Teotihuacan was a flourishing centre contemporary with Tollan. It was destroyed, but was rebuilt by the Chichimec king Xolotl and preserved thenceforth its traditional sway as the focus of the Nahua national religion. Charnay identifies the architectural types discovered there with those of Tollan. The result of his labours in the vicinity included the unearthing of richly decorated pottery, vases, masks, and terra-cotta figures. He also excavated several large houses or palaces, some with chambers more than 730 feet in circumference, with walls over 7½

feet thick, into which were built rings and slabs to support torches and candles. The floors were tessellated in various rich designs, "like an Aubusson carpet." Charnay concluded that the monuments of Teotihuacan were partly standing at the time of the conquest.

The Hill of Flowers

Near Tezcuco is Xochicalco (The Hill of Flowers), a *teocalli* the sculpture of which is both beautiful and luxuriant in design. The porphyry quarries from which the great blocks, 12 feet in length, were cut lie many miles away. As late as 1755 the structure towered to a height of five stories, but the vandal has done his work only too well, and a few fragmentary carvings of exquisite design are all that to-day remain of one of Mexico's most magnificent pyramids.

Tollan

We have already indicated that on the site of the "Toltec" city of Tollan ruins have been discovered which prove that it was the centre of a civilisation of a type distinctly advanced. Charnay unearthed there gigantic fragments of caryatides, each some 7 feet high. He also found columns of two pieces, which were fitted together by means of mortise and tenon, bas-reliefs of archaic figures of undoubted Nahua type, and many fragments of great antiquity. On the hill of Palpan, above Tollan, he found the ground-plans of several houses with numerous apartments, frescoed, columned, and having benches and cisterns recalling the *impluvium* of a Roman villa. Water-pipes were also actually unearthed, and a wealth of pottery, many pieces of which were like old Japanese china. The ground-plan or foundations of the houses unearthed at Palpan showed that they had been designed by practical architects, and had not been built in any merely haphazard fashion. The cement which covered the walls and floors was of excellent quality, and recalled that discovered in ancient Italian excavations. The roofs had been of wood, supported by pillars.

Picture-Writing

The Aztecs, and indeed the entire Nahua race., employed a system of writing of the type scientifically described as "pictographic," in which events, persons, and ideas were recorded by means of drawings and coloured sketches. These were executed on paper made from the agave plant, or were painted on the skins of animals. By these means not only history and the principles of the Nahua mythology were communicated from generation to generation, but the transactions of daily life, the accountings of merchants, and the purchase and ownership of land were placed on record. That a phonetic system was rapidly being approached is manifest from the method by which the Nahua scribes depicted the names of individuals or cities. These were represented by means of several objects, the names of which resembled that of the person for which they stood. The name of King Ixcoatl, for example, is represented by the drawing of a serpent (*coatli*) pierced by flint knives (*iztli*), and that of Motequahzoma (Montezuma) by a mouse-trap (*montli*), an eagle (*quauhtli*), a lancet (*zo*), and a hand (*maitli*). The phonetic values employed by the scribes varied exceedingly, so that at times an entire syllable would be expressed by the painting of

an object the name of which commenced with it. At other times only a letter would be represented by the same drawing. But the general intention of the scribes was undoubtedly more ideographic than phonetic; that is, they desired to convey their thoughts more by sketch than by sound.

Interpretation of the Hieroglyphs

These *pinturas*, as the Spanish conquerors designated them, offer no very great difficulty in their elucidation to modern experts, at least so far as the general trend of their contents is concerned. In this they are unlike the manuscripts of the Maya of Central America with which we shall make acquaintance further on. Their interpretation was largely traditional, and was learned by rote, being passed on by one generation of amamatini (readers) to another, and was by no means capable of elucidation by all and sundry.

Native Manuscripts

The *pinturas* or native manuscripts which remain to us are but few in number. Priestly fanaticism, which ordained their wholesale destruction, and the still more potent passage of time have so reduced them that each separate example is known to bibliophiles and Americanists the world over. In such as still exist we can observe great fullness of detail, representing for the most part festivals, sacrifices, tributes, and natural phenomena, such as eclipses and floods, and the death and accession of monarchs. These events, and the supernatural beings who were supposed to control them, were depicted in brilliant colours, executed by means of a brush of feathers.

The Interpretative Codices

Luckily for future students of Mexican history, the blind zeal which destroyed the majority of the Mexican manuscripts was frustrated by the enlightenment of certain European scholars, who regarded the wholesale destruction of the native records as little short of a calamity, and who took steps to seek out the few remaining native artists, from whom they procured copies of the more important paintings, the details of which were, of course, quite familiar to them. To those were added interpretations taken down from the lips of the native scribes themselves, so that no doubt might remain regarding the contents of the manuscripts. These are known as the "Interpretative Codices," and are of considerable assistance to the student of Mexican history and customs. Three only are in existence. The Oxford Codex, treasured in the Bodleian Library, is of a historical nature, and contains a full list of the lesser cities which were subservient to Mexico in its palmy days. The Paris or Tellerio-Remensis Codex, so called from having once been the property of Le Tellier, Archbishop of Rheims, embodies many facts concerning the early settlement of the various Nahua city-states. The Vatican MSS. deal chiefly with mythology and the intricacies of the Mexican calendar system. Such Mexican paintings as were unassisted by an interpretation are naturally of less value to present-day students of the lore of the Nahua. They are principally concerned with calendric matter, ritualistic data, and astrological computations or horoscopes.

The Mexican "Book of the Dead"

Perhaps the most remarkable and interesting manuscript in the Vatican collection is one the last pages of which represent the journey of the soul after death through the gloomy dangers of the Other-world. This has been called the Mexican "Book of the Dead." The corpse is depicted dressed for burial, the soul escaping from its earthly tenement by way of the mouth. The spirit is ushered into the presence of Tezcatlipoca, the Jupiter of the Aztec pantheon, by an attendant dressed in an ocelot skin, and stands naked with a wooden yoke round the neck before the deity, to receive sentence. The dead person is given over to the tests which precede entrance to the abode of the dead, the realm of Mictlan, and so that he may not have to meet the perils of the journey in a defenceless condition a sheaf of javelins is bestowed upon him. He first passes between two lofty peaks, which may fall and crush him if he cannot skilfully escape them. A terrible serpent then intercepts his path, and, if he succeeds in defeating this monster, the fierce alligator Xochitonal awaits him. Eight deserts and a corresponding number of mountains have then to be negotiated by the hapless spirit, and a whirlwind sharp as a sword, which cuts even through solid rocks, must be withstood. Accompanied by the shade of his favourite dog, the harassed ghost at length encounters the fierce Izpuzteque, a demon with the backward-bent legs of a cock, the evil Nextepehua, the fiend who scatters clouds of ashes, and many another grisly foe, until at last he wins to the gates of the Lord of Hell, before whom he does reverence, after which he is free to greet his friends who have gone before.

The Calendar System

As has been said, the calendar system was the source of all Mexican science, and regulated the recurrence of all religious rites and festivals. In fact, the entire mechanism of Nahua life was resident in its provisions. The type of time-division and computation exemplified in the Nahua calendar was also found among the Maya peoples of Yucatan and Guatemala and the Zapotec people of the boundary between the Nahua and Maya races. By which of these races it was first employed is unknown. But the Zapotec calendar exhibits signs of both Nahua and Maya influence, and from this it has been inferred that the calendar systems of these races have been evolved from it. It might with equal probability be argued that both Nahua and Maya art were offshoots of Zapotec art, because the characteristics of both are discovered in it, whereas the circumstance merely illustrates the very natural acceptance by a border people, who settled down to civilisation at a relatively later date, of the artistic tenets of the two greater peoples who environed them. The Nahua and Maya calendars were in all likelihood evolved from the calendar system of that civilised race which undoubtedly existed on the Mexican plateau prior to the coming of the later Nahua swarms, and which in general is loosely alluded to as the "Toltec."

The Mexican Year

The Mexican year was a cycle Of 365 days, without any intercalary addition or other correction. In course of time it almost lost its seasonal significance because of the omission of the extra hours included in the

solar year, and furthermore many of its festivals and occasions were altered by high-priests and rulers to suit their convenience. The Mexican *nexiuhpilitzli* (binding of years) contained fifty-two years, and ran in two separate cycles—one of fifty-two years of 365 days each, and another of seventy-three groups of 260 days each. The first was of course the solar year, and embraced eighteen periods of twenty days each, called "months" by the old Spanish chroniclers, with five *nemontemi* (unlucky days) over and above. These days were not intercalated, but were included in the year, and merely overflowed the division of the year into periods of twenty days. The cycle of seventy-three groups of 260 days, subdivided into groups of thirteen days, was called the "birth-cycle."

Lunar Reckoning

People in a barbarous condition almost invariably reckon time by the period between the waxing and waning of the moon as distinct from the entire passage of a lunar revolution, and this period of twenty days will be found to be the basis in the time-reckoning of the Mexicans, who designated it *cempohualli*. Each day included in it was denoted by a sign, as "house", "snake", "wind", and so forth. Each *cempohualli* was subdivided into four periods of five days each, sometimes alluded to as "weeks" by the early Spanish writers, and these were known by the sign their middle or third day. These day-names ran on without reference to the length of the year. The year itself was designated by the name of the middle day of the week in which it began. Out of twenty day-names in the Mexican "month" it was inevitable that the four *calli* (house), *tochtli* (rabbit), *acatl* (reed), and *tecpati* (flint) should always recur in sequence because of the incidence of these days in the Mexican solar year. Four years made up a year of the sun. During the *nemontemi* (unlucky days) no work was done, as they were regarded as ominous and unwholesome.

We have seen that the civil year permitted the day-names to run on continuously from one year to another. The ecclesiastical authorities, however, had a reckoning of their own, and made the year begin always on the first day of their calendar, no matter what sign denominated that day in the civil system.

Groups of Years

As has been indicated, the years were formed into groups. Thirteen years constituted a *xiumalpilli* (bundle), and four of these a *nexiuhpilitzli* (complete binding of the years). Each year had thus a double aspect, first as an individual period of time, and secondly as a portion of the "year of the sun," and these were so numbered and named that each year in the series of fifty-two possessed a different description.

The Dread of the Last Day

With the conclusion of each period of fifty-two years a terrible dread came upon the Mexicans that the world would come to an end. A stated period of time had expired, a period which was regarded as fixed by divine command, and it had been ordained that on the completion of one of those series of fifty-two

years earthly time would cease and the universe be demolished. For some time before the ceremony of *toxilmolpilia* (the binding up of the years) the Mexicans abandoned themselves to the utmost prostration, and the wicked went about in terrible fear. As the first day of the fifty-third year dawned the people narrowly observed the Pleiades, for if they passed the zenith time would proceed and the world would be respited. The gods were placated or refreshed by the slaughter of the human victim, on whose still living breast a fire of wood was kindled by friction, the heart and body being consumed by the flames so lighted. As the planets of hope crossed the zenith loud acclamations resounded from the people, and the domestic hearths, which had been left cold and dead, were rekindled from the sacred fire which had consumed the sacrifice. Mankind was safe for another period.

The Birth-Cycle

The birth-cycle, as we have said, consisted of 260 days. It had originally been a lunar cycle of thirteen days, and once bore the names of thirteen moons. It formed part of the civil calendar, with which, however, it had nothing in common, as it was used for ecclesiastical purposes only. The lunar names were abandoned later, and the numbers one to thirteen adopted in their places.

Language of the Nahua

The Nahua language represented a very low state of culture. Speech is the general measure of the standard of thought of a people, and if we judged the civilisation of the Nahua by theirs, we should be justified in concluding that they had not yet emerged from barbarism. But we must recollect that the Nahua of the conquest period had speedily adopted the older civilisation which they had found awaiting them on their entrance to Mexico, and had retained their own primitive tongue. The older and more cultured people who had preceded them probably spoke a more polished dialect of the same language, but its influence had evidently but little on the rude Chichimecs and Aztecs. The Mexican tongue, like most American languages, belongs to the "incorporative" type, the genius of which is to unite all the related words in a sentence into one conglomerate term or word, merging the separate words of which it is composed one into another by altering their forms, and so welding them together as to express the whole in one word. It will be at once apparent that such a system was clumsy in the extreme, and led to the creation of words and names of the most barbarous appearance and sound. In a narrative of the Spanish discovery written by Chimalpahin, the native chronicler of Chalco, born in 1579, we have, for example, such a passage as the following: *Oc chiucnauhxiuitl inic onen quilantimanca España como niman ic yuh ca omacoc ihuelitiliztli inic niman ye chiuhcnauhxiuhtica, in oncan ohualla*. This passage is chosen quite at random, and is an average specimen of literary Mexican of the sixteenth century. Its purport is, freely translated: "For nine years he [Columbus] remained in vain in Spain. Yea, for nine years there he waited for influence." The clumsy and cumbrous nature of the language could scarcely be better illustrated than by pointing out that *chiucnauhxiuitl* signifies "nine years"; *quilantimanca*, "he below remained"; and *omacoc ihuelitiliztli*, "he has got his powerfulness." It must be recollected that this specimen of Mexican was composed by a person who had had the benefit of a Spanish education, and is cast in literary form. What the spoken Mexican of preconquest times was like can be contemplated with misgiving in the

grammars of the old Spanish missionaries, whose greatest glory is that they mastered such a language in the interests of their faith.

Aztec Science

The science of the Aztecs was, perhaps, one of the most picturesque sides of their civilisation. As with all peoples in a semi-barbarous state, it consisted chiefly in astrology and divination. Of the former the wonderful calendar system was the basis, and by its aid the priests, or those of them who were set apart for the study of the heavenly bodies, pretended to be able to tell the future of new-born infants and the progress of the dead in the other world. This they accomplished by weighing the influence of the planets and other luminaries one against another, and extracting the net result. Their art of divination consisted in drawing omens from the song and flight of birds, the appearance of grains of seed, feathers, and the entrails of animals, by which means they confidently predicted both public and private events.

Nahua Government

The limits of the Aztec Empire may be defined, if its tributary states are included, as extending over the territory comprised in the modern states of Mexico, Southern Vera Cruz, and Guerrero. Among the civilised peoples of this extensive tract the prevailing form of government was an absolute monarchy, although several of the smaller communities were republics. The law of succession, as with the Celts of Scotland, prescribed that the eldest surviving brother of the deceased monarch should be elected to his throne, and, failing him, the eldest nephew. But incompetent persons were almost invariably ignored by the elective body, although the choice was limited to one family. The ruler was generally selected both because of his military prowess and his ecclesiastical and political knowledge. Indeed, a Mexican monarch was nearly always a man of the highest culture and artistic refinement, and the ill-fated Montezuma was an example of the true type of Nahua sovereign. The council of the monarch was composed of the electors and other personages of importance in the realm. It undertook the government of the provinces, the financial affairs of the country, and other matters of national import. The nobility held all the highest military, judicial, and ecclesiastical offices. To each city and province judges were delegated who exercised criminal and civil jurisdiction, and whose opinion superseded even that of the Crown itself. Petty cases were settled by lesser officials, and a still inferior grade of officers acted as a species of police in the supervision of families.

Domestic Life

The domestic life of the Nahua was a peculiar admixture of simplicity and display. The mass of the people led a life of strenuous labour in the fields, and in the cities they wrought hard at many trades, among which may be specified building, metal-working, making robes and other articles of bright featherwork and quilted suits of armour, Jewellery, and small wares. Vendors of flowers, fruit, fish, and vegetables swarmed in the markets. The use of tobacco was general among the men of all classes. At

banquets the women attended, although they were seated at separate tables. The entertainments of the upper class were marked by much magnificence, and the variety of dishes was considerable, including venison, turkey, many smaller birds, fish, a profusion of vegetables, and pastry, accompanied by sauces of delicate flavour. These were served in dishes of gold and silver. *Pulque*, a fermented drink brewed from the agave, was the universal beverage. Cannibalism was indulged in usually on ceremonial occasions, and was surrounded by such refinements of the table as served only to render it the more repulsive in the eyes of Europeans. It has been stated that this revolting practice was engaged in owing solely to the tenets of the Nahua religion, which enjoined the slaughter of slaves or captives in the name of a deity, and their consumption with the idea that the consumers attained unity with that deity in the flesh. But there is good reason to suspect that the Nahua, deprived of the flesh of the larger domestic animals, practised deliberate cannibalism. It would appear that the older race which preceded them in the country were innocent of these horrible repasts.

A Mysterious Toltec Book

A piece of Nahua literature, the disappearance of which is surrounded by circumstances of the deepest mystery, is the *Teo-Amoxтли* (Divine Book), which is alleged by certain chroniclers to have been the work of the ancient Toltecs. Ixtlilxochitl, a native Mexican author, states that it was written by a Tezcucan wiseman, one Huematzin about the end of the seventh century, and that it described the pilgrimage of the Nahua from Asia, their laws, manners, and customs, and their religious tenets, science, and arts. In 1838 the Baron de Waldeck stated in his *Voyage Pittoresque* that he had it in his possession, and the Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg identified it with the Maya Dresden Codex and other native manuscripts. Bustamante also states that the *amamatini* (chroniclers) of Tezcucan had a copy in their possession at the time of the taking of their city. But these appear to be mere surmises, and if the *Teo-Amoxтли* ever existed, which on the whole is not unlikely, it has probably never been seen by a European.

A Native Historian

One of the most interesting of the Mexican historians is Don Fernando de Alva Ixtlilxochitl., a halfbreed of royal Tezcucan descent. He was responsible for two notable works, entitled *Historia Chichimeca* (The History of the Chichimecs) and the *Relaciones*, a compilation of historical and semi-historical incidents. He was cursed, or blessed, however, by a strong leaning toward the marvellous, and has coloured his narratives so highly that he would have us regard the Toltec or ancient Nahua civilisations as by far the most splendid and magnificent that ever existed. His descriptions of Tezcucan, if picturesque in the extreme, are manifestly the outpourings of a romantic and idealistic mind, which in its patriotic enthusiasm desired to vindicate the country of his birth from the stigma of savagery and to prove its equality with the great nations of antiquity. For this we have not the heart to quarrel with him. But we must be on our guard against accepting any of his statements unless we find strong corroboration of it in the pages of a more trustworthy and less biased author.

Nahua Topography

The geography of Mexico is by no means as familiar to Europeans as is that of the various countries of our own continent, and it is extremely easy for the reader who is unacquainted with Mexico and the puzzling orthography of its place-names to flounder among them, and during the perusal of such a volume as this to find himself in a hopeless maze of surmise as to the exact locality of the more famous centres of Mexican history. A few moments' study of this paragraph will enlighten him in this respect, and will save him much confusion further on. He will see from the map (p. 330) that the city of Mexico, or Tenochtitlan, its native name, was situated upon an island in the Lake of Tezcuco. This lake has now partially dried up, and the modern city of Mexico is situated at a considerable distance from it. Tezcuco, the city second in importance, lies to the north-east of the lake, and is somewhat more isolated, the other *pueblos* (towns) clustering round the southern or western shores. To the north of Tezcuco is Teotihuacan, the sacred city of the gods. To the south-east of Mexico is Tlaxcallan, or Tlascalala, the city which assisted Cortés against the Mexicans, and the inhabitants of which were the deadliest foes of the central Nahua power. To the north lie the sacred city of Cholula and Tula, or Tollan.

Distribution of the Nahua Tribes

Having become acquainted with the relative position of the Nahua cities, we may now consult for a moment the map which exhibits the geographical distribution of the various Nahua tribes, and which is self-explanatory (p. 331).

Nahua History

A brief historical sketch or epitome of what is known of Nahua history as apart from mere tradition will further assist the reader in the comprehension of Mexican mythology. From the period of the settlement of the Nahua on an agricultural basis a system of feudal government had evolved, and at various epochs in the history of the country certain cities or groups of cities held a paramount sway. Subsequent to the "Toltec" period, which we have already described and discussed, we find the Acolhuans in supreme power, and ruling from their cities of Tollantzinco and Cholula a considerable tract of country. Later Cholula maintained an alliance with Tlascalala and Huexotzinco.

Bloodless Battles

The maxim "Other climes, other manners" is nowhere better exemplified than by the curious annual strife betwixt the warriors of Mexico and Tlascalala. Once a year they met on a prearranged battle-ground and engaged in combat, not with the intention of killing one another, but with the object of taking prisoners for sacrifice on the altars of their respective war-gods. The warrior seized his opponent and attempted to bear him off, the various groups pulling and tugging desperately at each other in the endeavour to seize the limbs of the unfortunate who had been first struck down, with the object of dragging him into durance or effecting his rescue. Once secured, the Tlascaltec warrior was brought to Mexico in a cage, and first

placed upon a stone slab, to which one of his feet was secured by a chain or thong. He was then given light weapons, more like playthings than warrior's gear, and confronted by one of the most celebrated Mexican warriors. Should he succeed in defeating six of these formidable antagonists, he was set free. But no sooner was he wounded than he was hurried to the altar of sacrifice, and his heart was torn out and offered to Huitzilopochtli, the implacable god of war.

The Tlascaltecs, having finally secured their position by a defeat of the Tecpanecs of Huexotzinco about A.D. 1384, sank into comparative obscurity save for their annual bout with the Mexicans.

The Lake Cities

The communities grouped round the various lakes in the valley of Mexico now command our attention. More than two score of these thriving communities flourished at the time of the conquest of Mexico, the most notable being those which occupied the borders of the Lake of Tezcucó. These cities grouped themselves round two nuclei, Azcapozalco and Tezcucó, between whom a fierce rivalry sprang up, which finally ended in the entire discomfiture of Azcapozalco. From this event the real history of Mexico may be said to commence. Those cities which had allied themselves to Tezcucó finally overran the entire territory of Mexico from the Mexican Gulf to the Pacific.

Tezcucó

If, as some authorities declare, Tezcucó was originally Otomi in affinity, it was in later years the most typically Nahuatl of all the lacustrine powers. But several other communities, the power of which was very nearly as great as that of Tezcucó, had assisted that city to supremacy. Among these was Xaltocan, a city-state of unquestionable Otomi origin, situated at the northern extremity of the lake. As we have seen from the statements of Ixtlilxochitl, a Tezcucan writer, his native city was in the forefront of Nahuatl civilisation at the time of the coming of the Spaniards, and if it was practically subservient to Mexico (Tenochtitlan) at that period it was by no means its inferior in the arts.

The Tecpanecs

The Tecpanecs, who dwelt in Tlacopan, Coyohuacan, and Huitzilopochco, were also typical Nahuatl. The name, as we have already explained, indicates that each settlement possessed its own tecpan (chief's house), and has no racial significance. Their state was probably founded about the twelfth century, although a chronology of no less than fifteen hundred years was claimed for it. This people composed a sort of buffer-state betwixt the Otomi on the north and other Nahuatl on the south.

The Aztecs

The menace of these northern Otomi had become acute when the Tecpanecs received reinforcements in the shape of the Aztecâ, or Aztecs, a people of Nahua blood., who came, according to their own accounts, from Aztlan (Crane Land). The name Aztecâ signifies "Crane People," and this has led to the assumption that they came from Chihuahua, where cranes abound. Doubts have been cast upon the Nahua origin of the Aztecâ. But these are by no means well founded, as the names of the early Aztec chieftains and kings are unquestionably Nahuan. This people on their arrival in Mexico were in a very inferior state of culture, and were probably little better than savages. We have already outlined some of the legends concerning the coming of the Aztecs to the land of Anahuac, or the valley of Mexico, but their true origin is uncertain, and it is likely that they wandered down from the north as other Nahua immigrants did before them, and as the Apache Indians still do to this day. By their own showing they had sojourned at several points en route, and were reduced to slavery by the chiefs of Colhuacan. They proved so truculent in their bondage, however, that they were released, and journeyed to Chapoultepec, which they quitted because of their dissensions with the Xaltocanecs. On their arrival in the district inhabited by the Tecpanecs a tribute was levied upon them, but nevertheless they flourished so exceedingly that the swamp villages which the Tecpanecs had permitted them to raise on the borders of the lake soon grew into thriving communities, and chiefs were provided for them from among the nobility of the Tecpanecs.

The Aztecs as Allies

By the aid of the Aztecs the Tecpanecs greatly extended their territorial possessions. City after city was added to their empire, and the allies finally invaded the Otomi country, which they speedily subdued. Those cities which had been founded by the Acolhuans on the fringes of Tezcuco also allied themselves with the Tecpanecs with the intention of freeing themselves from the yoke of the Chichimecs, whose hand was heavy upon them. The Chichimecs or Tezcucans made a stern resistance, and for a time the sovereignty of the Tecpanecs hung in the balance. But eventually they conquered, and Tezcuco was overthrown and given as a spoil to the Aztecs.

New Powers

Up to this time the Aztecs had paid a tribute to Azcapozalco, but now, strengthened by the successes of the late conflict, they withheld it, and requested permission to build an aqueduct from the shore for the purpose of carrying a supply of water into their city. This was refused by the Tecpanecs, and a policy of isolation was brought to bear upon Mexico an embargo being placed upon its goods and intercourse with its people being forbidden. War followed, in which the Tecpanecs were defeated with great slaughter. After this event, which may be placed about the year 1428, the Aztecs gained round rapidly, and their march to the supremacy of the entire Mexican valley was almost undisputed. Allying themselves with Tezcuco and Tlacopan, the Mexicans overran many states far beyond the confines of the valley, and by the time of Montezuma I had extended their boundaries almost to the limits of the present republic. The Mexican merchant followed in the footsteps of the Mexican warrior, and the commercial expansion of the Aztecs rivalled their military fame. Clever traders, they were merciless in their exactions of tribute from the states they conquered, manufacturing the raw material paid to them by the subject cities into goods

which they afterwards sold again to the tribes under their sway. Mexico became the chief market of the empire, as well as its political nucleus. Such was the condition of affairs when the Spaniards arrived in Anahuac. Their coming has been deplored by certain historians as hastening the destruction of a Western Eden. But bad as was their rule, it was probably mild when compared with the cruel and insatiable sway of the Aztecs over their unhappy dependents.

The Spaniards found a tyrannical despotism in the conquered provinces, and a faith the accessories of which were so fiendish that it cast a gloom over the entire national life. These they replaced by a milder vassalage and the earnest ministrations of a more enlightened priesthood.

[Next: CHAPTER II: Mexican Mythology](#)

CHAPTER II: Mexican Mythology

Nahua Religion

THE religion of the ancient Mexicans was a polytheism or worship of a pantheon of deities, the general aspect of which presented similarities to the systems of Greece and Egypt. Original influences, however, were strong, and they are especially discernible in the institutions of ritualistic cannibalism and human sacrifice. Strange resemblances to Christian practice were observed in the Aztec mythology by the Spanish Conquistadores, who piously condemned the native customs of baptism, consubstantiation, and confession as frauds founded and perpetuated by diabolic agency.

A superficial examination of the Nahua religion might lead to the inference that within its scope and system no definite theological views were embraced and no ethical principles propounded, and that the entire mythology presents only the fantastic attitude of the barbarian mind toward the eternal verities. Such a conclusion would be both erroneous and unjust to a human intelligence of a type by no means debased. As a matter of fact, the Nahua displayed a theological advancement greatly superior to that of the Greeks or Romans, and quite on a level with that expressed by the Egyptians and Assyrians. Toward the period or the Spanish occupation the Mexican priesthood was undoubtedly advancing to the contemplation of the exaltation of one god, whose worship was fast excluding that of similar deities, and if our data are too imperfect to allow us to speak very fully in regard to this phase of religious advancement, we know at least that much of the Nahua ritual and many of the prayers preserved by the labours of the Spanish fathers are unquestionably genuine, and display the attainment of a high religious level.

Cosmology

Aztec theology postulated an eternity which, however, was not without its epochs. It was thought to be broken up into a number of aeons, each of which depended upon the period of duration of a separate "sun." No agreement is noticeable among authorities on Mexican mythology as to the number of these "suns," but it would appear as probable that the favourite tradition stipulated for four "suns " or epochs, each of which concluded with a national disaster-flood, famine, tempest, or fire. The present veon, they feared, might conclude upon the completion of every " sheaf " of fifty-two years, the " sheaf " being a merely arbitrary portion of an veon. The period of time from the first creation to the current aeon was variously computed as 15,228, 2386, or 1404 solar years, the discrepancy and doubt arising because of the equivocal nature of the numeral signs expressing the period in the pinturas or native paintings. As regards the sequence of "suns" there is no more agreement than there is regarding their number. The Codex Vaticanus states it to have been water, wind, fire, and famine. Humboldt gives it as hunger, fire,

wind, and water; Boturini as water, famine, wind, and fire; and Gama as hunger, wind, fire, and water.

In all likelihood the adoption of four ages arose from the sacred nature of that number. The myth doubtless shaped itself upon the *tonalamatl* (Mexican native calendar), the great repository of the wisdom of the Nahua race, which the priestly class regarded as its vade mecum, and which was closely consulted by it on every occasion. civil or religious.

The Sources of Mexican Mythology

Our knowledge of the mythology of the Mexicans is chiefly gained through the works of those Spaniards, lay and cleric, who entered the country along with or immediately subsequent to the Spanish Conquistadores. From several of these we have what might be called first-hand accounts of the theogony and ritual of the Nahua people. The most valuable compendium is that of Father Bernardino Sahagun, entitled *A General History of the Affairs of New Spain*, which was published from manuscript only in the middle of last century, though written in the first half of the sixteenth century. Sahagun arrived in Mexico eight years after the country had been reduced by the Spaniards to a condition of servitude. He obtained a thorough mastery of the Nahuatl tongue, and conceived a warm admiration for the native mind and a deep interest in the antiquities of the conquered people. His method of collecting facts concerning their mythology and history was as effective as it was ingenious. He held daily conferences with reliable Indians, and placed questions before them, to which they replied by symbolical paintings detailing the answers which he required. These he submitted to scholars who had been trained under his own supervision, and who, after consultation among themselves, rendered him a criticism in Nahuatl of the hieroglyphical paintings he had placed at their disposal. Not content with this process, he subjected these replies to the criticism of a third body, after which the matter was included in his work. But ecclesiastical intolerance was destined to keep the work from publication for a couple of centuries. Afraid that such a volume would be successful in keeping alight the fires of paganism in Mexico, Sahagun's brethren refused him the assistance he required for its publication. But on his appealing to the Council of the Indies in Spain he was met with encouragement, and was ordered to translate his great work into Spanish, a task he undertook when over eighty years of age. He transmitted the work to Spain, and for three hundred years nothing more was heard of it.

The Romance of the Lost "Sahagun"

For generations antiquarians interested in the lore of ancient Mexico bemoaned its loss, until at length one Mufloz, more indefatigable than the rest, chanced to visit the crumbling library of the ancient convent of Tolosi, in Navarre. There, among time-worn manuscripts and tomes relating to the early fathers and the intricacies of canon law, he discovered the lost Sahagun! It was printed separately by Bustamante at Mexico and by Lord Kingsborough in his collection in 1830, and has been translated into French by M. Jourdanet. Thus the manuscript commenced in or after 1530 was given to the public after a lapse of no less than three hundred years!

Torquemada

Father Torquemada arrived in the New World about the middle of the sixteenth century, at which period he was still enabled to take from the lips of such of the Conquistadores as remained much curious information regarding the circumstances of their advent. His *Monarchia Indiana* was first published at Seville in 1615, and in it he made much use of the manuscript of Sahagun, not then published. At the same time his observations upon matters pertaining to the native religion are often illuminating and exhaustive.

In his *Storia Antica del Messico* the Abbé Clavigero, who published his work in 1780, did much to disperse the clouds of tradition which hung over Mexican history and mythology. The clarity of his style and the exactness of his information render his work exceedingly useful.

Antonio Gama, in his *Descripcion Historica y Cronologica de las dos Piedras*, poured a flood of light on Mexican antiquities. His work was published in 1832. With him maybe said to have ceased the line of Mexican archxologists of the older school. Others worthy of being mentioned among the older writers on Mexican mythology (we are not here concerned with history) are Boturini, who, in his *Idea de una Nueva Historia General de la America Septentrional*, gives a vivid picture of native life and tradition, culled from first-hand communication with the people; Ixdilxochitl, a half-breed, whose mendacious works, the *Relaciones* and *Historia Chichimeca*., are yet valuable repositories of tradition; José de Acosta, whose *Historia Natural y Moral de las Yndias* was published at Seville in 1580; and Gomara, who, in his *Historia General de las Indias* (Madrid, 1749), rested upon the authority of the Conquistadores. Tezozomoc's *Chronica Mexicana*, reproduced in Lord Kingsborough's great work, is valuable as giving unique facts regarding the Aztec mythology, as is the *Teatro Mexicana* of Vetancurt, published at Mexico in 1697-98.

The Worship of One God

The ritual of this dead faith of another hemisphere abounds in expressions concerning the unity of the deity approaching very nearly to many of those we ourselves employ regarding God's attributes. The various classes of the priesthood were in the habit of addressing the several gods to whom they ministered as "omnipotent," "endless," "invisible," "the one god complete in perfection and unity," and "the Maker and Moulder of All." These appellations they applied not to one supreme being, but to the individual deities to whose service they were attached. It may be thought that such a practice would be fatal to the evolution of a single and universal god. But there is every reason to believe that Tezcatlipoca, the great god of the air, like the Hebrew Jahveh, also an air-god, was fast gaining precedence of all other deities, when the coming of the white man put in end to his chances of sovereignty.

Tezcatlipoca

Tezcatlipoca (Fiery Mirror) was undoubtedly the Jupiter of the Nahua pantheon. He carried a mirror or shield, from which he took his name, and in which he was supposed to see reflected the actions and deeds of mankind. The evolution of this god from the status of a spirit of wind or air to that of the supreme deity of the Aztec people presents many points of deep interest to students of mythology. Originally the personification of the air, the source both of the breath of life and of the tempest, Tezcatlipoca possessed all the attributes of a god who presided over these phenomena. As the tribal god of the Tezcucans who had led them into the Land of Promise, and had been instrumental in the defeat of both the gods and men of the elder race they dispossessed, Tezcatlipoca naturally advanced so speedily in popularity and public honour that it was little wonder that within a comparatively short space of time he came to be regarded as a god of fate and fortune, and as inseparably connected with the national destinies. Thus, from being the peculiar deity of a small band of Nahua immigrants, the prestige accruing from the rapid conquest made under his tutelary direction and the speedily disseminated tales of the prowess of those who worshipped him seemed to render him at once the most popular and the best feared god in Anahuac, therefore the one whose cult quickly overshadowed that of other and similar gods.

Tezcatlipoca, Overthrower of the Toltecs

We find Tezcatlipoca intimately associated with the legends which recount the overthrow of Tollan, the capital of the Toltecs. His chief adversary on the Toltec side is the god-king Quetzalcoatl, whose nature and reign we will consider later, but whom we will now merely regard as the enemy of Tezcatlipoca. The rivalry between these gods symbolises that which existed between the civilised Toltecs and the barbarian Nahua, and is well exemplified in the following myths.

Myths of Quetzalcoatl and Tezcatlipoca

In the days of Quetzalcoatl there was abundance of everything necessary for subsistence. The maize was plentiful, the calabashes were as thick as one's arm, and cotton grew in all colours without having to be dyed. A variety of birds of rich plumage filled the air with their songs, and gold, silver, and precious stones were abundant. In the reign of Quetzalcoatl there was peace and plenty for all men.

But this blissful state was too fortunate, too happy to endure. Envious of the calm enjoyment of the god and his people the Toltecs, three wicked "necromancers" plotted their downfall. The reference is of course to the gods of the invading Nahua tribes, the deities Huitzilopochtli, Tlilacahuan or Tezcatlipoca, and Tlalahuepan. These laid evil enchantments upon the city of Tollan, and Tezcatlipoca in particular took the lead in these envious conspiracies. Disguised as an aged man with white hair, he presented himself at the palace of Quetzalcoatl, where he said to the pages in-waiting: "Pray present me to your master the king I desire to speak with him."

The pages advised him to retire, as Quetzalcoatl was indisposed and could see no one. He requested them, however, to tell the god that he was waiting outside. They did so, and procured his admittance.

On entering the chamber of Quetzalcoatl the wily Tezcatlipoca simulated much sympathy with the suffering god-king. "How are you, my son?" he asked. "I have brought you a drug which you should drink, and which will put an end to the course of your malady."

"You are welcome, old man," replied Quetzalcoatl.

I have known for many days that you would come. I am exceedingly indisposed. The malady affects my entire system, and I can use neither my hands nor feet."

Tezcatlipoca assured him that if he partook of the medicine which he had brought him he would immediately experience a great improvement in health. Quetzalcoatl drank the potion, and at once felt much revived. The cunning Tezcatlipoca pressed another and still another cup of the potion upon him, and as it was nothing but *pulque*, the wine of the country, he speedily became intoxicated, and was as wax in the hands of his adversary.

Tezcatlipoca and the Toltecs

Tezcatlipoca, in pursuance of his policy inimical to the Toltec state, took the form of an Indian of the name of Toueyo (Toveyo), and bent his steps to the palace of Uemac, chief of the Toltecs in temporal matters. This worthy had a daughter so fair that she was desired in marriage by many of the Toltecs, but all to no purpose, as her father refused her hand to one and all. The princess, beholding the false Toueyo passing her father's palace, fell deeply in love with him, and so tumultuous was her passion that she became seriously ill because of her longing for him. Uemac, hearing of her indisposition, bent his steps to her apartments, and inquired of her women the cause of her illness. They told him that it was occasioned by the sudden passion which had seized her for the Indian who had recently come that way. Uemac at once gave orders for the arrest of Toueyo, and he was haled before the temporal chief of Tollan.

"Whence come you?" inquired Uemac of his prisoner, who was very scantily attired.

"Lord, I am a stranger, and I have come to these parts to sell green paint," replied Tezcatlipoca.

"Why are you dressed in this fashion? Why do you not wear a cloak?" asked the chief.

"My lord, I follow the custom of my country," replied Tezcatlipoca.

"You have inspired a passion in the breast of my daughter," said Uemac. "What should be done to you for thus disgracing me?"

"Slay me; I care not," said the cunning Tezcatlipoca.

"Nay," replied Uemac, "for if I slay you my daughter will perish. Go to her and say that she may wed you

and be happy."

Now the marriage of Toueyo, to the daughter of Uemac aroused much discontent among the Toltecs; and they murmured among themselves, and said: "Wherefore did Uemac give his daughter to this Toueyo?" Uemac, having got wind of these murmurings, resolved to distract the attention of the Toltecs by making war upon the neighbouring state of Coatepec.

The Toltecs assembled armed for the fray, and having arrived at the country of the men of Coatepec they placed Toueyo in ambush with his body-servants, hoping that he would be slain by their adversaries. But Toueyo and his men killed a large number of the enemy and put them to flight. His triumph was celebrated by Uemac with much pomp. The knightly plumes were placed upon his head, and his body was painted with red and yellow-an honour reserved for those who distinguished themselves in battle.

Tezcatlipoca's next step was to announce a great feast in Tollan, to which all the people for miles around were invited. Great crowds assembled, and danced and sang in the city to the sound of the drum. Tezcatlipoca sang to them and forced them to accompany the rhythm of his song with their feet. Faster and faster the people danced, until the pace became so furious that they were driven to madness, lost their footing, and tumbled pell-mell down a deep ravine, where they were changed into rocks. Others in attempting to cross a stone bridge precipitated themselves into the water below, and were changed into stones.

On another occasion Tezcatlipoca presented himself as a valiant warrior named Tequiua, and invited all the inhabitants of Tollan and its environs to come to the flower-garden called Xochitla. When assembled there he attacked them with a hoe, and slew a great number, and others in panic crushed their comrades to death.

Tezcatlipoca and Tlacahuepan on another occasion repaired to the market-place of Tollan, the former displaying upon the palm of his hand a small infant whom he caused to dance and to cut the most amusing capers. This infant was in reality Huitzilopochtli, the Nahua god of war. At this sight the Toltecs crowded upon one another for the purpose of getting a better view, and their eagerness resulted in many being crushed to death. So enraged were the Toltecs at this that upon the advice of Tlacahuepan they slew both Tezcatlipoca and Huitzilopochtli. When this had been done the bodies of the slain gods gave forth such a pernicious effluvia that thousands the Toltecs died of the pestilence. The god Tlacahuepan then advised them to cast out the bodies lest worse befell them., but on their attempting to do so they discovered their weight to be so great that they could not move them. Hundreds wound cords round the corpses, but the strands broke, and those who pulled upon them fell and died suddenly, tumbling one upon the other, and suffocating those upon whom they collapsed.

The Departure of Quetzalcoatl

The Toltecs were so tormented by the enchantments of Tezcatlipoca that it was soon apparent to them that their fortunes were on the wane and that the end of their empire was at hand. Quetzalcoatl, chagrined

at the turn things had taken, resolved to quit Tollan and go to the country of Tlapallan, whence he had come on his civilising mission to Mexico. He burned all the houses which he had built, and buried his treasure of gold and precious stones in the deep valleys between the mountains. He changed the cacao-trees into mezquites, and he ordered all the birds of rich plumage and song to quit the valley of Anahuac and to follow him to a distance of more than a hundred leagues. On the road from Tollan he discovered a great tree at a point called Quauhtitlan. There he rested, and requested his pages to hand him a mirror. Regarding himself in the polished surface, he exclaimed, "I am old," and from that circumstance the spot was named Huehuequauhtitlan (Old Quauhtitlan). Proceeding on his way accompanied by musicians who played the flute, he walked until fatigue arrested his steps, and he seated himself upon a stone, on which he left the imprint of his hands. This place is called Temacpalco (The Impress of the Hands). At Coaapan he was met by the Nahua gods, who were inimical to him and to the Toltecs.

"Where do you go? they asked him. "Why do you leave your capital?"

"I go to Tlapallan," replied Quetzalcoatl, "whence I came."

"For what reason?" persisted the enchanters.

"My father the Sun has called me thence," replied Quetzalcoatl.

"Go, then, happily," they said, "but leave us the secret of your art, the secret of founding in silver, of working in precious stones and woods, of painting, and of feather-working, and other matters."

But Quetzalcoatl refused, and cast all his treasures into the fountain of Cozcaapa (Water of Precious Stones). At Cochtan he was met by another enchanter, who asked him whither he was bound, and on learning his destination proffered him a draught of wine. On tasting the vintage Quetzalcoatl was overcome with sleep. Continuing his journey in the morning, the god passed between a volcano and the Sierra Nevada (Mountain of Snow), where all the pages who accompanied him died of cold. He regretted this misfortune exceedingly, and wept, lamenting their fate with most bitter tears and mournful songs. On reaching the summit of Mount Poyauhtecatl he slid to the base. Arriving at the sea-shore, he embarked upon a raft of serpents, and was wafted away toward the land of Tlapallan.

It is obvious that these legends bear some resemblance to those of Ixtlilxochitl which recount the fall of the Toltecs. They are taken from Sahagun's work, *Historia General de Nueva España*, and are included as well for the sake of comparison as for their own intrinsic value.

Tezcatlipoca as Doomster

Tezcatlipoca was much more than a mere personification of wind, and if he was regarded as a life-giver he had also the power of destroying existence. In fact on occasion he appears as an inexorable death-dealer, and as such was styled Nezhualpilli (The Hungry Chief) and Yaotzin (The Enemy). Perhaps one

of the names by which he was best known was Telpochtli (The Youthful Warrior), from the fact that his reserve of strength, his vital force, never diminished, and that his youthful and boisterous vigour was apparent in the tempest.

Tezcatlipoca was usually depicted as holding in his right hand a dart placed in an atlatl (spear-thrower), and his mirror-shield with four spare darts in his left. This shield is the symbol of his power as judge of mankind and upholder of human justice.

The Aztecs pictured Tezcatlipoca as rioting along the highways in search of persons on whom to wreak his vengeance, as the wind of night rushes along the deserted roads with more seeming violence than it does by day. Indeed one of his names, Yoalli Ehecatl, signifies "Night Wind." Benches of stone, shaped like those made for the dignitaries of the Mexican towns, were distributed along the highways for his especial use, that on these he might rest after his boisterous journeyings. These seats were concealed by green boughs, beneath which the god was supposed to lurk in wait for his victims. But if one of the persons he seized overcame him in the struggle he might ask whatever boon he desired, secure in the promise of the deity that it should be granted forthwith.

It was supposed that Tezcatlipoca had guided the Nahuas, and especially the people of Tezcuco, from a more northerly clime to the valley of Mexico. But he was not a mere local deity of Tezcuco, his worship being widely celebrated throughout the country. His exalted position in the Mexican pantheon seems to have won for him especial reverence as a god of fate and fortune. The place he took as the head of the Nahuas pantheon brought him many attributes which were quite foreign to his original character. Fear and a desire to exalt their tutelary deity will impel the devotees of a powerful god to credit him with any or every quality, so that there is nothing remarkable in the spectacle of the heaping of every possible attribute, human or divine, upon Tezcatlipoca when we recall the supreme position he occupied in Mexican mythology. His priestly caste far surpassed in power and in the breadth and activity of its propaganda the priesthoods of the other Mexican deities. To it is credited the invention of many of the usages of civilisation, and that it all but succeeded in making his worship universal is pretty clear, as has been shown. The other gods were worshipped for some special purpose, but the worship of Tezcatlipoca was regarded as compulsory, and to some extent as a safeguard against the destruction of the universe, a calamity the Nahuas had been led to believe might occur through his agency. He was known as Moneneque (The Claimer of Prayer), and in some of the representations of him an ear of gold was shown suspended from his hair, toward which small tongues of gold strained upward in appeal of prayer. In times of national danger, plague, or famine universal prayer was made to Tezcatlipoca. The heads of the community repaired to his *teocalli* (temple) accompanied by the people *en masse*, and all prayed earnestly together for his speedy intervention. The prayers to Tezcatlipoca still extant prove that the ancient Mexicans fully believed that he possessed the power of life and death, and many of them are couched in the most piteous terms.

The Teotleco Festival

The supreme position occupied by Tezcatlipoca in the Mexican religion is well exemplified in the festival

of the Teotleco (Coming of the Gods), which is fully described in Sahagun's account of the Mexican festivals. Another peculiarity connected with his worship was that he was one of the few Mexican deities who had any relation to the expiation of sin. Sin was symbolised by the Nahua as excrement, and in various manuscripts Tezcatlipoca is represented as a turkey-cock to which ordure is being offered up.

Of the festival of the Teotleco Sahagun says In the twelfth month a festival was celebrated in honour of all the gods, who were said to have gone to some country I know not where. On the last day of the month a greater one was held, because the gods had returned. On the fifteenth day of this month the young boys and the servitors decked all the altars or oratories of the gods with boughs, as well as those which were in the houses, and the images which were set up by the wayside and at the cross-roads. This work was paid for in maize. Some received a basketful, and others only a few ears. On the eighteenth day the ever-youthful god Tlamatzincatl or Titlacahuan arrived. It was said that he marched better and arrived the first because he was strong and young. Food was offered him in his temple on that night. Every one drank, ate, and made merry. The old people especially celebrated the arrival of the god by drinking wine, and it was alleged that his feet were washed by these rejoicings. The last day of the month was marked by a great festival, on account of the belief that the whole or the gods arrived at that time. On the preceding night a quantity of flour was kneaded on a carpet into the shape of a cheese, it being supposed that the gods would leave a footprint thereon as a sign of their return. The chief attendant watched all night, going to and fro to see if the impression appeared. When he at last saw it he called out, 'The master has arrived,' and at once the priests of the temple began to sound the horns, trumpets., and other musical instruments used by them. Upon hearing this noise every one set forth to offer food in all the temples." The next day the aged gods were supposed to arrive, and young men disguised as monsters hurled victims into a huge sacrificial fire.

The Toxcatl Festival

The most remarkable festival in connection with Tezcatlipoca was the Toxcatl, held in the fifth month. On the day of this festival a youth was slain who for an entire year previously had been carefully instructed in the *rôle* of victim. He was selected from among the best war captives of the year, and must be without spot or blemish. He assumed the name, garb, and attributes of Tezcatlipoca himself, and was regarded with awe by the entire populace, who imagined him to be the earthly representative of the deity. He rested during the day, and ventured forth at night only, armed with the dart and shield of the god, to scour the roads. This practice was, of course, symbolical of the wind-god's progress over the nightbound hiahways. He carried also the whistle symbolical of the deity, and made with it a noise such as the weird wind of night makes when it hurries through the streets. To his arms and legs small bells were attached. He was followed by a retinue of pages, and at intervals rested upon the stone seats which were placed upon the highways for the convenience of Tezcatlipoca. Later in the year he was mated to four beautiful maidens of high birth, with whom he passed the time in amusement of every description. He was entertained at the tables of the nobility as the earthly representative of Tezcatlipoca, and his latter days were one constant round of feasting and excitement. At last the fatal day upon which he must be sacrificed arrived. He took a tearful farewell of the maidens whom he had espoused, and was carried to the teocalli of sacrifice, upon the sides of which he broke the musical instruments with which he had

beguiled the time of his captivity. When he reached the summit he was received by the high-priest, who speedily made him one with the god whom he represented by tearing his heart out on the stone of sacrifice.

Huitzilopochtli, the War, God

Huitzilopochtli occupied in the Aztec pantheon a place similar to that of Mars in the Roman. His origin is obscure, but the myth relating to it is distinctly original in character. It recounts how, under the shadow of the mountain of Coatepec, near the Toltec city of Tollan, there dwelt a pious widow called Coatlicue, the mother of a tribe of Indians called Centzonuitznaua) who had a daughter called Coyolxauhqui, and who daily repaired to a small hill with the intention of offering up prayers to the gods in a penitent spirit of piety. Whilst occupied in her devotions one day she was surprised by a small ball of brilliantly coloured feathers falling upon her from on high. She was pleased by the bright variety of its hues, and placed it in her bosom, intending to offer it up to the sun-god. Some time afterwards she learnt that she was to become the mother of another child. Her sons, hearing of this, rained abuse upon her, being incited to humiliate her in every possible way by their sister Coyolxauhqui.

Coatlicue went about in fear and anxiety; but the spirit of her unborn infant came and spoke to her and gave her words of encouragement, soothing her troubled heart. Her sons, however, were resolved to wipe out what they considered an insult to their race by the death of their mother, and took counsel with one another to slay her. They attired themselves in their war-gear, and arranged their hair after the manner of warriors going to battle. But one of their number, Quauitlicac, relented, and confessed the perfidy of his brothers to the still unborn Huitzilopochtli, who replied to him: "O brother, hearken attentively to what I have to say to you. I am fully informed of what is about to happen." With the intention of slaying their mother, the Indians went in search of her. At their head marched their sister, Coyolxauhqui. They were armed to the teeth, and carried bundles of darts with which they intended to kill the luckless Coatlicue.

Quauitlicac climbed the mountain to acquaint Huitzilopochtli with the news that his brothers were approaching to kill their mother.

"Mark well where they are at," replied the infant god. "To what place have they advanced?"

"To Tzompantitlan," responded Quauitlicac.

Later on Huitzilopochtli asked: "Where may they be now?"

"At Coaxalco", was the reply.

Once more Huitzilopochtli asked to what point his enemies had advanced.

"They are now at Petlac," Quauitlicac replied.

After a little while Quauhtlicac informed Huitzilopochtli that the Centzonuitznaua were at hand under the leadership of Coyolxauhqui. At the moment of the enemy's arrival Huitzilopochtli was born, flourishing a shield and spear of a blue colour. He was painted, his head was surmounted by a panache, and his left leg was covered with feathers. He shattered Coyolxauhqui with a flash of serpentine lightning, and then gave chase to the Centzonuitznaua, whom he pursued four times round the mountain. They did not attempt to defend themselves, but fled incontinently. Many perished in the waters of the adjoining lake, to which they had rushed in their despair. All were slain save a few who escaped to a place called Uitzlampa, where they surrendered to Huitzilopochtli and gave up their arms.

The name Huitzilopochtli signifies "Humming-bird to the left from the circumstance that the god wore the feathers of the humming-bird, or *colibri*, on his left leg. From this it has been inferred that he was a humming-bird totem. The explanation of Huitzilopochtli's origin is a little deeper than this, however. Among the American tribes, especially those of the northern continent, the serpent is regarded with the deepest veneration as the symbol of wisdom and magic. From these sources come success in war. The serpent also typifies the lightning, the symbol of the divine spear, the apotheosis of warlike might. Fragments of serpents are regarded as powerful war-physic among many tribes. Atatarho, a mythical wizard-king of the Iroquois, was clothed with living serpents as with a robe, and his myth throws light on one of the names of Huitzilopochtli's mother, Coatlantona (Robe of Serpents). Huitzilopochtli's image was surrounded by serpents, and rested on serpent-shaped supporters. His sceptre was a single snake, and his great drum was of serpent-skin.

In American mythology the serpent is closely associated with the bird. Thus the name of the god Quetzalcoatl is translatable as "Feathered Serpent," and many similar cases where the conception of bird and serpent have been unified could be adduced. Huitzilopochtli is undoubtedly one of these. We may regard him as a god the primary conception of whom arose from the idea of the serpent, the symbol of warlike wisdom and might, the symbol of the warrior's dart or spear, and the humming-bird, the harbinger of summer, type of the season when the snake or lightning god has power over the crops.

Huitzilopochtli was usually represented as wearing on his head a waving panache or plume of hummingbirds' feathers. His face and limbs were striped with bars of blue, and in his right hand he carried four spears. His left hand bore his shield, on the surface of which were displayed five tufts of down, arranged in the form of a quincunx. The shield was made with reeds, covered with eagle's down. The spear he brandished was also tipped with tufts of down instead of flint. These weapons were placed in the hands of those who as captives engaged in the sacrificial fight, for in the Aztec mind Huitzilopochtli symbolised the warrior's death on the gladiatorial stone of combat. As has been said, Huitzilopochtli was war-god of the Aztecs, and was supposed to have led them to the site of Mexico from their original home in the north. The city of Mexico took its name from one of its districts, which was designated by a title of Huitzilopochtli's, Mexitli (Hare of the Aloes).

The War, God as Fertiliser

But Huitzilopochtli was not a war-god alone. As the serpent-god of lightning he had a connection with

summer, the season of lightning, and therefore had dominion to some extent over the crops and fruits of the earth. The Algonquian Indians of North America believed that the rattlesnake could raise ruinous storms or grant favourable breezes. They alluded to it also as the symbol of life, for the serpent has a phallic significance because of its similarity to the symbol of generation and fructification. With some American tribes also, notably the Pueblo Indians of Arizona, the serpent has a solar significance, and with tail in mouth symbolises the annual round of the sun. The Nahua believed that Huitzilopochtli could grant them fair weather for the fructification of their crops, and they placed an image of Tlaloc, the rain-god, near him, so that, if necessary, the war-god could compel the rainmaker to exert his pluvial powers or to abstain from the creation of floods. We must, in considering the nature of this deity, bear well in mind the connection in the Nahua consciousness between the pantheon, war, and the food-supply. If war was not waged annually the gods must go without flesh food and perish, and if the gods succumbed the crops would fail, and famine would destroy the race. So it was small wonder that Huitzilopochtli was one of the chief gods of Mexico.

Huitzilopochtli's principal festival was the Toxcatl, celebrated immediately after the Toxcatl festival of Tezcatlipoca, to which it bore a strong resemblance. Festivals of the god were held in May and December, at the latter of which an image of him, moulded in dough kneaded with the blood of sacrificed children, was pierced by the presiding priest with an arrow-an act significant of the death of Huitzilopochtli until his resurrection in the next year.

Strangely enough, when the absolute supremacy of Tezcatlipoca is remembered, the high-priest of Huitzilopochtli, the Mexicatl Teohuatzin, was considered to be the religious head of the Mexican priesthood. The priests of Huitzilopochtli held office by right of descent, and their primate exacted absolute obedience from the priesthoods of all the other deities, being regarded as next to the monarch himself in power and dominion.

Tlaloc, the Rain, God

Tlaloc was the god of rain and moisture. In a country such as Mexico, where the success or failure of the crops depends entirely upon the plentiful nature or otherwise of the rainfall, he was, it will be readily granted, a deity of high importance. It was believed that he made his home in the mountains which surround the valley of Mexico, as these were the source of the local rainfall, and his popularity is vouched for by the fact that sculptured representations of him occur more often than those of any other of the Mexican deities. He is generally represented in a semi-recumbent attitude, with the upper part of the body raised upon the elbows, and the knees half drawn up, probably to represent the mountainous character of the country whence comes the rain. He was espoused to Chalchihuitlicue (Emerald Lady), who bore him a numerous progeny, the Tlalocs (Clouds). Many of the figures which represented him were carved from the green stone called *chalchihuitl* (jadeite), to typify the colour of water, and in some of these he was shown holding a serpent of gold to typify the lightning, for water-gods are often closely identified with the thunder, which hangs over the hills and accompanies heavy rains. Tlaloc, like his prototype, the Kiche god Hurakan, manifested himself in three forms, as the lightning-flash, the thunderbolt, and the thunder. Although his image faced the east, where he was supposed to have originated, he was worshipped as

inhabiting the four cardinal points and every mountain-top. The colours of the four points of the compass, yellow, green, red, and blue, whence came the rain-bearing winds, entered into the composition of his costume, which was further crossed with streaks of silver, typifying the mountain torrents. A vase containing every description of grain was usually placed before his idol, an offering of the growth which it was hoped he would fructify. He dwelt in a many-watered paradise called Tlalocan (The Country of Tlaloc), a place of plenty and fruitfulness, where those who had been drowned or struck by lightning or had died from dropsical diseases enjoyed eternal bliss. Those of the common people who did not die such deaths went to the dark abode of Mictlan, the all-devouring and gloomy Lord of Death.

In the native manuscripts Tlaloc is usually portrayed as having a dark complexion, a large round eye, a row of tusks, and over the lips an angular blue stripe curved downward and rolled up at the ends. The latter character is supposed to have been evolved originally from the coils of two snakes, their mouths with long fangs in the upper jaw meeting in the middle of the upper lip. The snake, besides being symbolised by lightning in many American mythologies, is also symbolical of water, which is well typified in its sinuous movements.

Many maidens and children were annually sacrificed to Tlaloc. If the children wept it was regarded as a happy omen for a rainy season. The Etzalqualiztli (When they eat Bean Food) was his chief festival, and was held on a day approximating to May 13, about which date the rainy season usually commenced. Another festival in his honour, the Quauitleua, commenced the Mexican year on February 2. At the former festival the priests of Tlaloc plunged into a lake, imitating the sounds and movements of frogs, which, as denizens of water, were under the special protection of the god. Chalchihuitlicue, his wife, was often symbolised by the small image of a frog.

Sacrifices to Tlaloc

Human sacrifices also took place at certain points in the mountains where artificial ponds were consecrated to Tlaloc. Cemeteries were situated in their vicinity, and offerings to the god interred near the burial-place of the bodies of the victims slain in his service. His statue was placed on the highest mountain of Tezcuco, and an old writer mentions that five or six young children were annually offered to the god at various points, their hearts torn out, and their remains interred. The mountains Popocatepetl and Teocuinani were regarded as his special high places, and on the heights of the latter was built his temple, in which stood his image carved in green stone.

The Nahua believed that the constant production of food and rain induced a condition of senility in those deities whose duty it was to provide them. This they attempted to stave off, fearing that if they failed in so doing the gods would perish. They afforded them, accordingly, a period of rest and recuperation, and once in eight years a festival called the Atamalqualiztli (Fast of Porridge-balls and Water) was held, during which every one in the Nahua community returned for the time being to the conditions of savage life. Dressed in costumes representing all forms of animal and bird life, and mimicking the sounds made by the various creatures they typified, the people danced round the *teocalli* of Tlaloc for the purpose of diverting and entertaining him after his labours in producing the fertilising rains of the past eight years. A

lake was filled with water-snakes and frogs, and into this the people plunged, catching the reptiles in their mouths and devouring them alive. The only grain food which might be partaken during this season of rest was thin water-porridge of maize.

Should one of the more prosperous peasants or yeomen deem a rainfall necessary to the growth of his crops, or should he fear a drought, he sought out one of the professional makers of dough or paste idols, whom he desired to mould one of Tlaloc. To this image offerings of maize-porridge and pulque were made. Throughout the night the farmer and his neighbours danced, shrieking and howling round the figure for the purpose of rousing Tlaloc from his droughtbringing slumbers. Next day was spent in quaffing huge libations of pulque, and in much-needed rest from the exertions of the previous night.

In Tlaloc it is easy to trace resemblances to a mythological conception widely prevalent among the indigenous American peoples. He is similar to such deities as the Hurakan of the Kiche of Guatemala, the Pillan of the aborigines of Chile, and Con, the thunder-god of the Collao of Peru. Only his thunderous powers are not so apparent as his rain-making abilities, and in this he differs somewhat from the gods alluded to.

Quetzalcoatl

It is highly probable that Quetzalcoatl was a deity of the pre-Nahua people of Mexico. He was regarded by the Aztec race as a god of somewhat alien character, and had but a limited following in Mexico, the city of Huitzilopochtli. In Cholula, however, and others of the older towns his worship flourished exceedingly. He was regarded as "The Father of the Toltecs," and, legend says, was the seventh and youngest son of the Toltec Abraham, Iztacmixcohuatl. Quetzalcoatl (whose name means "Feathered Serpent" or "Feathered Staff") became, at a relatively early period, ruler of Tollan, and by his enlightened sway and his encouragement of the liberal arts did much to further the advancement of his people. His reign had lasted for a period sufficient to permit of his placing the cultivated arts upon a satisfactory basis when the country was visited by the cunning magicians Tezcatlipoca and Coyotlinaual, god of the Amantecas. Disentangled from its terms of myth, this statement may be taken to imply that bands of invading Nahua first began to appear within the Toltec territories. Tezcatlipoca, descending from the sky in the shape of a spider by way of a fine web, proffered him a draught of *pulque*, which so intoxicated him that the curse of lust descended upon him, and he forgot his chastity with Quetzalpetlatl. The doom pronounced upon him was the hard one of banishment, and he was compelled to forsake Anahuac. His exile wrought peculiar changes upon the face of the country. He secreted his treasures of gold and silver, burned his palaces, transformed the cacao-trees into mezquites, and banished all the birds from the neighbourhood of Tollan. The magicians, nonplussed at these unexpected happenings, begged him to return, but he refused on the ground that the sun required his presence. He proceeded to Tabasco, the fabled land of Tlapallan, and, embarking upon a raft made of serpents, floated away to the east. A slightly different version of this myth has already been given. Other accounts state that the king cast himself upon a funeral pyre and was consumed, and that the ashes arising from the conflagration flew upward and were changed into birds of brilliant plumage. His heart also soared into the sky, and became the morning star. The Mexicans averred that Quetzalcoatl died when the star became visible, and thus

they bestowed upon him the title "Lord of the Dawn." They further said that when he died he was invisible for four days, and that for eight days he wandered in the underworld, after which time the morning star appeared, when he achieved resurrection, and ascended his throne as a god.

It is the contention of some authorities that the myth of Quetzalcoatl points to his status as god of the sun. That luminary, they say, begins his diurnal journey in the east, whence Quetzalcoatl returned as to his native home. It will be recalled that Montezuma and his subjects imagined that Cortés was no other than Quetzalcoatl, returned to his dominions, as an old prophecy declared he would do. But that he stood for the sun itself is highly improbable, as will be shown. First of all, however, it will be well to pay some attention to other theories concerning his origin.

Perhaps the most important of these is that which regards Quetzalcoatl as a god of the air. He is connected, say some, with the cardinal points, and wears the insignia of the cross, which symbolises them. Dr. Seler says of him: "He has a protruding, trumpet-like mouth, for the wind-god blows. . . . His figure suggests whirls and circles. Hence his temples were built in circular form. . . . The head of the wind-god stands for the second of the twenty day signs, which was called Ehecatl (Wind)." The same authority, however, in his essay on Mexican chronology, gives to Quetzalcoatl a dual nature, "the dual nature which seems to belong to the wind-god Quetzalcoatl) who now appears simply a wind-god, and again seems to show the true, characters of the old god of fire and light." [Bulletin 28 of the U.S. Bureau of Ethnology.]

Dr. Brinton perceived in Quetzalcoatl a similar dual nature. "He is both lord of the eastern light and of the winds, he writes (*Myths of the New World*, P. 214)- "Like all the dawn heroes, he too was represented as of white complexion, clothed in long, white robes, and, as many of the Aztec gods, with a full and flowing beard. . . . He had been overcome by Tezcatloca, the wind or spirit of night, who had descended from heaven by a spider's web, and presented his rival with a draught supposed to confer immortality, but in fact producing an intolerable longing for home. For the wind and the light both depart when the gloaming draws near, or when the clouds spread their dark and shadowy webs along the mountains, and pour the vivifying rain upon the fields."

The theory which derives Quetzalcoatl from a "culture-hero " who once actually existed is scarcely reconcilable with probability. It is more than likely that, as in the case of other mythical paladins, the legend of a mighty hero arose from the somewhat weakened idea of a great deity. Some of the early Spanish missionaries professed to see in Quetzalcoatl the Apostle St. Thomas, who had journeyed to America to effect its conversion!

The Man of the Sun

A more probable explanation of the origin of Quetzalcoatl and a more likely elucidation of his nature is that which would regard him as the Man of the Sun, who has quitted his abode for a season for the purpose of inculcating in mankind those arts which represent the first steps in civilisation, who fulfils his mission, and who, at a late period, is displaced by the deities of an invading race. Quetzalcoatl was represented as a traveller with staff in hand, and this is proof of his solar character, as is the statement that

under his rule the fruits of the earth flourished more abundantly than at any subsequent period. The abundance of gold said to have been accumulated in his reign assists the theory, the precious metal being invariably associated with the sun by most barbarous peoples. In the native pinturas it is noticeable that the solar disc and semidisc are almost invariably found in connection with the feathered serpent as the symbolical attributes of Quetzalcoatl. The Hopi Indians of Mexico at the present day symbolise the sun as a serpent, tail in mouth, and the ancient Mexicans introduced the solar disc in connection with small images of Quetzalcoatl, which they attached to the head-dress. In still other examples Quetzalcoatl is pictured as if emerging or stepping from the luminary, which is represented as his dwelling-place.

Several tribes tributary to the Aztecs were in the habit of imploring Quetzalcoatl in prayer to return and free them from the intolerable bondage of the conqueror. Notable among them were the Totonacs, who passionately believed that the sun, their father, would send a god who would free them from the Aztec yoke. On the coming of the Spaniards the European conquerors were hailed as the servants of Quetzalcoatl, thus in the eyes of the natives fulfilling the tradition that he would return.

Various Forms of Quetzalcoatl

Various conceptions of Quetzalcoatl are noticeable in the mythology of the territories which extended from the north of Mexico to the marshes of Nicaragua. In Guatemala the Kiches recognised him as Gucumatz, and in Yucatan proper he was worshipped as Kukulcan, both of which names are but literal translations of his Mexican title of "Feathered Serpent" into Kiche and Mayan. That the three deities are one and the same there can be no shadow of doubt. Several authorities have seen in Kukulcan a "serpent-and-rain god." He can only be such in so far as he is a solar god also. The cult of the feathered snake in Yucatan was unquestionably a branch of sun-worship. In tropical latitudes the sun draws the clouds round him at noon. The rain falls from the clouds accompanied by thunder and lightning—the symbols of the divine serpent. Therefore the manifestations of the heavenly serpent were directly associated with the sun, and no statement that Kukulcan is a mere serpent-and-water god satisfactorily elucidates his characteristics.

Quetzalcoatl's Northern Origin

It is by no means improbable that Quetzalcoatl was of northern origin, and that on his adoption by southern peoples and tribes dwelling in tropical countries his characteristics were gradually and unconsciously altered in order to meet the exigencies of his environment. The mythology of the Indians of British Columbia, whence in all likelihood the Nahuatl originally came, is possessed of a central figure bearing a strong resemblance to Quetzalcoatl. Thus the Tlingit tribe worship Yetl; the Quaquitl Indians, Kanikilak; the Salish people of the coast, Kumsnootl, Quäaqua, or Släalekam. It is noticeable that these divine beings are worshipped as the Man of the Sun, and totally apart from the luminary himself, as was Quetzalcoatl in Mexico. The Quaquitl believe that before his settlement among them for the purpose of inculcating in the tribe the arts of life, the sun descended as a bird, and assumed a human shape. Kanikilak is his son, who, as his emissary, spreads the arts of civilisation over the world. So the Mexicans

believed that Quetzalcoatl descended first of all in the form of a bird, and was ensnared in the fowler's net of the Toltec hero Hueymatzin.

The titles bestowed upon Quetzalcoatl by the Nahua show that in his solar significance he was god of the vault of the heavens, as well as merely son of the sun. He was alluded to as Ehecatl (The Air), Yolcuat (The Rattlesnake), Tohil (The Rumbler), Nanihehecatl (Lord of the Four Winds), Tlauizcalpantecutli (Lord of the Light of the Dawn). The whole heavenly vault was his, together with all its phenomena. This would seem to be in direct opposition to the theory that Tezcatlipoca was the supreme god of the Mexicans. But it must be borne in mind that Tezcatlipoca was the god of a later age, and of a fresh body of Nahua immigrants, and as such inimical to Quetzalcoatl, who was probably in a similar state of opposition to Itzamna, a Maya deity of Yucatan.

The Worship of Quetzalcoatl

The worship of Quetzalcoatl was in some degree antipathetic to that of the other Mexican deities, and his priests were a separate caste. Although human sacrifice was by no means so prevalent among his devotees, it is a mistake to aver, as some authorities have done, that it did not exist in connection with his worship. A more acceptable sacrifice to Quetzalcoatl appears to have been the blood of the celebrant or worshipper, shed by himself. When we come to consider the mythology of the Zapotecs, a people whose Customs and beliefs appear to have formed a species of link between the Mexican and Mayan civilisations, we shall find that their high-priests occasionally enacted the legend of Quetzalcoatl in their own persons, and that their worship, which appears to have been based upon that of Quetzalcoatl, had as one of its most pronounced characteristics the shedding of blood. The celebrant or devotee drew blood from the vessels lying under the tongue or behind the ear by drawing across those tender parts a cord made from the thorn-covered fibres of the agave. The blood was smeared over the mouths of the idols. In this practice we can perceive an act analogous to the sacrificial substitution of the part for the whole, as obtaining in early Palestine and many other countries—a certain sign that tribal or racial opinion has contracted a disgust for human sacrifice, and has sought to evade the anger of the gods by yielding to them a portion of the blood of each worshipper, instead of sacrificing the life of one for the general weal.

The Maize-Gods of Mexico

A special group of deities called Centeotl presided over the agriculture of Mexico, each of whom personified one or other of the various aspects of the maize-plant. The chief goddess of maize, however, was Chicomecohuatl (Seven-serpent), her name being an allusion to the fertilising power of water, which element the Mexicans symbolised by the serpent. As Xilonen she typified the *xilote*, or green ear of the maize. But it is probable that Chicomecohuatl was the creation of an older race, and that the Nahua newcomers adopted or brought with them another growth-spirit, the "Earth-mother," Teteoinnan (Mother of the Gods), or Tocitzin (Our Grandmother). This goddess had a son, Centeotl, a male maize-spirit. Sometimes the mother was also known as Centeotl, the generic name for the entire group, and this fact has led to some confusion in the minds of Americanists. But this does not mean that Chicomecohuatl was

by any means neglected. Her spring festival, held on April 5, was known as Hueytozotli (The Great Watch), and was accompanied by a general fast, when the dwellings of the Mexicans were decorated with bulrushes which had been sprinkled with blood drawn from the extremities of the inmates. The statues of the little *tepitoton* (household gods) were also decorated. The worshippers then proceeded to the maize-fields, where they pulled the tender stalks of the growing maize, and, having decorated them with flowers, placed them in the *calpulli* (the common house of the village). A mock combat then took place before the altar of Chicomecohuatl. The girls of the village presented the goddess with bundles of maize of the previous season's harvesting, later restoring them to the granaries in order that they might be utilised for seed for the coming year. Chicomecohuatl was always represented among the household deities of the Mexicans, and on the occasion of her festival the family placed before the image a basket of provisions surmounted by a cooked frog, bearing on its back a piece of cornstalk stuffed with pounded maize and vegetables. This frog was symbolic of Chalchihuitlicue, wife of Tlaloc, the rain-god, who assisted Chicomecohuatl in providing a bountiful harvest. In order that the soil might rather benefit, a frog, the symbol of water, was sacrificed, so that its vitality should recuperate that of the weary and much-burdened earth.

The Sacrifice of the Dancer

A more important festival of Chicomecohuatl, however, was the Xalaquia, which lasted from June 28 to July 14, commencing when the maize plant had attained its full growth. The women of the *pueblo* (village) wore their hair unbound, and shook and tossed it so that by sympathetic magic the maize might take the hint and grow correspondingly long. Chian pinolli was consumed in immense quantities, and maize porridge was eaten. Hilarious dances were nightly performed in the *teopan* (temple), the central figure in which was the Xalaquia, a female captive or slave, with face painted red and yellow to represent the colours of the maize-plant. She had previously undergone a long course of training in the dancing-school, and now, all unaware of the horrible fate awaiting her, she danced and pirouetted gaily among the rest. Throughout the duration of the stival she danced and on its expiring night she was accompanied in the dance by the women of the community, who circled round her, chanting the deeds of Chicomecohuatl. When daybreak appeared the company was joined by the chiefs and headmen, who, along with the exhausted and half-fainting victim, danced the solemn death-dance. The entire community then approached the *teocalli* (pyramid of sacrifice), and, its summit reached, the victim was stripped to a nude condition, the priest plunged a knife of flint into her bosom, and, tearing out the still palpitating heart, offered it up to Chicomecohuatl. In this manner the venerable goddess, weary with the labours of inducing growth in the maize-plant, was supposed to be revived and refreshed. Hence the name Xalaquia, which signifies "She who is clothed with the Sand." Until the death of the victim it was not lawful to partake of the new corn.

The general appearance of Chicomecohuatl was none too pleasing. Her image rests in the National Museum in Mexico, and is girdled with snakes. On the underside the symbolic frog is carved. The Americanists; of the eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries were unequal to the task of elucidating the origin of the figure, which they designated Teoyaominqui. The first to point out the error was Payne, in his *History of the New World called America*, Vol. i. p. 424. The passage in which he announces his

discovery is of such real interest that it is worth transcribing fully.

An Antiquarian Mare's-Nest

"All the great idols of Mexico were thought to have been destroyed until this was disinterred among other relics in the course of making new drains in the Plaza Mayor of Mexico in August 1790. The discovery produced an immense sensation. The idol was dragged to the court of the University, and there set up; the Indians began to worship it and deck it with flowers; the antiquaries, with about the same degree of intelligence, to speculate about it. What most puzzled them was that the face and some other parts of the goddess are found in duplicate at the back of the figure; hence they concluded it to represent two gods in one, the principal of whom they further concluded to be a female, the other, indicated by the back, a male. The standard author on Mexican antiquities at that time was the Italian *dilettante* Boturini, of whom it may be said that he is better, but not much better, than nothing at all. From page 27 of his work the antiquaries learned that Huitzilopochtli was accompanied by the goddess Teoyaominqui, who was charged with collecting the souls of those slain in war and sacrifice. This was enough. The figure was at once named Teoyaominqui or Huitzilopochtli (The One plus the Other), and has been so called ever since. The antiquaries next elevated this imaginary goddess to the rank of the war-god's wife. 'A soldier,' says Bardolph, 'is better accommodated than with a wife': *a fortiori*, so is a war-god. Besides, as Torquemada (vol. ii. p.47) says with perfect truth, the Mexicans did not think so grossly of the divinity as to have married gods or goddesses at all. The figure is undoubtedly a female. It has no vestige of any weapon about it, nor has it any limbs. It differs in every particular from the war-god Huitzilopochtli, every detail of which is perfectly well known. There never was any goddess called Teoyaominqui. This may be plausibly inferred from the fact that such a goddess is unknown not merely to Sahagun, Torquemada, Acosta, Tezozomoc, Duran, and Clavigero, but to all other writers except Boturini. The blunder of the last-named writer is easily explained. Antonio Leon y Gama, a Mexican astronomer, wrote an account of the discoveries of 1790, in which, evidently puzzled by the name of Teoyaominqui, he quotes a manuscript in Mexican, said to have been written by an Indian of Tezcuco, who was born in 1528, to the effect that Teoyaotlatohua and Teoyaominqui were spirits who presided over the fifteenth of the twenty signs of the fortune-tellers' calendar, and that those born in this sign would be brave warriors, but would soon die. (As the fifteenth sign was *quauhtli*, this is likely enough.) When their hour had come the former spirit scented them out, the latter killed them. The rubbish printed about Huitzilopochtli, Teoyaominqui, and Mictlantecutli in connection with this statue would fill a respectable volume. The reason why the features were duplicated is obvious. The figure was carried in the midst of a large crowd. Probably it was considered to be an evil omen if the idol turned away its face from its worshippers; this the duplicate obviated. So when the dance was performed round the figure (*cf.* Janus). This duplication of the features, a characteristic of the very oldest gods, appears to be indicated when the numeral *ome* (two) is prefixed to the title of the deity. Thus the two ancestors and preservers of the race were called Ometecuhtli and Omecihuatl (two-chief, two-woman), ancient Toltec gods, who at the conquest become less prominent in the theology of Mexico, and who are best represented in that of the Mexican colony of Nicaragua."

The Offering to Centeotl

During her last hours the victim sacrificed at the Xalaquia wore a ritual dress made from the fibres of the aloe, and with this garment the maize-god Centeotl was clothed. Robed in this he temporarily represented the earth-goddess, so that he might receive her sacrifice. The blood of victims was offered up to him in a vessel decorated with that brilliant and artistic featherwork which excited such admiration in the breasts of the connoisseurs and aesthetes of the Europe of the sixteenth century. Upon partaking of this blood-offering the deity emitted a groan so intense and terrifying that it has been left on record that such Spaniards as were present became panic-stricken. This ceremony was followed by another, the *nitiçapoloa* (tasting of the soil), which consisted in raising a little earth on one finger to the mouth and eating it.

As has been said, Centeotl the son has been confounded with Centeotl the mother, who is in reality the earth-mother Teteoinnan. Each of these deities had a teopan (temple) of his or her own, but they were closely allied as parent and child. But of the two, Centeotl the son was the more important. On the death of the sacrificed victim her skin was conveyed to the temple of Centeotl the son, and worn there in the succeeding ritual by the officiating priests. This gruesome dress is frequently depicted in the Aztec *pinturas*, where the skin of the hands, and in some instances the feet, of the victims can be seen dangling from the wrists and ankles of the priest.

Importance of the Food-Gods

To the Mexicans the deities of most importance to the community as a whole were undoubtedly the food-gods. In their emergence from the hunting to the agricultural state of life, when they began to exist almost solely upon the fruits of the earth, the Mexicans were quick to recognise that the old deities of the chase, such as Mixcoatl, could not now avail them or succour them in the same manner as the guardians of the crops and fertilisers of the soil. Gradually we see these gods, then, advance in power and influence until at the time of the Spanish invasion we find them paramount. Even the terrible war-god himself had an agricultural significance, as we have pointed out. A distinct bargain with the food-gods can be clearly traced, and is none the less obvious because it was never written or codified. The covenant was as binding to the native mind as any made betwixt god and man in ancient Palestine, and included mutual assistance as well as provision for mere alimentary supply. In no mythology is the understanding between god and man so clearly defined as in the Nahuatl, and in none is its operation better exemplified.

Xipe

Xipe (The Flayed) was widely worshipped throughout Mexico, and is usually depicted in the *pinturas* as being attired in a flayed human skin. At his special festival, the "Man-flaying," the skins were removed from the victims and worn by the devotees of the god for the succeeding twenty days. He is usually represented as of a red colour. In the later days of the Aztec monarchy the kings and leaders of Mexico assumed the dress or classical garments of Xipe. This dress consisted of a crown made of feathers of the roseate spoonbill, the gilt timbrel, the jacket of spoonbill feathers, and an apron of green feathers lapping

over one another in a tile-like pattern. In the Cozcatzin Codex we see a picture of King Axayacatl dressed as Xipe in a feather skirt, and having a tiger-skin scabbard to his sword. The hands of a flayed human skin also dangle over the monarch's wrists, and the feet fall over his feet like gaiters.

Xipe's shield is a round target covered with the rose-coloured feathers of the spoonbill, with concentric circles of a darker hue on the surface. There are examples of it divided into an upper and lower part, the former showing an emerald on a blue field, and the latter a tiger-skin design. Xipe was imagined as possessing three forms, the first that of the roseate spoon-bill, the second that of the blue cotinga, and the last that of a tiger, the three shapes perhaps corresponding to the regions of heaven, earth, and hell, or to the three elements, fire, earth, and water. The deities of many North American Indian tribes show similar variations in form and colour, which are supposed to follow as the divinity changes his dwelling to north, south, east, or west. But Xipe is seldom depicted in the pinturas in any other form but that of the red od) the form in which the Mexicans adopted him from the Yopi tribe of the Pacific slope. He is the god of human sacrifice *par excellence*, and may be regarded as a Yopi equivalent of Tezcatlipoca.

Nanaliuatl, or Nanauatzin

Nanahuatl (Poor Leper) presided over skin diseases, such as leprosy. It was thought that persons afflicted with these complaints were set apart by the moon for his service. In the Nahua tongue the words for "leprous" and "eczematous" also mean "divine." The myth of Nanahuatl tells how before the sun was created humanity dwelt in sable and horrid gloom. Only a human sacrifice could hasten the appearance of the luminary. Metztli (The Moon) led forth Nanahuatl as a sacrifice, and he was cast upon a funeral pyre, in the flames of which he was consumed. Metztli also cast herself upon the mass of flame, and with her death the sun rose above the horizon. There can be no doubt that the myth refers to the consuming of the starry or spotted night, and incidentally to the nightly death of the moon at the flaming hour of dawn.

Xolotl

Xolotl is of southern, possibly Zapotec, origin. He represents either fire rushing down from the heavens or light flaming upward. It is noticeable that in the ointuras the picture of the setting sun being devoured by the earth is nearly always placed opposite his image. He is probably identical with Nanahuatl, and appears as the representative of human sacrifice. He has also affinities with Xipe. On the whole Xolotl may be best described as a sun-god of the more southerly tribes. His head (quaxolvto was one of the most famous devices for warriors' use, as sacrifice among the Nahua was, as we have seen, closely associated with warfare.

Xolotl was a mythical figure quite foreign to the peoples of Anahuac or Mexico, who regarded him as something strange and monstrous. He is alluded to as the "God of Monstrosities, and, thinks Dr. Seler, the word "monstrosity" may suitably translate his name. He is depicted with empty eye-sockets, which circumstance is explained by the myth that when the gods determined to sacrifice themselves in order to give life and strength to the newly created sun, Xolotl withdrew, and wept so much that his eyes fell out

of their sockets. This was the Mexican explanation of a Zapotec attribute. Xolotl was originally the "Lightning Beast" of the Maya or some other southern folk, and was represented by them as a dog, since that animal appeared to them to be the creature which he most resembled. But he was by no means a "natural" dog, hence their conception of him as unnatural. Dr. Seler is inclined to identify him with the tapir, and indeed Sahagun speaks of a strange animal-being, *tlaca-xolotl*, which has "a large snout, large teeth, hoofs like an ox, a thick hide, and reddish hair"-not a bad description of the tapir of Central America. Of course to the Mexicans the god Xolotl was no longer an animal, although he had evolved from one, and was imagined by them to have the form shown in the accompanying illustration.

The Fire-God

This deity was known in Mexico under various names, notably Tata (Our Father), Huehuetēotl (Oldest of Gods), and Xiuhtecutli (Lord of the Year). He was represented as of the colour of fire, with a black face, a headdress of green feathers, and bearing on his back a yellow serpent, to typify the serpentine nature of fire. He also bore a mirror of gold to show his connection with the sun, from which all heat emanates. On rising in the morning all Mexican families made Xiuhtecutli an offering of a piece of bread and a drink. He was thus not only, like Vulcan, the god of thunderbolts and conflagrations, but also the milder deity of the domestic hearth. Once a year the fire in every Mexican house was extinguished, and rekindled by friction before the idol of Xiuhtecutli. When a Mexican baby was born it passed through a baptism of fire on the fourth day, up to which time a fire, lighted at the time of its birth, was kept burning in order to nourish its existence.

Mictlan

Mictlantecutli (Lord of Hades) was God of the Dead and of the grim and shadowy realm to which the souls of men repair after their mortal sojourn. He is represented in the *pinturas* as a grisly monster with capacious mouth, into which fall the spirits of the dead. His terrible abode was sometimes alluded to as Tlalxicco (Navel of the Earth), but the Mexicans in general seem to have thought that it was situated in the far north, which they regarded as a place of famine, desolation, and death. Here those who by the circumstances of their demise were unfitted to enter the paradise of Tlaloc-namely, those who had not been drowned or had not died a warrior's death, or, in the case of women, had not died in childbed-passed a dreary and meaningless existence. Mictlan was surrounded by a species of demons called *tzitzimimes*, and had a spouse, Mictēcāciuatl. When we come to discuss the analogous deity of the Maya we shall see that in all probability Mictlan was represented by the bat, the animal typical of the underworld. In a preceding paragraph dealing with the funerary customs we have described the journey of the soul to the abode of Mictlan, and the ordeals through which the spirit of the defunct had to pass ere entering his realm (see p. 37).

Worship of the Planet Venus

The Mexicans designated the planet Venus Citlalpol (The Great Star) and Tlauizcalpantecutli (Lord of the Dawn). It seems to have been the only star worshipped by them, and was regarded with considerable veneration. Upon its rising they stopped up the chimneys of their houses, so that no harm of any kind might enter with its light. A column called Ilhuicatlan, meaning "In the Sky," stood in the court of the great temple of Mexico, and upon this a symbol of the planet was painted. On its reappearance during its usual circuit, captives were taken before this representation and sacrificed to it. It will be remembered that the myth of Quetzalcoatl states that the heart of that deity flew upward from the funeral pyre on which he was consumed and became the planet Venus. It is not easy to say whether or not this myth is anterior to the adoption of the worship of the planet by the Nahua, for it may be a tale of pre- or post-Nahuan growth. In the *tonalamatl* Tlauizcalpantecutli is represented as lord of the ninth division of thirteen days, beginning with Ce Coatl (the sign of "One Serpent"). In several of the *pinturas* he is represented as having a white body with long red stripes, while round his eyes is a deep black painting like a domino mask, bordered with small white circles. His lips are a bright vermilion. The red stripes are probably introduced to accentuate the whiteness of his body, which is understood to symbolise the peculiar half-light which emanates from the planet. The black paint on the face, surrounding the eye, typifies the dark sky of night. In Mexican and Central American symbolism the eye often represents light, and here, surrounded by blackness as it is, it is perhaps almost hieroglyphic. As the star of evening, Tlauizcalpantecutli is some times shown with the face of a skull, to signify his descent into the underworld, whither he follows the sun. That the Mexicans and Maya carefully and accurately observed his periods of revolution is witnessed by the *pinturas*.

Sun-Worship

The sun was regarded by the Nahua, and indeed by all the Mexican and Central American peoples, as the supreme deity, or rather the principal source of subsistence and life. He was always alluded to as *the teotl*, *the god*, and his worship formed as it were a background to that of all the other gods. His Mexican name, Ipalnemohuani (He by whom Men Live) shows that the Mexicans regarded him as the primal source of being, and the heart, the symbol of life, was looked upon as his special sacrifice. Those who rose at sunrise to prepare food for the day held up to him on his appearance the hearts of animals they had slain for cooking, and even the hearts of the victims to Tezcatlipoca and Huitzilopochtli were first held up to the sun, as if he had a primary right to the sacrifice, before being cast into the bowl of copal which lay at the feet of the idol. It was supposed that the luminary rejoiced in offerings of blood, and that it constituted the only food which would render him sufficiently vigorous to undertake his daily journey through the heavens. He is often depicted in the *pinturas* as licking up the gore of the sacrificial victims with his long tongue-like rays. The sun must fare well if he was to continue to give life) light, and heat to mankind.

The Mexicans, as we have already seen, believed that the luminary they knew had been preceded by others, each of which had been quenched by some awful cataclysm of nature. Eternity had, in fact, been broken up into epochs, marked by the destruction of successive suns. In the period preceding that in which they lived, a mighty deluge had deprived the sun of life, and some such catastrophe was apprehended at the end of every "sheaf" of fifty-two years. The old suns were dead, and the current sun was no more immortal than they. At the end of one of the "sheaves" he too would succumb.

Sustaining the Sun

It was therefore necessary to sustain the sun by the daily food of human sacrifice, for by a tithe of human life alone would he be satisfied. Naturally a people holding such a belief would look elsewhere than within their own borders for the material wherewith to placate their deity. This could be most suitably found among the inhabitants of a neighbouring state. It thus became the business of the warrior class in the Aztec state to furnish forth the altars of the gods with human victims. The most suitable district of supply was the pueblo of Tlaxcallan, or Tlascala, the people of which were of cognate origin to the Aztecs. The communities had, although related, been separated for so many generations that they had begun to regard each other as traditional enemies, and on a given day in the year their forces met at an appointed spot for the purpose of engaging in a strife which should furnish one side or the other with a sufficiency of victims for the purpose of sacrifice. The warrior who captured the largest number of opponents alive was regarded as the champion of the day, and was awarded the chief honours of the combat. The sun was therefore the god of warriors, as he would give them victory in battle in order that they might supply him with food. The rites of this military worship of the luminary were held in the Quauhquauhtinchan (House of the Eagles), an armoury set apart for the regiment of that name. On March 17 and December 1 and 2, at the ceremonies known as Nauhollin (The Four Motions-alluding to the quivering appearance of the sun's rays), the warriors gathered in this hall for the purpose of despatching a messenger to their lord the sun. High up on the wall of the principal court was a great symbolic representation of the orb, painted upon a bright coloured cotton hanging. Before this copal and other Irragrant gums and spices were burned four times a day. The victim, a war-captive, was placed at the foot of a long staircase leading up to the Quauhxicalli (Cup of the Eagles), the name of the stone on which he was to be sacrificed. He was clothed in red striped with white and wore white plumes in his hair-colours symbolical of the sun-while he bore a staff decorated with feathers and a shield covered with tufts of cotton. He also carried a bundle of eagle's feathers and some paint on his shoulders, to enable the sun, to whom he was the emissary, to paint his face. He was then addressed by the officiating priest in the following terms: "Sir, we pray you go to our god the sun, and greet him on our behalf; tell him that his sons and warriors and chiefs and those who remain here beg of him to remember them and to favour them from that place where he is, and to receive this small offering which we send him. Give him this staff to help him on his journey, and this shield for his defence, and all the rest that you have in this bundle." The victim, having undertaken to carry the message to the sun-god, was then despatched upon his long journey.

A Quauhxicalli is preserved in the National Museum of Mexico. It consists of a basaltic mass, circular in form, on which are shown in sculpture a series of groups representing Mexican warriors receiving the submission of war-captives. The prisoner tenders a flower to his captor, symbolical of the life he is about to offer up, for lives were the "flowers" offered to the gods, and the campaign in which these "blossoms" were captured was called Xochiyayotl (The War of Flowers). The warriors who receive the submission of the captives are represented in the act of tearing the plumes from their heads. These bas-reliefs occupy the sides of the stone. The face of it is covered by a great solar disc having eight rays, and the surface is hollowed out in the middle to form a receptacle for blood-the "cup" alluded to in the name of the stone. The Quauhxicalli must not be confounded with the *temalacatl* (spindle stone), to which the alien warrior

who received a chance of life was secured. The gladiatorial combat gave the war-captive an opportunity to escape through superior address in arms. The *temalacatl* was somewhat higher than a man, and was provided with a platform at the top, in the middle of which was placed a great stone with a hole in it through which a rope was passed. To this the war-captive was secured, and if he could vanquish seven of his captors he was released. If he failed to do so he was at once sacrificed.

A Mexican Valhalla

The Mexican warriors believed that they continued in the service of the sun after death, and, like the Scandinavian heroes in Valhalla, that they were admitted to the dwelling of the god, where they shared all the delights of his diurnal round. The Mexican warrior dreaded to die in his bed, and craved an end on the field of battle. This explains the desperate nature of their resistance to the Spaniards under Cortés, whose officers stated that the Mexicans seemed to desire to die fighting. After death they believed that they would partake of the cannibal feasts offered up to the sun and imbibe the juice of flowers.

The Feast of Totec

The chief of the festivals to the sun was that held in spring at the vernal equinox, before the representation of a deity known as Totec (Our Great Chief). Although Totec was a solar deity he had been adopted from the people of an alien state, the Zapotecs of Zalisco, and is therefore scarcely to be regarded as the principal sun-god. His festival was celebrated by the symbolical slaughter of all the other gods for the purpose of providing sustenance to the sun, each of the gods being figuratively slain in the person of a victim. Totec was attired in the same manner as the warrior despatched twice a year to assure the sun of the loyalty of the Mexicans. The festival appears to have been primarily a seasonal one, as bunches of dried maize were offered to Totec. But its larger meaning is obvious. It was, indeed, a commemoration of the creation of the sun. This is proved by the description of the image of Totec, which was robed and equipped as the solar traveller, by the solar disc and tables of the sun's progress carved on the altar employed in the ceremony, and by the robes of the victims, who were dressed to represent dwellers in the sun-god's halls. Perhaps Totec, although of alien origin, was the only deity possessed by the Mexicans who directly represented the sun. As a borrowed god he would have but a minor position in the Mexican pantheon, but again as the only sun-god whom it was necessary to bring into prominence during a strictly solar festival he would be for the time, of course, a very important deity indeed.

Tepeyollotl

Tepeyollotl means Heart of the Mountain, and evidently alludes to a deity whom the Nahua connected with seismic disturbances and earthquakes. By the interpreter of the Codex Telleriano-Remensis he is called Tepeolotlec, an obvious distortion of his real name. The interpreter of the codex states that his name "refers to the condition of the earth after the flood. The sacrifices of these thirteen days were not good, and the literal translation of their name is 'dirt sacrifices.' They caused palsy and bad humours. . . .

This Tepeolotlec was lord of these thirteen days. In them were celebrated the feast to the Jaguar, and the last four preceding days were days of fasting. . . . Tepeolotlec means the 'Lord of Beasts.' The four feast days were in honour of the Suchiquezal, who was the man that remained behind on the earth upon which we now live. This Tepeolotlec was the same as the echo of the voice when it re-echoes in a valley from one mountain to another. This name 'jaguar' is given to the earth because the jaguar is the boldest animal, and the echo which the voice awakens in the mountains is a survival of the flood, it is said."

From this we can see that Tepeyollotl is a deity of the earth pure and simple, a god of desert places. It is certain that he was not a Mexican god, or at least was not of Nahua origin, as he is mentioned by none of those writers who deal with Nahua traditions, and we must look for him among the Mixtecs and Zapotecs.

Macuilxochitl, or Xochipilli

This deity, whose names mean Five-Flower and Source of Flowers, was regarded as the patron of luck in gaming. He may have been adopted by the Nahua from the Zapotecs, but the converse may be equally true. The Zapotecs represented him with a design resembling a butterfly about the mouth, and a manycoloured face which looks out of the open jaws of a bird with a tall and erect crest. The worship of this god appears to have been very widespread. Sahagun says of him that a *fête* was held in his honour, which was preceded by a rigorous fast. The people covered themselves with ornaments and jewels symbolic of the deity, as if they desired to represent him, and dancing and singing roceeded gaily to the sound of the drum. Offerings of the blood of various animals followed, and specially prepared cakes were submitted to the god. This simple fare, however, was later followed by human sacrifices, rendered by the notables, who brought certain of their slaves for immolation. This completed the festival.

Father and Mother Gods

The Nahua believed that Ometecutli and Omeciuatl were the father and mother of the human species. The names signify Lords of Duality or Lords of the Two Sexes. They were also called Tonacatecutli and Tonacaciuatl (Lord and Lady of Our Flesh, or of Subsistence). They were in fact regarded as the sexual essence of the creative deity, or perhaps more correctly of deity in general. They occupied the first place in the Nahua calendar, to signify that they had existed from the beginning, and they are usually represented as being clothed in rich attire. Ometecutli (a literal translation of his name is Two-Lord) is sometimes identified with the sky and the fire-god, the female deity representing the earth or water-conceptions similar to those respecting Kronos and Gæa. We refer again to these supreme divinities in the following chapter (see p. 118).

The Pulque-Gods

When a man was intoxicated with the native Mexican drink of *pulque*, a liquor made from the juice of the *Agave Americana*, he was believed to be under the influence of a god or spirit. The commonest form

under which the drink-god was worshipped was the rabbit, that animal being considered to be utterly devoid of sense. This particular divinity was known as Ometochtli. The scale of debauchery which it was desired to reach was indicated by the number of rabbits worshipped, the highest number, four hundred, representing the most extreme degree of intoxication. The chief *pulque*-gods apart from these were Patecatl and Tequechmecauiani. If the drunkard desired to escape the perils of accidental hanging during intoxication, it was necessary to sacrifice to the latter, but if death by drowning was apprehended Teatlahuiani, the deity who harried drunkards to a watery grave, was placated. If the debauchee wished his punishment not to exceed a headache, Quatlapanqui (The Head-splitter) was sacrificed to, or else Papaztac (The Nerveless). Each trade or profession had its own Ometochtli, but for the aristocracy there was only one of these gods, Cohuatzincatl, a name signifying "He who has Grandparents." Several of these drink-gods had names which connected them with various localities; for example, Tepoxtecatl was the *pulque*-god of Tepoztlan. The calendar day Ometochtli, which means "Two-Rabbit," because of the symbol which accompanied it, was under the special protection of these gods, and the Mexicans believed that any one born on that day was almost inevitably doomed to become a drunkard. All the *pulque*-gods were closely associated with the soil, and with the earth-goddess. They wore the golden Huastec nose-ornament, the yaca-metztlī, of crescent shape, which characterised the latter, and indeed this ornament was inscribed upon all articles sacred to the *pulque*-gods. Their faces were painted red and black, as were objects consecrated to them, their blankets and shields. After the Indians had harvested their maize they drank to intoxication, and invoked one or other of these gods. On the whole it is safe to infer that they were originally deities of local husbandry who imparted virtue to the soil as *pulque* imparted strength and courage to the warrior. The accompanying sketch of the god Tepoxtecatl (see p. 117) well illustrates the distinguishing characteristics of the *pulque*-god class. Here we can observe the face painted in two colours, the crescent-shaped nose-ornament, the bicoloured shield, the long necklace made from the *malinalli* herb, and the ear-pendants.

It is of course clear that the drink-gods were of the same class as the food-gods-patrons of the fruitful soil-but it is strange that they should be male whilst the food-gods are mostly female.

The Goddesses of Mexico: Metztli

Metztli, or Yohualticitl (The Lady of Night), was the Mexican goddess of the moon. She had in reality two phases, one that of a beneficent protectress of harvests and promoter of growth in general, and the other that of a bringer of dampness, cold, and miasmatic airs ghosts, mysterious shapes of the dim half-light of night and its oppressive silence.

To a people in the agricultural stage of civilisation the moon appears as the great recorder of harvests. But she has also supremacy over water, which is always connected by primitive peoples with the moon. Citatli (Moon) and Atl (Water) are constantly confounded in Nahua myth, and in many ways their characteristics were blended. It was Metztli who led forth Nanahuatl the Leprous to the pyre whereon he perished-a reference to the dawn, in which the starry sky of night is consumed in the fires of the rising sun.

Tlazolteotl

Tlazolteotl (God of Ordure), or Tlaelquani (Filth-eater), was called by the Mexicans the earth-goddess because she was the eradicator of sins, to whose priests the people went to make confession so that they might be absolved from their misdeeds. Sin was symbolised by the Mexicans as excrement. Confession covered only the sins of immorality. But if Tlazolteotl was the goddess of confession, she was also the patroness of desire and luxury. It was, however, as a deity whose chief office was the eradication of human sin that she was pre-eminent. The process by which this was supposed to be effected is quaintly described by Sahagun in the twelfth chapter of his first book. The penitent addressed the confessor as follows: "Sir, I desire to approach that most powerful god, the protector of all, that is to say, Tezcatlipoca. I desire to tell him my sins in secret." The confessor replied: "Be happy, my son: that which thou wishest to do will be to thy good and advantage." The confessor then opened the divinatory book known as the Tonalamatl (that is, the Book of the Calendar) and acquainted the applicant with the day which appeared the most suitable for his confession. The day having arrived, the penitent provided himself with a mat, copal gum to burn as incense, and wood whereon to burn it. If he was a person high in office the priest repaired to his house, but in the case of lesser people the confession took place in the dwelling of the priest. Having lighted the fire and burned the incense, the penitent addressed the fire in the following terms: "Thou, lord, who art the father and mother of the gods, and the most ancient of them all, thy servant, thy slave bows before thee. Weeping, he approaches thee in great distress. He comes plunged in grief, because he has been buried in sin, having backslidden, and partaken of those vices and evil delights which merit death. O master most compassionate, who art the upholder and defence of all, receive the penitence and anguish of thy slave and vassal."

This prayer having concluded, the confessor then turned to the penitent and thus addressed him: "My son, thou art come into the presence of that god who is the protector and upholder of all; thou art come to him to confess thy evil vices and thy hidden uncleannesses; thou art come to him to unbosom the secrets of thy heart. Take care that thou omit nothing from the catalogue of thy sins in the presence of our lord who is called Tczcatlipoca. It is certain that thou art before him who is invisible and impalpable, thou who art not worthy to be seen before him, or to speak with him. . . ."

The allusions to Tczcatlipoca are, of course, to him in the shape of Tlazolteotl. Having listened to a sermon by the confessor, the penitent then confessed his misdeeds, after which the confessor said: "My son, thou hast before our lord god confessed in his presence thy evil actions. I wish to say in his name that thou hast an obligation to make. At the time when the goddesses called Ciuapipiltin descend to earth during the celebration of the feast of the goddesses of carnal things, whom they name Ixcuinamc, thou shalt fast during four days, punishing thy stomach and thy mouth. When the day of the feast of the Ixcuinamc arrives thou shalt scarify thy tongue with the small thorns of the osier [called *teocaleacatl* or *tlazotl*], and if that is not sufficient thou shalt do likewise to thine ears, the whole for penitence, for the remission of thy sin, and as a meritorious act. Thou wilt apply to thy tongue the middle of a spine of magucy, and thou wilt scarify thy shoulders. That done, thy sins will be pardoned."

If the sins of the penitent were not very grave the priest would enjoin upon him a fast of more or less

prolonged nature. Only old men confessed crimes *in veneribus*, as the punishment for such was death, and younger men had no desire to risk the penalty involved, although the priests were enjoined to strict secrecy.

Father Burgoa describes very fully a ceremony of this kind which came under his notice in 1652 in the Zapotec village of San Francisco de Cajonos. He encountered on a tour of inspection an old native *cacique*, or chief, of great refinement of manners and of a stately presence, who dressed in costly garments after the Spanish fashion, and who was regarded by the Indians with much veneration. This man came to the priest for the purpose of reporting upon the progress in things spiritual and temporal in his village. Burgoa recognised his urbanity and wonderful command of the Spanish language, but perceived by certain signs that he had been taught to look for by long experience that the man was a pagan. He communicated his suspicions to the vicar of the village, but met with such assurances of the *cacique's* soundness of faith that he believed himself to be in error for once. Shortly afterwards, however, a wandering Spaniard perceived the chief in a retired place in the mountains performing idolatrous ceremonies, and aroused the monks, two of whom accompanied him to the spot where the *cacique* had been seen indulging in his heathenish practices. They found on the altar "feathers of many colours, sprinkled with blood which the Indians had drawn from the veins under their tongues and behind their ears, incense spoons and remains of copal, and in the middle a horrible stone figure, which was the god to whom they had offered this sacrifice in expiation of their sins, while they made their confessions to the blasphemous priests, and cast off their sins in the following manner: they had woven a kind of dish out of a strong herb, specially gathered for this purpose, and casting this before the priest, said to him that they came to beg mercy of their god, and pardon for their sins that they had committed during that year, and that they brought them all carefully enumerated. They then drew out of a cloth pairs of thin threads made of dry maize husks, that they had tied two by two in the middle with a knot, by which they represented their sins. They laid these threads on the dishes of grass, and over them pierced their veins, and let the blood trickle upon them, and the priest took these offerings to the idol, and in a long speech he begged the god to forgive these, his sons, their sins which were brought to him, and to permit them to be joyful and hold feasts to him as their god and lord. Then the priest came back to those who had confessed, delivered a long discourse on the ceremonies they had still to perform, and told them that the god had pardoned them and that they might be glad again and sin anew."

Chalchihuitlicue

This goddess was the wife of Tlaloc, the god of rain and moisture. The name means Lady of the Emerald Robe, in allusion to the colour of the element over which the deity partly presided. She was specially worshipped by the water-carriers of Mexico, and all those whose avocation brought them into contact with water. Her costume was peculiar and interesting. Round her neck she wore a wonderful collar of precious stones, from which hung a gold pendant. She was crowned with a coronet of blue paper, decorated with green feathers. Her eyebrows were of turquoise, set in as mosaic, and her garment was a nebulous blue-green in hue, recalling the tint of seawater in the tropics. The resemblance was heightened by a border of sea-flowers or water-plants, one of which she also carried in her left hand, whilst in her right she bore a vase surmounted by a cross, emblematic of the four points of the compass whence comes

the rain.

Mixcoatl

Mixcoatl was the Aztec god of the chase, and was probably a deity of the Otomi aborigines of Mexico. The name means Cloud Serpent, and this originated the idea that Mixcoatl was a representation of the tropical whirlwind. This is scarcely correct, however, as the hunter-god is identified with the tempest and thunder-cloud, and the lightning is supposed to represent his arrows. Like many other gods of the chase, he is figured as having the characteristics of a deer or rabbit. He is usually depicted as carrying a sheaf of arrows, to typify thunderbolts. It may be that Mixcoatl was an air and thunder deity of the Otomi, older in origin than either Quetzalcoatl or Tezcatlipoca, and that his inclusion in the Nahua pantheon becoming necessary in order to quieten Nahua susceptibilities, he received the status of god of the chase. But, on the other hand, the Mexicans, unlike the Peruvians, who adopted many foreign gods for political purposes, had little regard for the feelings of other races, and only accepted an alien deity into the native circle for some good reason, most probably because they noted the omission of the figure in their own divine system. Or, again, dread of a certain foreign god might force them to adopt him as their own in the hope of placating him. Their worship of Quetzalcoatl is perhaps an instance of this.

Camaxtli

This deity was the war-god of the Tlascalans, who were constantly in opposition to the Aztecs of Mexico. He was to the warriors of Tlascala practically what Huitzilopochtli was to those of Mexico. He was closely identified with Mixcoatl, and with the god of the morning star, whose colours are depicted on his face and body. But in all probability Camaxtli was a god of the chase, who in later times was adopted as a god of war because of his possession of the lightning dart, the symbol of divine warlike prowess. In the mythologies of North America we find similar hunter-gods, who sometimes evolve into gods of war for a like reason, and again gods of the chase who have all the appearance and attributes of the creatures hunted.

Ixtlilton

Ixtlilton (The Little Black One) was the Mexican god of medicine and healing, and therefore was often alluded to as the brother of Macuilxochitl, the god of well-being or good luck. From the account of the general appearance of his temple-in edifice of painted boards-it would seem to have evolved from the primitive tent or lodge of the medicine-man, or *shaman*. It contained several water-jars called *tlilatl* (black water), the contents of which were administered to children in bad health. The parents of children who benefited from the treatment bestowed a feast on the deity, whose idol was carried to the residence of the grateful father, where ceremonial dances and oblations were made before it. It was then thought that Ixtlilton descended to the courtyard to open fresh jars of *pulque* liquor provided for the feasters, and the entertainment concluded by an examination by the Aztec Æsculapius of such of the *pulque* jars dedicated

to his service as stood in the courtyard for everyday use. Should these be found in an unclean condition, it was understood that the master of the house was a man of evil life, and he was presented by the priest with a mask to hide his face from his scoffing friends.

Omacatl

Omacatl was the Mexican god of festivity and joy. The name signifies Two Reeds. He was worshipped chiefly by bon-vivants and the rich, who celebrated him in splendid feasts and orgies. The idol of the deity was invariably placed in the chamber where these functions were to take place, and the Aztecs were known to regard it as a heinous offence if anything derogatory to the god were performed during the convivial ceremony, or if any omission were made from the prescribed form which these gatherings usually took. It was thought that if the host had been in any way remiss Omacatl would appear to the startled guests, and in tones of great severity upbraid him who had given the feast, intimating that he would regard him no longer as a worshipper and would henceforth abandon him. A terrible malady, the symptoms of which were akin to those of falling-sickness, would shortly afterwards seize the guests; but as such symptoms are not unlike those connected with acute indigestion and other gastric troubles, it is probable that the gourmets who paid homage to the god of good cheer may have been suffering from a too strenuous instead of a lukewarm worship of him. But the idea of communion which underlay so many of the Mexican rites undoubtedly entered into the worship of Omacatl, for prior to a banquet in his honour those who took part in it formed a great bone out of maize paste, pretending that it was one of the bones of the deity whose merry rites they were about to engage in. This they devoured, washing it down with great draughts of *pulque*. The idol of Omacatl was provided with a recess in the region of the stomach, and into this provisions were stuffed. He was represented as a squatting figure, painted black and white, crowned with a paper coronet, and hung with coloured paper. A flower-fringed cloak and sceptre were the other symbols of royalty worn by this Mexican Dionysus.

Opochtli

Opochtli (The Left-handed) was the god sacred to fishers and bird-catchers. At one period of Aztec history he must have been a deity of considerable consequence, since for generations the Aztecs were marsh-dwellers and depended for their daily food on the fish netted in the lakes and the birds snared in the reeds. They credited the god with the invention of the harpoon or trident for spearing fish and the fishing-rod and bird-net. The fishermen and bird-catchers of Mexico held on occasion a special feast in honour of Opochtli, at which a certain liquor called *octli* was consumed. A procession was afterwards formed, in which marched old people who had dedicated themselves to the worship of the god, probably because they could obtain no other means of subsistence than that afforded by the vocation of which he was tutelar and patron. He was represented, as a man painted black, his head decorated with the plumes of native wild birds, and crowned by a paper coronet in the shape of a rose. He was clad in green paper which fell to the knee, and was shod with white sandals. In his left hand he held a shield painted red, having in the centre a white flower with four petals placed crosswise, and in his right hand he held a sceptre in the form of a cup.

Yacatecutli

Yacatecutli was the patron of travellers of the merchant class, who worshipped him by piling their staves together and sprinkling on the heap blood from their noses and ears. The staff of the traveller was his symbol, to which prayer was made and offerings of flowers and incense tendered.

The Aztec Priesthood

The Aztec priesthood was a hierarchy in whose hands resided a goodly portion of the power of the upper classes especially that connected with education and endowment. The mere fact that its members possessed the power of selecting victims for sacrifice must have been sufficient to place them in an almost unassailable position, and their prophetic utterances, founded upon the art of divination-so great a feature in the life of the Aztec people, who depended upon it from the cradle to the grave-probably assisted them in maintaining their hold upon the popular imagination. But withal the evidence of unbiased Spanish ecclesiastics, such as Sahagun, tends to show that they utilised their influence for good, and soundly instructed the people under their charge in the cardinal virtues; "in short," says the venerable friar, "to perform the duties plainly pointed out by natural religion."

Priestly Revenues

The establishment of the national religion was, as in the case of the mediæval Church in Europe, based upon a land tenure from which the priestly class derived a substantial though, considering their numbers, by no means inordinate revenue. The principal temples possessed lands which sufficed for the maintenance of the priests attached to them. There was, besides, a system of first-fruits fixed by law for the priesthood, the surplusage therefrom being distributed among the poor.

Education

Education was entirely conducted by the priesthood, which undertook the task in a manner highly creditable to it, when consideration is given to surrounding conditions. Education was, indeed, highly organised. It was divided into primary and secondary grades. Boys were instructed by priests, girls by holy women or "nuns." The secondary schools were called *calmecac*, and were devoted to the higher branches of education, the curriculum including the deciphering of the *pinturas*, or manuscripts, astrology and divination, with a wealth of religious instruction.

Orders of the Priesthood

At the head of the Aztec priesthood stood the Mexicatl Teohuatzin (Mexican Lord of Divine Matters). He

had a seat on the emperor's council, and possessed power which was second only to the royal authority. Next in rank to him was the highpriest of Quetzalcoatl, who dwelt in almost entire seclusion, and who had authority over his own caste only. This office was in all probability a relic from "Toltec" times. The priests of Quetzalcoatl were called by name after their tutelar deity. The lesser grades included the Tlenamacac (Ordinary Priests), who were habited in black, and wore their hair long, covering it with a kind of mantilla. The lowest order was that of the Lamacazton (Little Priests), youths who were graduating in the priestly office.

An Exacting Ritual

The priesthood enjoyed no easy existence, but led an austere life of fasting, penance, and prayer, with constant observance of an arduous and exacting ritual, which embraced sacrifice, the upkeep of perpetual fires, the chanting of holy songs to the gods, dances, and the superintendence of the ever-recurring festivals. They were required to rise during the night to render praise, and to maintain themselves in a condition of absolute cleanliness by means of constant ablutions. We have seen that blood-offering-the substitution of the part for the whole-was a common method of sacrifice, and in this the priests engaged personally on frequent occasions. If the caste did not spare the people it certainly did not spare itself, and its outlook was perhaps only a shade more gloomy and fanatical than that of the Spanish hierarchy which succeeded it in the land.

[Next: CHAPTER III: Myths and Legends of the Ancient Mexicans](#)

CHAPTER III: Myths and Legends of the Ancient Mexicans

The Mexican Idea of the Creation

"IN the year and in the day of the clouds," writes Garcia in his *Origin de los Indias*, professing to furnish the reader with a translation of an original Mixtec picture-manuscript, "before ever were years or days, the world lay in darkness. All things were orderless, and a water covered the slime and ooze that the earth then was." This picture is common to almost all American creation-stories. [See the author's article on "American Creation-Myths" in the *Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics*, vol. iv.] The red man in general believed the habitable globe to have been created from the slime which arose above the primeval waters, and there can be no doubt that the Nahua shared this belief. We encounter in Nahua myth two beings of a bisexual nature, known to the Aztecs as Ometecutli-Omeciuatl (Lords of Duality), who were represented as the deities dominating the genesis of things, the beginning of the world. We have already become acquainted with them in Chapter II (see p. 104), but we may recapitulate. These beings, whose individual names were Tonacatecutli and Tonacaciuatl (Lord and Lady of our Flesh), occupy the first place in the calendar, a circumstance which makes it plain that they were regarded as responsible for the origin of all created things. They were invariably represented as being clothed in rich, variegated garments, symbolical of light. Tonacatecutli, the male principle of creation or world-generation, is often identified with the sun- or fire-god, but there is no reason to consider him as symbolical of anything but the sky. The firmament is almost universally regarded by American aboriginal peoples as the male principle of the cosmos, in contradistinction to the earth, which they think of as possessing feminine attributes, and which is undoubtedly personified in this instance by Tonacaciuatl.

In North American Indian myths we find the Father Sky brooding upon the Mother Earth, just as in early Greek creation-story we see the elements uniting, the firmament impregnating the soil and rendering it fruitful. To the savage mind the growth of crops and vegetation proceeds as much from the sky as from the earth. Untutored man beholds the fecundation of the soil by rain, and, seeing in everything the expression of an individual and personal impulse, regards the genesis of vegetable growth as analogous to human origin. To him, then, the sky is the life-giving male principle, the fertilising seed of which descends in rain. The earth is the receptive element which hatches that with which the sky has impregnated her.

Ixtlilxochitl's Legend of the Creation

One of the most complete creation-stories in Mexican mythology is that given by the half-blood Indian

author Ixtlilxochitl, who, we cannot doubt, received it directly from native sources. He states that the Toltecs credited a certain Tloque Nahuaque (Lord of All Existence) with the creation of the universe, the stars, mountains, and animals. At the same time he made the first man and woman, from whom all the inhabitants of the earth are descended. This "first earth" was destroyed by the "water-sun." At the commencement of the next epoch the Toltecs appeared, and after many wanderings settled in Huehue Tlapallan (Very Old Tlapallan). Then followed the second catastrophe, that of the "wind-sun." The remainder of the legend recounts how mighty earthquakes shook the world and destroyed the earth-giants. These earth-giants (Quinames) were analogous to the Greek Titans, and were a source of great uneasiness to the Toltecs. In the opinion of the old historians they were descended from the races who inhabited the more northerly portion of Mexico.

Creation-Story of the Mixtecs

It will be well to return for a moment to the creation story of the Mixtecs, which, if emanating from a somewhat isolated people in the extreme south of the Mexican Empire, at least affords us a vivid picture of what a folk closely related to the Nahua race regarded as a veritable account of the creative process. When the earth had arisen from the primeval waters, one day the deer-god, who bore the surname Puma-Snake, and the beautiful deer-goddess, or Jaguar-Snake, appeared. They had human form, and with their great knowledge (that is, with their magic) they raised a high cliff over the water, and built on it fine palaces for their dwelling. On the summit of this cliff they laid a copper axe with the edge upward, and on this edge the heavens rested. The palaces stood in Upper Mixteca, close to Apoala, and the cliff was called Place where the Heavens Stood. The gods lived happily together for many centuries, when it chanced that two little boys were born to them, beautiful of form and skilled and experienced in the arts. From the days of their birth they were named Wind-Nine-Snake (Viento de Neuve Culebras) and Wind-Nine-Cave (Viento de Neuve Cavernas). Much care was given to their education, and they possessed the knowledge of how to change themselves into an eagle or a snake, to make themselves invisible, and even to pass through solid bodies.

After a time these youthful gods decided to make an offering and a sacrifice to their ancestors. Taking incense vessels made of clay, they filled them with tobacco, to which they set fire, allowing it to smoulder. The smoke rose heavenward, and that was the first offering (to the gods). Then they made a garden with shrubs and flowers, trees and fruit-bearing plants, and sweet-scented herbs. Adjoining this they made a grass-grown level place (*un prado*), and equipped it with everything necessary for sacrifice. The pious brothers lived contentedly on this piece of ground, tilled it, burned tobacco, and with prayers, vows, and promises they supplicated their ancestors to let the light appear, to let the water collect in certain places and the earth be freed from its covering (water), for they had no more than that little garden for their subsistence. In order to strengthen their prayer they pierced their ears and their tongues with pointed knives of flint, and sprinkled the blood on the trees and plants with a brush of willow twigs.

The deer-gods had more sons and daughters, but there came a flood in which many of these perished. After the catastrophe was over the god who is called the Creator of All Things formed the heavens and the earth, and restored the human race.

Zapotec Creation Myth

Among the Zapotecs, a people related to the Mixtecs, we find a similar conception of the creative process. Cozaana is mentioned as the creator and maker of all beasts in the valuable Zapotec dictionary of Father Juan de Cordova, and Huichaana as the creator of men and fishes. Thus we have two separate creations for men and animals. Cozaana would appear to apply to the sun as the creator of all beasts, but, strangely enough, is alluded to in Cordova's dictionary as "procreatrix," whilst he is undoubtedly a male deity. Huichaana, the creator of men and fishes, is, on the other hand, alluded to as "water," or "the element of water, and "goddess of generation." She is certainly the Zapotec female part of the creative agency. In the Mixtec creation-myth we can see the actual creator and the first pair of tribal gods, who were also considered the progenitors of animals-to the savage equal inhabitants of the world with himself. The names of the brothers Nine-Snake and Nine-Cave undoubtedly allude to light and darkness, day and night. It may be that these deities are the same as Quetzalcoatl and Xolotl (the latter a Zapotec deity), who were regarded as twins. In some ways Quetzalcoatl was looked upon as a creator, and in the Mexican calendar followed the Father and Mother, or original sexual deities, being placed in the second section as the creator of the world and man.

The Mexican Noah

Flood-myths, curiously enough, are of more common occurrence among the Nahua and kindred peoples than creation-myths. The Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg has translated one from the Codex Chimalpopoca, a work in Nahuatl dating from the latter part of the sixteenth century. It recounts the doings of the Mexican Noah and his wife as follows:

"And this year was that of Ce-calli, and on the first day all was lost. The mountain itself was submerged in the water, and the water remained tranquil for fifty-two springs.

"Now toward the close of the year Titlacahuan had forewarned the man named Nata and his wife Nena, saying, 'Make no more *pulque*, but straightway hollow out a large cypress, and enter it when in the month Tozotli the water shall approach the sky.' They entered it, and when Titlacahuan had closed the door he said, 'Thou shalt eat but a single ear of maize) and thy wife but one also.'

"As soon as they had finished eating, they went forth, and the water was tranquil; for the log did not move any more; and opening it they saw many fish.

"Then they built a fire, rubbing together pieces of wood, and they roasted fish. The gods Citallinicue and Citallatonac, looking below, exclaimed, 'Divine Lord, what means that fire below? Why do they thus smoke the heavens?'

"Straightway descended Titlacahuan-Tezcatlipoca, and commenced to scold, saying, 'What is this fire

doing here?' And seizing the fishes he moulded their hinder parts and changed their heads, and they were at once transformed into dogs."

The Myth of the Seven Caverns

But other legends apart from the creation-stories of the world pure and simple deal with the origin of mankind. The Aztecs believed that the first men emerged from a place known as Chicomoztoc (The Seven Caverns), located north of Mexico. Various writers have seen in these mythic recesses the fabulous "seven cities of Cibola" and the Casas Grandes, ruins of extensive character in the valley of the river Gila, and so forth. But the allusion to the magical number seven in the myth demonstrates that the entire story is purely imaginary and possesses no basis of fact. A similar story occurs among the myths of the Kiche of Guatemala and the Peruvians.

The Sacrificed Princess

Coming to semi-historical times, we find a variety of legends connected with the early story of the city of Mexico. These for the most part are of a weird and gloomy character, and throw much light on the dark fanaticism of a people which could immolate its children on the altars of implacable gods. It is told how after the Aztecs had built the city of Mexico they raised an altar to their war-god Huitzilopochtli. In general the lives rendered to this most sanguinary of deities were those of prisoners of war, but in times of public calamity he demanded the sacrifice of the noblest in the land. On one occasion his oracle required that a royal princess should be offered on the high altar. The Aztec king, either possessing no daughters of his own or hesitating to sacrifice them, sent an embassy to the monarch of Colhuacan to ask for one of his daughters to become the symbolical mother of Huitzilopochtli. The King of Colhuacan, suspecting nothing amiss, and highly flattered at the distinction, delivered up the girl, who was escorted to Mexico, where she was sacrificed with much pomp, her skin being flayed off to clothe the priest who represented the deity in the festival. The unhappy father was invited to this hideous orgy, ostensibly to witness his daughter's deification. In the gloomy chambers of the war-god's temple he was at first unable to mark the trend of the horrid ritual. But, given a torch of copal-gum, he saw the officiating priest clothed in his daughter's skin, receiving the homage of the worshippers. Recognising her features, and demented with grief and horror, he fled from the temple, a broken man, to spend the remainder of his days in mourning for his murdered child.

The Fugitive Prince

One turns with relief from such a sanguinary tale to the consideration of the pleasing semi-legendary accounts of Ixtlilxochitl regarding the civilisation of Tezcuco, Mexico's neighbour and ally. We have seen in the sketch of Nahua history which has been given how the Tecpanecs overcame the Acolhuans of Tezcuco and slew their king about the year 108. Nezahualcoyotl (Fasting Coyote), the heir to the Tezcucan throne, beheld the butchery of his royal father from the shelter of a tree close by, and

succeeded in making his escape from the invaders. His subsequent thrilling adventures have been compared with those of the Young Pretender after the collapse of the "Forty-five" resistance. He had not enjoyed many days of freedom when he was captured by those who had set out in pursuit of him, and, being haled back to his native city, was cast into prison. He found a friend in the governor of the place, who owed his position to the prince's late father, and by means of his assistance he succeeded in once more escaping from the hostile Tecpanecs. For aiding Nezahualcoyotl, however, the governor promptly paid the penalty of death. The royal family of Mexico interceded for the hunted youth, and he was permitted to find an asylum at the Aztec court, whence he later proceeded to his own city of Teczcuco, occupying apartments in the palace where his father had once dwelt. For eight years he remained there, existing unnoticed on the bounty of the Tecpanec chief who had usurped the throne of his ancestors.

Maxtla the Fierce

In course of time the original Tecpanec conqueror was gathered to his fathers, and was succeeded by his son Maxtla, a ruler who could ill brook the studious prince, who had journeyed to the capital of the Tecpanecs to do him homage. He refused Nezahualcoyotl's advances of friendship, and the latter was warned by a favourably disposed courtier to take refuge in flight. This advice he adopted, and returned to Teczcuco, where, however, Maxtla set a snare for his life. A function which took place in the evening afforded the tyrant his chance. But the prince's preceptor frustrated the conspiracy, by means of substituting for his charge a youth who strikingly resembled him. This second failure exasperated Maxtla so much that he sent a military force to Teczcuco, with orders to despatch Nezahualcoyotl without delay. But the same vigilant person who had guarded the prince so well before became apprised of his danger and advised him to fly. To this advice, however, Nezahualcoyotl refused to listen, and resolved to await the approach of his enemies.

A Romantic Escape

When they arrived he was engaged in the Mexican ball-game of *tlachtli*. With great politeness he requested them to enter and to partake of food. Whilst they refreshed themselves he betook himself to another room, but his action excited no surprise, as he could be seen through the open doorway by which the apart. ments communicated with each other. A huge censer, however, stood in the vestibule, and the clouds of incense which arose from it hid his movements from those who had been sent to slay him. Thus obscured, he succeeded in entering a subterranean passage which led to a large disused water-pipe, through which he crawled and made his escape.

A Thrilling Pursuit

For a season Nezahualcoyotl evaded capture by hiding in the hut of a zealous adherent. The hut was searched, but the pursuers neglected to look below a heap of maguey fibre used for making cloth, under which he lay concealed. Furious at his enemy's escape, Maxtla now ordered a rigorous search, and a

regular battue of the country round Tezcuco was arranged. A large reward was offered for the capture of Nezahualcoyotl dead or alive, along with a fair estate and the hand of a noble lady, and the unhappy prince was forced to seek safety in the mountainous country between Tezcuco and Tlascalala. He became a wretched outcast, a pariah lurking in caves and woods, prowling about after nightfall in order to satisfy his hunger, and seldom having a whole night's rest, because of the vigilance of his enemies. Hotly pursued by them he was compelled to seek some curious place concealment in order to save himself. On one occasion he was hidden by some friendly soldiers inside a large drum, and on another he was concealed beneath some *chia* stalks by a girl who was engaged in reaping them. The loyalty of the Tezcucan peasantry to their hunted prince was extraordinary, and rather than betray his whereabouts to the creatures of Maxtla they on many occasions suffered torture, and even death itself. At a time when his affairs appeared most gloomy, however, Nezahualcoyotl experienced a change of fortune. The tyrannous Maxtla had rendered himself highly unpopular by his many oppressions, and the people in the territories he had annexed were by no means contented under his rule.

The Defeat of Maxtla

These malcontents decided to band themselves together to defy the tyrant, and offered the command of the force thus raised to Nezahualcoyotl. This he accepted, and the Tecpanec usurper was totally defeated in a general engagement. Restored to the throne of his fathers, Nezahualcoyotl allied himself with Mexico, and with the assistance of its monarch completely routed the remaining force of Maxtla, who was seized in the baths of Azcapozalco, haled forth and sacrificed, and his city destroyed.

The Solon of Anahuac

Nezahualcoyotl profited by the hard experiences he had undergone, and proved a wise and just ruler. The code of laws framed by him was an exceedingly drastic one, but so wise and enlightened was his rule that on the whole he deserves the title which has been conferred upon him of "the Solon of Anahuac." He generously encouraged the arts, and established a Council of Music, the purpose of which was to supervise artistic endeavour of every description. In Nezahualcoyotl Mexico found, in all probability, her greatest native poet. An ode of his on the mutability of life displays much nobility of thought, and strikingly recalls the sentiments expressed in the verses of Omar Khayyám.

Nezahualcoyotl's Theology

Nezahualcoyotl is said to have erected a temple to the Unknown God, and to have shown a marked reference for the worship of one deity. In one of his poems he is credited with expressing the following exalted sentiments: "Let us aspire to that heaven where all is eternal, and corruption cannot come. The horrors of the tomb are the cradle of the sun, and the dark shadows of death are brilliant lights for the stars." Unfortunately these ideas cannot be verified as the undoubted sentiments of the royal bard of Tezcuco, and we are regretfully forced to regard the attribution as spurious. We must come to such a

conclusion with very real disappointment, as to discover an untutored and spontaneous belief in one god in the midst of surroundings so little congenial to its growth would have been exceedingly valuable from several points of view.

The Poet Prince

We find Nezahualcoyotl's later days stained by an act which was unworthy of such a great monarch and wise man. His eldest son, the heir to the crown, entered into an intrigue with one of his father's wives, and dedicated many passionate poems to her, to which she replied with equal ardour. The poetical correspondence was brought before the king, who prized the lady highly because of her beauty. Outraged in his most sacred feelings, Nezahualcoyotl had the youth arraigned before the High Court, which passed sentence of death upon him—a sentence which his father permitted to be carried out. After his son's execution he shut himself up in his palace for some months, and gave orders that the doors and windows of the unhappy young man's residence should be built up so that never again might its walls echo to the sound of a human voice.

The Queen with a Hundred Lovers

In his *History of the Chichimeca* Ixtlilxochitl tells the following gruesome tale regarding the dreadful fate of a favourite wife of Nezahualpilli, the son of Nezahualcoyotl: When Axaiacatzin, King of Mexico, and other lords sent their daughters to King Nezahualpilli, for him to choose one to be his queen and lawful wife, whose son might succeed to the inheritance, she who had the highest claims among them, for nobility of birth and rank, was Chachiuhnenetzin, the young daughter of the Mexican king. She had been brought up by the monarch in a separate palace, with great pomp, and with numerous attendants, as became the daughter of so great a monarch. The number of servants attached to her household exceeded two thousand. Young as she was, she was exceedingly artful and vicious; so that, finding herself alone, and seeing that her people feared her on account of her rank and importance, she began to give way to an unlimited indulgence of her power. Whenever she saw a young man who pleased her fancy she gave secret orders that he should be brought to her, and shortly afterwards he would be put to death. She would then order a statue or effigy of his person to be made, and, adorning it with rich clothing, gold, and jewellery, place it in the apartment in which she lived. The number of statues of those whom she thus sacrificed was so great as to almost fill the room. When the king came to visit her, and inquired respecting these statues, she answered that they were her gods; and he, knowing how strict the Mexicans were in the worship of their false deities, believed her. But, as no iniquity can be long committed with entire secrecy, she was finally found out in this manner: Three of the young men, for some reason or other, she had left alive. Their names were Chicuhcoatl, Huitzilimitzin, and Maxtla, one of whom was lord of Tesoyucan and one of the grandees of the kingdom, and the other two nobles of high rank. It happened that one day the king recognised on the apparel of one of these a very precious jewel which he had given to the queen; and although he had no fear of treason on her part it gave him some uneasiness. Proceeding to visit her that night, her attendants told him she was asleep, supposing that the king would then return, as he had done at other times. But the affair of the jewel made him insist on entering the

chamber in which she slept; and, going to wake her, he found only a statue in the bed, adorned with her hair, and closely resembling her. Seeing this, and noticing that the attendants around were in much trepidation and alarm, the king called his guards, and, assembling all the people of the house, made a general search for the queen, who was shortly found at an entertainment with the three young lords, who were arrested with her. The king referred the case to the judges of his court, in order that they might make an inquiry into the matter and examine the parties implicated. These discovered many individuals, servants of the queen, who had in some way or other been accessory to her crimes-workmen who had been engaged in making and adorning the statues, others who had aided in introducing the young men into the palace, and others, again, who had put them to death and concealed their bodies. The case having been sufficiently investigated, the king despatched ambassadors to the rulers of Mexico and Tlacopan, giving them information of the event, and signifying the day on which the punishment of the queen and her accomplices was to take place; and he likewise sent through the empire to summon all the lords to bring their wives and their daughters, however young they might be, to be witnesses of a punishment which he designed for a great example. He also made a truce with all the enemies of the empire, in order that they might come freely to see it. The time having arrived, the number of people gathered together was so great that, large as was the city of Tezcuco, they could scarcely all find room in it. The execution took place publicly, in sight of the whole city. The queen was put to the garrotte (a method of strangling by means of a rope twisted round a stick), as well as her three gallants; and, from their being persons of high birth, their bodies were burned, together with the effigies before mentioned. The other parties who had been accessory to the crimes) who numbered more than two thousand persons, were also put to the garrotte, and burned in a pit made for the purpose in a ravine near a temple of the Idol of Adulterers. All applauded so severe and exemplary a punishment, except the Mexican lords, the relatives of the queen, who were much incensed at so public an example, and, although for the time they concealed their resentment, meditated future revenge. It was not without reason, says the chronicler, that the king experienced this disgrace in his household, since he was thus punished for an unworthy subterfuge made use of by his father to obtain his mother as a wife!

This Nezahualpilli, the successor of Nezahualcoyotl, was a monarch of scientific tastes, and, as Torquemada states, had a primitive observatory erected in his palace.

The Golden Age of Tezcuco

The period embraced by the life of this monarch and his predecessor may be regarded as the Golden Age of Tezcuco, and as semi-mythical. The palace of Nezahualcoyotl, according to the account of Ixtlilxochitl, extended east and west for 1234 yards, and for 978 yards from north to south. Enclosed by a high wall, it contained two large courts, one used as the municipal market-place, whilst the other was surrounded by administrative offices. A great hall was set apart for the special use of poets and men of talent, who held symposiums under its classic roof, or engaged in controversy in the surrounding corridors. The chronicles of the kingdom were also kept in this portion of the palace. The private apartments of the monarch adjoined this College of Bards. They were gorgeous in the extreme, and their description rivals that of the fabled Toltec city of Tollan. Rare stones and beautifully coloured plaster mouldings alternated with wonderful tapestries of splendid feather-work to make an enchanting display

of florid decoration, and the gardens which surrounded this marvellous edifice were delightful retreats, where the lofty cedar and cypress overhung sparkling fountains and luxurious baths. Fish darted hither and thither in the ponds, and the aviaries echoed to the songs of birds of wonderful plumage.

A Fairy Villa

According to Ixtlilxochitl, the king's villa of Tezcotzinco was a residence which for sheer beauty had no equal in Persian romance, or in those dream-tales of Araby which in childhood we feel to be true, and in later life regretfully admit can only be known again by sailing the sea of Poesy or penetrating the mist-locked continent of Dream. The account which we have from the garrulous half-blood reminds us of the stately pleasure-dome decreed by Kubla Khan on the turbulent banks of the sacred Alph. A conical eminence was laid out in hanging gardens reached by an airy flight of five hundred and twenty marble steps. Gigantic walls contained an immense reservoir of water, in the midst of which was islanded a great rock carved with hieroglyphs describing the principal events in the reign of Nezahualcoyotl. In each of three other reservoirs stood a marble statue of a woman, symbolical of one of the three provinces of Tezcucó. These great basins supplied the gardens beneath with a perennial flow of water, so directed as to leap in cascades over artificial rockeries or meander among mossy retreats with refreshing whisper, watering the roots of odoriferous shrubs and flowers and winding in and out of the shadow of, the cypress woods. Here and there pavilions of marble arose over porphyry baths, the highly polished stone of which reflected the bodies of the bathers. The villa itself stood amidst a wilderness of stately cedars, which shielded it from the torrid heat of the Mexican sun. The architectural design of this delightful edifice was light and airy in the extreme, and the perfume of the surrounding gardens filled the spacious apartments with the delicious incense of nature. In this paradise the Tezcucan monarch sought in the company of his wives repose from the oppression of rule, and passed the lazy hours in gamesome sport and dance. The surrounding woods afforded him the pleasures of the chase, and art and nature combined to render his rural retreat a centre of pleasant recreation as well as of repose and refreshment.

Disillusionment

That some such palace existed on the spot in question it would be absurd to deny, as its stupendous pillars and remains still litter the terraces of Tezcotzinco. But, alas! we must not listen to the vapourings of the untrustworthy Ixtlilxochitl, who claims to have seen the place. It will be better to turn to a more modern authority, who visited the site about seventy-five years ago, and who has given perhaps the best account of it. He says:

"Fragments of pottery, broken pieces of obsidian knives and arrows, pieces of stucco, shattered terraces, and old walls were thickly dispersed over its whole surface. We soon found further advance on horseback impracticable, and, attaching our patient steeds to the nopal bushes, we followed our Indian guide on foot, scrambling upwards over rock and through tangled brushwood. On gaining the narrow ridge which connects the conical hill with one at the rear, we found the remains of a wall and causeway; and, a little higher, reached a recess, where, at the foot of a small precipice, overhung with Indian fig and

grass, the rock had been wrought by hand into a flat surface of large dimensions. In this perpendicular wall of rock a carved Toltec calendar existed formerly; but the Indians, finding the place visited occasionally by foreigners from the capital, took it into their heads that there must be a silver vein there, and straightway set to work to find it, obliterating the sculpture, and driving a level beyond it into the hard rock for several yards. From this recess a few minutes' climb brought us to the summit of the hill. The sun was on the point of setting over the mountains on the other side of the valley, and the view spread beneath our feet was most glorious. The whole of the lake of Tezcuco, and the country and mountains on both sides, lay stretched before us.

"But, however disposed, we dare not stop long to gaze and admire, but, descending a little obliquely, soon came to the so-called bath, two singular basins, of perhaps two feet and a half diameter, cut into a bastion-like solid rock, projecting from the general outline of the hill, and surrounded by smooth carved seats and grooves, as we supposed—for I own the whole appearance of the locality was perfectly inexplicable to me. I have a suspicion that many of these horizontal planes and grooves were contrivances to aid their astronomical observations, one like that I have mentioned having been discovered by de Gama at Chapultepec.

"As to Montezuma's Bath, it might be his foot-bath if you will, but it would be a moral impossibility for any monarch of larger dimensions than Oberon to take a duck in it.

"The mountain bears the marks of human industry to its very apex, many of the blocks of porphyry of which it is composed being quarried into smooth horizontal planes. It is impossible to say at present what portion of the surface is artificial or not, such is the state of confusion observable in every part.

"By what means nations unacquainted with the use iron constructed works of such a smooth polish, in rocks of such hardness, it is extremely difficult to say. Many think tools of mixed tin and copper were employed; others, that patient friction was one of the main means resorted to. Whatever may have been the real appropriation of these inexplicable ruins, or the epoch of their construction, there can be no doubt but the whole of this hill, which I should suppose rises five or six hundred feet above the level of the plain, was covered with artificial works of one kind or another. They are doubtless rather of Toltec than of Aztec origin, and perhaps with still more probability attributable to a people of an age yet more remote."

The Noble Tlascalan

As may be imagined regarding a community where human sacrifice was rife, tales concerning those who were consigned to this dreadful fate were abundant. Perhaps the most striking of these is that relating to the noble Tlascalan warrior Tlalhuicole, who was captured in combat by the troops of Montezuma. Less than a year before the Spaniards arrived in Mexico war broke out between the Huexotzincans and the Tlascalans, to the former of whom the Aztecs acted as allies. On the battlefield there was captured by guile a very valiant Tlascalan leader called Tlalhuicole, so renowned for his prowess that the mere mention of his name was generally sufficient to deter any Mexican hero from attempting his capture. He

was brought to Mexico in a cage, and presented to the Emperor Montezuma, who, on learning of his name and renown, gave him his liberty and overwhelmed him with honours. He further granted him permission to return to his own country, a boon he had never before extended to any captive. But Tlalhuicole refused his freedom, and replied that he would prefer to be sacrificed to the gods, according to the usual custom. Montezuma, who had the highest regard for him) and prized his life more than any sacrifice, would not consent to his immolation. At this juncture war broke out between Mexico and the Tarascans, and Montezuma announced the appointment of Tlalhuicole as chief of the expeditionary force. He accepted the command, marched against the Tarascans, and, having totally defeated them, returned to Mexico laden with an enormous booty and crowds of slaves. The city rang with his triumph. The emperor begged him to become a Mexican citizen, but he replied that on no account would he prove a traitor to his country. Montezuma then once more offered him his liberty, but he strenuously refused to return to Tlascala, having undergone the disgrace of defeat and capture. He begged Montezuma to terminate his unhappy existence by sacrificing him to the gods, thus ending the dishonour he felt in living on after having undergone defeat, and at the same time fulfilling the highest aspiration of his life-to die the death of a warrior on the stone of combat. Montezuma, himself the noblest pattern of Aztec chivalry, touched at his request, could not but agree with him that he had chosen the most fitting fate for a hero, and ordered him to be chained to the stone of combat, the blood-stained *temalacatl*. The most renowned of the Aztec warriors were pitted against him, and the emperor himself graced the sanguinary tournament with his presence. Tlalhuicole bore himself in the combat like a lion, slew eight warriors of renown, and wounded more than twenty. But at last he fell, covered with wounds, and was haled by the exulting priests to the altar of the terrible war-god Huitzilopochtli, to whom his heart was offered up.

The Haunting Mothers

It is only occasionally that we encounter either the gods or supernatural beings of any description in Mexican myth. But occasionally we catch sight of such beings as the *Ciuapipiltin* (Honoured Women), the spirits of those women who had died in childbed, a death highly venerated by the Mexicans, who regarded the woman who perished thus as the equal of a warrior who met his fate in battle. Strangely enough, these spirits were actively malevolent, probably because the moon-goddess (who was also the deity of evil exhalations) was evil in her tendencies, and they were regarded as possessing an affinity to her. It was supposed that they afflicted infants with various diseases, and Mexican parents took every precaution not to permit their offspring out of doors on the days when their influence was believed to be strong. They were said to haunt the cross-roads, and even to enter the bodies of weakly people, the better to work their evil will. The insane were supposed to be under their especial visitation. Temples were raised at the cross-roads in order to placate them, and loaves of bread, shaped like butterflies, were dedicated to them. They were represented as having faces of a dead white, and as blanching their arms and hands with a white powder known as *tisatl*. Their eyebrows were of a golden hue, and their raiment was that of Mexican ladies of the ruling class.

The Return of Papantzin

One of the weirdest legends in Mexican tradition recounts how Papantzin, the sister of Montezuma II, returned from her tomb to prophesy to her royal brother concerning his doom and the fall of his empire at the hands of the Spaniards. On taking up the reins of government Montezuma had married this lady to one of his most illustrious servants, the governor of Tlatelulco, and after his death it would appear that she continued to exercise his almost vice regal functions and to reside in his palace. In course of time she died, and her obsequies were attended by the emperor in person, accompanied by the greatest personages of his court and kingdom. The body was interred in a subterranean vault of his own palace, in close proximity to the royal baths, which stood in a sequestered part of the extensive grounds surrounding the royal residence. The entrance to the vault was secured by a stone slab of moderate weight, and when the numerous ceremonies prescribed for the interment of a royal personage had been completed the emperor and his suite retired. At daylight next morning one of the royal children, a little girl of some six years of age, having gone into the garden to seek her governess, espied the Princess Papan standing near the baths. The princess, who was her aunt, called to her, and requested her to bring her governess to her. The child did as she was bid, but her governess, thinking that imagination had played her a trick, paid little attention to what she said. As the child persisted in her statement, the governess at last followed her into the garden, where she saw Papan sitting on one of the steps of the baths. The sight of the supposed dead princess filled the woman with such terror that she fell down in a swoon. The child then went to her mother's apartment, and detailed to her what had happened. She at once proceeded to the baths with two of her attendants, and at sight of Papan was also seized with affright. But the princess reassured her, and asked to be allowed to accompany her to her apartments, and that the entire affair should for the present be kept absolutely secret. Later in the day she sent for Tiçotzicatzin, her majordomo, and requested him to inform the emperor that she desired to speak with him immediately on matters of the greatest importance. The man, terrified, begged to be excused from the mission, and Papan then gave orders that her uncle Nezahualpilli, King of Tezcuco, should be communicated with. That monarch, on receiving her request that he should come to her, hastened to the palace. The princess begged him to see the emperor without loss of time and to entreat him to come to her at once. Montezuma heard his story with surprise mingled with doubt. Hastening to his sister, he cried as he approached her: "Is it indeed you, my sister, or some evil demon who has taken your likeness?" "It is I indeed, your Majesty," she replied. Montezuma and the exalted personages who accompanied him then seated themselves, and a hush of expectation fell upon all as they were addressed by the princess in the following words:

"Listen attentively to what I am about to relate to you. You have seen me dead, buried, and now behold me alive again. By the authority of our ancestors, my brother, I am returned from the dwellings of the dead to prophesy to you certain things of prime importance.

Papantzin's Story

"At the moment after death I found myself in a spacious valley, which appeared to have neither commencement nor end, and was surrounded by lofty mountains. Near the middle I came upon a road with many branching paths. By the side of the valley there flowed a river of considerable size, the waters of which ran with a loud noise. By the borders of this I saw a young man clothed in a long robe, fastened with a diamond, and shining like the sun, his visage bright as a star. On his forehead was a sign in the

figure of a cross. He had wings, the feathers of which gave forth the most wonderful and glowing reflections and colours. His eyes were as emeralds, and his glance was modest. He was fair, of beautiful aspect and imposing presence. He took me by the hand and said: 'Come hither. It is not yet time for you to cross the river. You possess the love of God, which is greater than you know or can comprehend.' He then conducted me through the valley, where I espied many heads and bones of dead men. I then beheld a number of black folk, horned, and with the feet of deer. They were engaged in building a house, which was nearly completed. Turning toward the east for a space, I beheld on the waters of the river a vast number of ships manned by a great host of men dressed differently from ourselves. Their eyes were of a clear grey, their complexions ruddy, they carried banners and ensigns in their hands and wore helmets on their heads. They called themselves 'Sons of the Sun.' The youth who conducted me and caused me to see all these things said that it was not yet the will of the gods that I should cross the river, but that I was to be reserved to behold the future with my own eyes, and to enjoy the benefits of the faith which these strangers brought with them; that the bones I beheld on the plain were those of my countrymen who had died in ignorance of that faith, and had consequently suffered great torments; that the house being builded by the black folk was an edifice prepared for those who would fall in battle with the seafaring strangers whom I had seen; and that I was destined to return to my compatriots to tell them of the true faith, and to announce to them what I had seen that they might profit thereby."

Montezuma hearkened to these matters in silence, and felt greatly troubled. He left his sister's presence without a word, and, regaining his own apartments, plunged into melancholy thoughts.

Papantzin's resurrection is one of the best authenticated incidents in Mexican history, and it is a curious fact that on the arrival of the Spanish Conquistadores one of the first persons to embrace Christianity and receive baptism at their hands was the Princess Papan.

[Next: CHAPTER IV: The Maya Race and Mythology](#)

CHAPTER IV: The Maya Race and Mythology

The Maya

It was to the Maya-the people who occupied the territory between the isthmus of Tehuantepec and Nicaragua-that the civilisation of Central America owed most. The language they spoke was quite distinct from the Nahuatl spoken by the Nahua of Mexico, and in many respects their customs and habits were widely different from those of the people of Anahuac. It will be remembered that the latter were the heirs of an older civilisation, that, indeed, they had entered the valley of Mexico as savages, and that practically all they knew of the arts of culture was taught them by the remnants of the people whom they dispossessed. It was not thus with the Maya. Their arts and industries were of their own invention, and bore the stamp of an origin of considerable antiquity. They were, indeed, the supreme intellectual race of America, and on their coming into contact with the Nahua that people assimilated sufficient of their culture to raise them several grades in the scale of civilisation.

Were the Maya Toltecs?

It has already been stated that many antiquarians see in the Maya those Toltecs who because of the inroads of barbarous tribes quitted their native land of Anahuac and journeyed southward to seek a new home in Chiapas and Yucatan. It would be idle to attempt to uphold or refute such a theory in the absolute dearth of positive evidence for or against it. The architectural remains of the older race of Anahuac do not bear any striking likeness to Maya forms, and if the mythologies of the two peoples are in some particulars alike, that may well be accounted for by their mutual adoption of deities and religious customs. On the other hand) it is distinctly noteworthy that the cult of the god Quetzalcoatl, which was regarded in Mexico as of alien origin, had a considerable vogue among the Maya and their allied races.

The Maya Kingdom

On the arrival of the Spaniards (after the celebrated march of Cortés from Mexico to Central America) the Maya were divided into a number of subsidiary states which remind us somewhat of the numerous little kingdoms of Palestine. That these had hived off from an original and considerably greater state there is good evidence to show, but internal dissension had played havoc with the polity of the central government of this empire, the disintegration of which had occurred at a remote period. In the semi-historical legends of this people we catch glimpses of a great kingdom, occasionally alluded to as the

"Kingdom of the Great Snake," or the empire of Xibalba, realms which have been identified with the ruined city-centres of Palenque and Mitla. These identifications must be regarded with caution, but the work of excavation will doubtless sooner or later assist theorists in coming to conclusions which will admit of no doubt. The sphere of Maya civilisation and influence is pretty well marked, and embraces the peninsula of Yucatan, Chiapas, to the isthmus of Tehuantepec on the north, and the whole of Guatemala to the boundaries of the present republic of San Salvador. The true nucleus of Maya civilisation, however, must be looked for in that part of Chiapas which skirts the banks of the Usumacinta river and in the valleys of its tributaries. Here Maya art and architecture reached a height of splendour unknown elsewhere, and in this district, too, the strange Maya system of writing had its most skilful exponents. Although the arts and industries of the several districts inhabited by people of Maya race exhibited many superficial differences, these are so small as to make us certain of the fact that the various areas inhabited by Maya stock had all drawn their inspiration toward civilisation from one common nucleus, and had equally passed through a uniform civilisation and drawn sap from an original culture-centre.

The Maya Dialects

Perhaps the most effectual method of distinguishing the various branches of the Maya people from one another consists in dividing them into linguistic groups. The various dialects spoken by the folk of Maya, origin, although they exhibit some considerable difference, yet display strongly that affinity of construction and resemblance in root which go to prove that they all emanate from one common mother-tongue. In Chiapas the Maya tongue itself is the current dialect, whilst in Guatemala no less than twenty-four dialects are in use, the principal of which are the Quiche, or Kiche, the Kakchiquel, the Zutugil, Coxoh Chol, and Pipil. These dialects and the folk who speak them are sufficient to engage our attention, as in them are enshrined the most remarkable myths and legends of the race, and by the men who used them were the greatest acts in Maya history achieved.

Whence came the Maya?

Whence came these folk, then, who raised a civilisation by no means inferior to that of ancient Egypt, which, if it had had scope, would have rivalled in its achievements the glory of old Assyria? We cannot tell. The mystery of its entrance into the land is as deep as the mystery of the ancient forests which now bury the remnants of its mighty monuments and enclose its temples in impenetrable gloom. Generations of antiquarians have attempted to trace the origin of this race to Egypt, Phœnicia, China, Burma. But the manifest traces of indigenous American origin are present in all its works, and the writers who have beheld in these likenesses to the art of Asiatic or African peoples have been grievously misled by superficial resemblances which could not have betrayed any one who had studied Maya affinities deeply.

Civilisation of the Maya

At the risk of repetition it is essential to point out that civilisation, which was a newly acquired thing with

the Nahua peoples, was not so with the Maya. They were indisputably an older race, possessing institutions which bore the marks of generations of use, whereas the Nahua had only too obviously just entered into their heritage of law and order. When we first catch sight of the Maya kingdoms they are in the process of disintegration. Such strong young blood as the virile folk of Anahuac possessed did not flow in the veins of the people of Yucatan and Guatemala. They were to the Nahua much as the ancient Assyrians were to the hosts of Israel at the entrance of the latter into national existence. That there was a substratum of ethnical and cultural relationship, however, it would be impossible to deny. The institutions, architecture, habits, even the racial cast of thought of the two peoples, bore such a general resemblance as to show that many affinities of blood and cultural relationship existed between them. But it will not do to insist too strongly upon these. It may be argued with great probability that these relationships and likenesses exist because of the influence of Maya civilisation upon Mexican alone, or from the inheritance by both Mexican and Maya people of a still older culture of which we are ignorant, and the proofs of which lie buried below the forests of Guatemala or the sands of Yucatan.

The Zapotecs

The influence of the Maya upon the Nahua was a process of exceeding slowness. The peoples who divided them one from another were themselves benefited by carrying Maya culture into Anahuac, or rather it might be said that they constituted a sort of filter through which the southern civilisation reached the northern. These peoples were the Zapotecs, the Mixtecs, and the Kuikatecs, by far the most important of whom were the first-mentioned. They partook of the nature and civilisation of both races, and were in effect a border people who took from and gave to both Maya and Nahua, much as the Jews absorbed and disseminated the cultures of Egypt and Assyria. They were, however, of Nahua race, but their speech bears the strongest marks of having borrowed extensively from the Maya vocabulary. For many generations these people wandered in a nomadic condition from Maya to Nahua territory, thus absorbing the customs, speech, and mythology of each.

The Huasteca

But we should be wrong if we thought that the Maya had never attempted to expand, and had never sought new homes for their surplus population. That they had is proved by an outlying tribe of Maya, the Huasteca, having settled at the mouth of the Panuco, river, on the north coast of Mexico. The presence of this curious ethnological island has of course given rise to all sorts of queer theories concerning Toltec relationship, whereas it simply intimates that before the era of Nahua expansion the Maya had attempted to colonise the country to the north of their territories, but that their efforts in this direction had been cut short by the influx of savage Nahua, against whom they found themselves unable to contend.

The Type of Maya Civilisation

Did the civilisation of the Maya differ, then, in type from that of the Nahua, or was it merely a larger

expression of that in vogue in Anahuac? We may take it that the Nahua civilisation characterised the culture of Central America in its youth, whilst that of the Maya displayed it in its bloom, and perhaps in its senility. The difference was neither essential nor radical, but may be said to have arisen for the most part from climatic and kindred causes. The climate of Anahuac is dry and temperate, that of Yucatan and Guatemala is tropical, and we shall find even such religious conceptions of the two peoples as were drawn from a common source varying from this very cause, and coloured by differences in temperature and rainfall.

Maya History

Before entering upon a consideration of the art, architecture, or mythology of this strange and highly interesting people it will be necessary to provide the reader with a brief sketch of their history. Such notices of this as exist in English are few, and their value doubtful. For the earlier history of the people of Maya stock we depend almost wholly upon tradition and architectural remains. The net result of the evidence wrung from these is that the Maya civilisation was one and homogeneous, and that all the separate states must have at one period passed through a uniform condition of culture, to which they were all equally debtors, and that this is sufficient ground for the belief that all were at one time beneath the sway of one central power. For the later history we possess the writings of the Spanish fathers, but not in such profusion as in the case of Mexico. In fact the trustworthy original authors who deal with Maya history can almost be counted on the fingers of one hand. We are further confused in perusing these, and, indeed, throughout the study of Maya history, by discovering that many of the sites of Maya cities are designated by Nahua names. This is due to the fact that the Spanish conquerors were guided in their conquest of the Maya territories by Nahua, who naturally applied Nahuatlac designations to those sites of which the Spaniards asked the names. These appellations clung to the places in question; hence the confusion, and the blundering theories which would read in these place-names relics of Aztec conquest.

The Nucleus of Maya Power

As has been said, the nucleus of Maya power and culture is probably to be found in that part of Chiapas which slopes down from the steep Cordilleras. Here the ruined sites of Palenque, Piedras Negras, and Ocosingo are eloquent of that opulence of imagination and loftiness of conception which go hand in hand with an advanced culture. The temples and palaces of this region bear the stamp of a dignity and consciousness of metropolitan power which are scarcely to be mistaken, so broad, so free is their architectural conception, so full to overflowing the display of the desire to surpass. But upon the necessities of religion and central organisation alone was this architectural artistry lavished. Its dignities were not profaned by its application to mere domestic uses, for, unless what were obviously palaces are excepted, not a single example of Maya domestic building has survived. This is of course accounted for by the circumstance that the people were sharply divided into the aristocratic and labouring classes, the first of which was closely identified with religion or kingship, and was housed in the ecclesiastical or royal buildings, whilst those of less exalted rank were perforce content with the shelter afforded by a hut built of perishable materials, the traces of which have long since passed away. The temples were, in fact,

the nuclei of the towns, the centres round which the Maya communities were grouped, much in the same manner as the cities of Europe in the Middle Ages clustered and grew around the shadow of some vast cathedral or sheltering stronghold.

Early Race Movements

We shall leave the consideration of Maya tradition until we come to speak of Maya myth proper, and attempt to glean from the chaos of legend some veritable facts connected with Maya history. According to a manuscript of Kuikatec origin recently discovered, it is probable that a Nahua invasion of the Maya states of Chiapas and Tabasco took place about the ninth century, of our era, and we must for the present regard that as the starting-point of Maya history. The South-western portions of the Maya territory were agitated about the same time by race movements, which turned northward toward Tehuantepec, and, flowing through Guatemala, came to rest in Acalan, on the borders of Yucatan, retarded, probably, by the inhospitable and waterless condition of that country. This Nahua invasion probably had the effect of driving the more peaceful Maya from their northerly settlements and forcing them farther south. Indeed, evidence is not wanting to show that the warlike Nahua pursued the pacific Maya into their new retreats, and for a space left them but little peace. This struggle it was which finally resulted in the breaking up of the Maya civilisation, which even at that relatively remote period had reached its apogee, its several races separating into numerous city-states, which bore a close political resemblance to those of Italy on the downfall of Rome. At this period, probably, began the cleavage between the Maya of Yucatan and those of Guatemala, which finally resolved itself into such differences of speech, faith, and architecture as almost to constitute them different peoples.

The Settlement of Yucatan

As the Celts of Wales and Scotland were driven into the less hospitable regions of their respective countries by the inroads of the Saxons, so was one branch of the Maya forced to seek shelter in the almost desert wastes of Yucatan. There can be no doubt that the Maya did not take to this barren and waterless land of their own accord. Thrifty and possessed of high agricultural attainments, this people would view with concern a removal to a sphere so forbidding after the rich and easily developed country they had inhabited for generations. But the inexorable Nahua were behind and they were a peaceful folk, unused to the horrors of savage warfare. So, taking their courage in both hands, they wandered into the desert. Everything points to a late occupation of Yucatan by the Maya, and architectural effort exhibits deterioration, evidenced in a high conventionality of design and excess of ornamentation. Evidences of Nahua influence also are not wanting, a fact which is eloquent of the later period of contact which is known to have occurred between the peoples, and which alone is almost sufficient to fix the date of the settlement of the Maya in Yucatan. It must not be thought that the Maya in Yucatan formed one homogeneous state recognising a central authority. On the contrary, as is often the case with colonists) the several Maya bands of immigrants formed themselves into different states or kingdoms, each having its own separate traditions. It is thus a matter of the highest difficulty to so collate and criticise these traditions as to construct a history of the Maya race in Yucatan. As may be supposed, we find the various

city-sites founded by divine beings who play a more or less important part in the Maya pantheon. Kukulcan, for example, is the first king of Mayapan, whilst Itzamna figures as the founder of the state of Itzamal. The gods were the spiritual leaders of these bands of Maya, just as Jehovah was the spiritual leader and guide of the Israelites in the desert. One is therefore not surprised to find in the *Popol Vuh*, the saga of the Kiche-Maya of Guatemala, that the god Tohil (The Rumbler) guided them to the site of the first Kiche city. Some writers on the subject appear to think that the incidents in such migration myths, especially the tutelage and guidance of the tribes by gods and the descriptions of desert scenery which they contain, suffice to stamp them as mere native versions of the Book of Exodus, or at the best myths sophisticated by missionary influence. The truth is that the conditions of migration undergone by the Maya were similar to those described in the Scriptures, and by no means merely reflect the Bible story, as short-sighted collators of both aver.

The Septs of Yucatan

The priest-kings of Mayapan, who claimed descent from Kukulcan or Quetzalcoatl, soon raised their state into a position of prominence among the surrounding cities. Those who had founded Chichen-Itza, and who were known as Itzaes, were, on the other hand, a caste of warriors who do not appear to have cherished the priestly function with such assiduity. The rulers of the Itzaes, who were known as the Tutul Xius, seem to have come, according to their traditions, from the western Maya states, perhaps from Nonohualco in Tabasco. Arriving from thence at the southern extremity of Yucatan, they founded the city of Ziyán Caan, on Lake Bacalar, which had a period of prosperity for at least a couple of generations. At the expiry of that period for some unaccountable reason they migrated northward, perhaps because at that particular time the incidence of power was shifting toward Northern Yucatan, and took up their abode in Chichen- Itza, eventually the sacred city of the Maya, which they founded.

The Cocomes

But they were not destined to remain undisturbed in their new sphere. The Cocomes of Mayapan, when at the height of their power, viewed with disfavour the settlement of the Tutul Xius. After it had flourished for a period of about 120 years it was overthrown by the Cocomes, who resolved it into a dependency, permitting the governors and a certain number of the people to depart elsewhere.

Flight of the Tutul Xius

Thus expelled, the Tutul Xius fled southward, whence they had oriainally come, and settled in Potonchan or Champoton, where they reigned for nearly 300 years. From this new centre, with the aid or Nahua mercenaries, they commenced an extension of territory northward, and entered into diplomatic relations with the heads of the other Maya states. It was at this time that they built Uxmal, and their power became so extensive that they reconquered the territory they had lost to the Cocomes. This on the whole appears to have been a period when the arts flourished under an enlightened policy, which knew

how to make and keep friendly relations with surrounding states, and the splendid network of roads with which the country was covered and the many evidences of architectural excellence go to prove that the race had had leisure to achieve much in art and works of utility. Thus the city of Chichen-Itza was linked up with the island of Cozumel by a highway whereon thousands of pilgrims plodded to the temples of the gods of wind and moisture. From Itzamal, too, roads branched in every direction, in order that the people should have every facility for reaching the chief shrine of the country situated there. But the hand of the Cocomes was heavy upon the other Maya states which were tributary to, them. As in the Yucatan of to-day, where the wretched henequen-picker leads the life of a veritable slave, a crushing system of helotage obtained. The Cocomes made heavy demands upon the Tutul Xius, who in their turn sweated the hapless folk under their sway past the bounds of human endurance. As in all tottering civilisations, the feeling of responsibility among the upper classes became dormant, and they abandoned themselves to the pleasures of life without thought of the morrow. Morality ceased to be regarded as a virtue, and rottenness was at the core of Maya life. Discontent quickly spread on every hand.

The Revolution In Mayapan

The sequel was, naturally, revolution. Ground down by the tyranny of a dissolute oligarchy, the subject states rose in revolt. The Cocomes surrounded themselves by Nahua mercenaries, who succeeded in beating off the first wave of revolt, led by the king or regulus or Uxmal, who was defeated, and whose people in their turn rose against him, a circumstance which ended in the abandonment of the city of Uxmal. Once more were the Tutul Xius forced to go on pilgrimage, and this time they founded the city of Mani, a mere shadow of the splendour of Uxmal and Chichen.

Hunac Eel

If the aristocracy of the Cocomes was composed of weaklings, its ruler was made of sterner stuff. Hunac Eel, who exercised royal sway over this people, and held in subjection the lesser principalities of Yucatan, was not only a tyrant of harsh and vindictive temperament, but a statesman of judgement and experience, who courted the assistance of the neighbouring Nahua, whom he employed in his campaign against the new assailant of his absolutism, the ruler of Chichen-Itza. Mustering a mighty host of his vassals, Hunac Eel marched against the devoted city whose prince had dared to challenge his supremacy, and succeeded in inflicting a crushing defeat upon its inhabitants. But apparently the state was permitted to remain under the sovereignty of its native princes. The revolt, however, merely smouldered, and in the kingdom of Mayapan itself, the territory of the Cocomes, the fires of revolution began to blaze. This state of things continued for nearly a century. Then the crash came. The enemies of the Cocomes effected a junction. The people of Chichen Itza joined hands with the Tutul Xius, who had sought refuge in the central highlands of Yucatan and those city-states which clustered around the mother-city of Mayapan. A fierce concerted attack was made, beneath which the power of the Cocomes crumpled up completely. Not one stone was left standing upon another by the exasperated allies, who thus avenged the helotage of nearly 300 years. To this event the date 1436 is assigned, but, like most dates in Maya history, considerable uncertainty must be attached to it.

The Last of the Cocomes

Only a remnant of the Cocomes survived. They had been absent in Nahua territory, attempting to raise fresh troops for the defence of Mayapan. These the victors spared, and they finally settled in Zotuta, in the centre of Yucatan, a region of almost impenetrable forest.

It would not appear that the city of Chichen-Itza, the prince of which was ever the head and front of the rebellion against the Cocomes, profited in any way from the fall of the suzerain power. On the contrary, tradition has it that the town was abandoned by its inhabitants, and left to crumble into the ruinous state in which the Spaniards found it on their entrance into the country. The probability is that its people quitted it because of the repeated attacks made upon it by the Cocomes, who saw in it the chief obstacle to their universal sway; and this is supported by tradition, which tells that a prince of Chichen-Itza) worn out with conflict and internecine strife, left it to seek the cradle of the Maya race in the land of the setting sun. Indeed, it is further stated that this prince founded the city of Peten-Itza, on the lake of Peten, in Guatemala

The Maya Peoples of Guatemala

When the Maya peoples of Guatemala, the Kiches and the Kakchiquels, first made their way into that territory, they probably found there a race of Maya origin of a type more advanced and possessed of more ancient traditions than themselves. By their connection with this folk they greatly benefited in the direction of artistic achievement as well as in the industrial arts. Concerning these people we have a large body of tradition in the *Popol Vuh*, a native chronicle, the contents of which will be fully dealt with in the chapter relating to the Maya myths and legendary matter. We cannot deal with it as a veritable historical document, but there is little doubt that a basis of fact exists behind the tradition it contains. The difference between the language of these people and that of their brethren in Yucatan was, as has been said, one of dialect only, and a like slight distinction is found in their mythology, caused, doubtless, by the incidence of local conditions, and resulting in part from the difference between a level and comparatively waterless land and one of a semimountainous character covered with thick forests. We shall note further differences when we come to examine the art and architecture of the Maya race, and to compare those of its two most distinctive branches.

The Maya Tulan

It was to the city of Tulan, probably in Tabasco, that the Maya of Guatemala referred as being the starting point of all their migrations. We must not confound this place with the Tollan of the Mexican traditions. It is possible that the name may in both cases be derived from a root meaning a place from which a tribe set forth, a starting-place, but geographical connection there is none. From here Nima-Kiche, the great Kiche, started on his migration to the mountains, accompanied by his three brothers. Tulan, says the *Popol Vuh*, had been a place of misfortune to man, for he had suffered much from cold

and hunger, and, as at the building of Babel, his speech was so confounded that the first four Kiches and their wives were unable to comprehend one another. Of course this is a native myth created to account for the difference in dialect between the various branches of the Maya folk, and can scarcely have any foundation in fact, as the change in dialect would be a very gradual process. The brothers, we are told, divided the land so that one received the districts of Mames and Pocomams, another Verapaz, and the third Chiapas, while Nima-Kiche obtained the country of the Kiches, Kakchiquels, and Tzutuhils. It would be extremely difficult to say whether or not this tradition rests on any veritable historical basis. If so, it refers to a period anterior to the Nahua irruption, for the districts alluded to as occupied by these tribes were not so divided among them at the coming of the Spaniards.

Doubtful Dynasties

As with the earlier dynasties of Egypt, considerable doubt surrounds the history of the early Kiche monarchs. Indeed, a period of such uncertainty occurs that even the number of kings who reigned is lost in the hopeless confusion of varying estimates. From this chaos emerge the facts that the Kiche monarchs held the supreme power among the peoples of Guatemala, that they were the contemporaries of the rulers of Mexico city, and that they were often elected from among the princes of the subject states. Acxopil, the successor of Nima-Kiche, invested his second son with the government of the Kakchiquels, and placed his youngest son over the Tzutuhils, whilst to his eldest son he left the throne of the Kiches. Icutemal, his eldest son, on succeeding his father, gifted the kingdom of Kakchiquel to his eldest son, displacing his own brother and thus mortally affronting him. The struggle which ensued lasted for generations, embittered the relations between these two branches of the Maya in Guatemala, and undermined their joint strength. Nahua mercenaries were employed in the struggle on both sides, and these introduced many of the uglinesses of Nahua life into Maya existence.

The Coming of the Spaniards

This condition of things lasted up to the time of the coming of the Spaniards. The Kakchiquels dated the commencement of a new chronology from the episode of the defeat of Cay Hun-Apu by them in 1492. They may have saved themselves the trouble; for the time was at hand when the calendars of their race were to be closed, and its records written in another script by another people. One by one, and chiefly by reason of their insane policy of allying themselves with the invader against their own kin, the old kingdoms of Guatemala fell as spoil to the daring Conquistadores, and their people passed beneath the yoke of Spain-bondsmen who were to beget countless generations of slaves.

The Riddle of Ancient Maya Writing

What may possibly be the most valuable sources of Maya history are, alas! sealed to us at present. We allude to the native Maya manuscripts and inscriptions, the writing of which cannot be deciphered by present-day scholars. Some of the old Spanish friars who lived in the times which directly succeeded the

settlement of the country by the white man were able to read and even to write this script, but unfortunately they regarded it either as an invention of the Father of Evil or, as it was a native system, as a thing of no value. In a few generations all knowledge of how to decipher it was totally lost, and it remains to the modern world almost as a sealed book, although science has lavished all its wonderful machinery of logic and deduction upon it, and men of unquestioned ability have dedicated their lives to the problem of unravelling what must be regarded as one of the greatest and most mysterious riddles of which mankind ever attempted the solution.

The romance of the discovery of the key to the Egyptian hieroglyphic system of writing is well known. For centuries the symbols displayed upon the temples and monuments of the Nile country were so many meaningless pictures and signs to the learned folk of Europe, until the discovery of the Rosetta stone a hundred years ago made their elucidation possible. This stone bore the same inscription in Greek, demotic, and hieroglyphics, and so the discovery of the "alphabet" of the hidden script became a comparatively easy task. But Central America has no Rosetta stone, nor is it possible that such an aid to research can ever be found. Indeed, such "keys" as have been discovered or brought forward by scientists have proved for the most part unavailing.

The Maya Manuscripts

The principal Maya manuscripts which have escaped the ravages of time are the codices in the libraries of Dresden, Paris, and Madrid. These are known as the Codex Perezianus preserved in the Bibliothèque Nationale at Paris: the Dresden Codex, long regarded as an Aztec manuscript, and the Troano Codex, so called from one of its owners, Señor Tro y Ortolano, found at Madrid in 1865. These manuscripts deal principally with Maya mythology, but as they cannot be deciphered with any degree of accuracy they do not greatly assist our knowledge of the subject.

The System of the Writing

The "Tablet of the Cross" gives a good idea of the general appearance of the writing system of the ancient peoples of Central America. The style varies somewhat in most of the manuscripts and inscriptions, but it is generally admitted that all of the systems employed sprang originally from one common source. The square figures which appear as a tangle of faces and objects are said to be calculiform, or pebble shaped, a not inappropriate description, and it is known from ancient Spanish manuscripts that they were read from top to bottom, and two columns at a time. The Maya tongue, like all native American languages, was one which, in order to express an idea, gathered a whole phrase into a single word, and it has been thought that the several symbols or parts in each square or sketch go to make up such a compound expression.

The first key (so called) to the hieroglyphs of Central America was that of Bishop Landa, who about 1576 attempted to set down the Maya alphabet from native sources. He was highly unpopular with the natives, whose literary treasures he had almost completely destroyed, and who in revenge deliberately

misled him as to the true significance of the various symbols.

The first real step toward reading the Maya writing was made in 1876 by Léon de Rosny, a French student of American antiquities, who succeeded in interpreting the signs which denote the four cardinal points. As has been the case in so many discoveries of importance the significance of these signs was simultaneously discovered by Professor Cyrus Thomas in America. In two of these four signs was found the symbol which meant "sun," almost, as de Rosny acknowledged, as a matter of course. However, the Maya word for "sun" (*kin*) also denotes "day," and it was later proved that this sign was also used with the latter meaning. The discovery of the sign stimulated further research to a great degree, and from the material now at their disposal Drs. Förstemann and Schellhas of Berlin were successful in discovering the sign for the moon and that for the Maya month of twenty days.

Clever Elucidations

In 1887 Dr. Seler discovered the sign for night (*akbal*), and in 1894 Förstemann unriddled the symbols for "beginning" and "end." These are two heads, the first of which has the sign *akbal*, just mentioned, for an eye. Now *akbal* means, as well as "night," "the beginning of the month," and below the face which contains it can be seen footsteps, or spots which resemble their outline, signifying a forward movement. The sign in the second head means "seventh," which in Maya also signifies "the end." From the frequent contrast of these terms there can be little doubt that their meaning is as stated.

"Union" is denoted by the sting of a rattlesnake, the coils of that reptile signifying to the Maya the idea of tying together. In contrast to this sign is the figure next to it, which represents a knife, and means "division" or "cutting." An important "letter" is the hand, which often occurs in both manuscripts and inscriptions. It is drawn sometimes in the act of grasping, with the thumb bent forward, and sometimes as pointing in a certain direction. The first seems to denote a tying together or joining, like the rattlesnake symbol, and the second Förstemann believes to represent a lapse of time. That it may represent futurity occurs as a more likely conjecture to the present writer.

The figure denoting the spring equinox was traced because of its obvious representation of a cloud from which three streams of water are falling upon the earth. The square at the top represents heaven. The obsidian knife underneath denotes a division or period of time cut off, as it were, from other periods of the year. That the sign means "spring" is verified by its position among the other signs of the seasons.

The sign for "week" was discovered by reason of its almost constant accompaniment of the sign for the number thirteen, the number of days in the Maya sacred week. The symbol of the bird's feather indicates the plural, and when affixed to certain signs signifies that the object indicated is multiplied. A bird's feather, when one thinks of it, is one of the most fitting symbols provided by nature to designate the plural, if the number of shoots on both sides of the stem are taken as meaning "many" or "two."

Water is depicted by the figure of a serpent, which reptile typifies the undulating nature of the element.

The sign entitled "the sacrificial victim" is of deep human interest. The first portion of the symbol is the death-bird, and the second shows a crouching and beaten captive, ready to be immolated to one of the terrible Maya deities whose sanguinary religion demanded human sacrifice. The drawing which means "the day of the new year," in the month Ceh, was unriddled by the following means: The sign in the upper left-hand corner denotes the word "sun" or "day," that in the upper right-hand corner is the sign for "year." In the lower right-hand corner is the sign for "division," and in the lower left-hand corner the sign for the Maya month Ceh, already known from the native calendars.

From its accompaniment of a figure known to be a deity of the four cardinal points, whence all American tribes believed the wind to come, the symbol entitled "wind" has been determined.

Methods of Study

The method employed by those engaged in the elucidation of these hieroglyphs is typical of modern science. The various signs and symbols are literally "worn out" by a process of indefatigable examination. For hours the student sits staring at a symbol, drinking in every detail, however infinitesimal, until the drawing and all its parts are wholly and separately photographed upon the tablets of his memory. He then compares the several portions of the symbol with similar portions in other signs the value of which is known. From these he may obtain a clue to the meaning of the whole. Thus proceeding from the known to the unknown) he advances logically toward a complete elucidation of all the hieroglyphs depicted in the various manuscripts and inscriptions.

The method by which Dr. Seler discovered the hieroglyphs or symbols relating to the various gods of the Maya was both simple and ingenious. He says: "The way in which this was accomplished is strikingly simple. It amounts essentially to that which in ordinary life we call 'memory of persons,' and follows almost naturally from a careful study of the manuscripts. For, by frequently looking tentatively at the representations, one learns by degrees to recognise promptly similar and familiar figures of gods by the characteristic impression they make as a whole or by certain details, and the same is true of the accompanying hieroglyphs."

The Maya Numeral System

If Bishop Landa was badly hoaxed regarding the alphabet of the Maya, he was successful in discovering and handing down their numeral system, which was on a very much higher basis than that of many civilised peoples, being, for example more practical and more fully evolved than that of ancient Rome. This system employed four signs altogether, the point for unity, a horizontal stroke for the number 5, and two signs for 20 and 0. Yet from these simple elements the Maya produced a method of computation which is perhaps as ingenious as anything which has ever been accomplished in the history of mathematics. In the Maya arithmetical system, as in ours, it is the position of the sign that gives it its value. The figures were placed in a vertical line, and one of them was employed as a decimal multiplier. The lowest figure of the column had the arithmetical value which it represented. The figures which

appeared in the second, fourth, and each following place had twenty times the value of the preceding figures, while figures in the third place had eighteen times the value of those in the second place. This system admits of computation up to millions, and is one of the surest signs of Maya culture.

Much controversy has raged round the exact nature of the Maya hieroglyphs. Were they understood by the Indians themselves as representing ideas or merely pictures, or did they convey a given sound to the reader, as does our alphabet? To some extent controversy upon the point is futile, as those of the Spanish clergy who were able to learn the writing from the native Maya have confirmed its phonetic character, so that in reality each symbol must have conveyed a sound or sounds to the reader, not merely an idea or a picture. Recent research has amply proved this, so that the full elucidation of the long and painful puzzle on which so much learning and patience have been lavished may perhaps be at hand.

Mythology of the Maya

The Maya pantheon, although it bears a strong resemblance to that of the Nahua, differs from it in so many respects that it is easy to observe that at one period it must have been absolutely free from all Nahua influence. We may, then, provisionally accept the theory that at some relatively distant period the mythologies of the Nahua and Maya were influenced from one common centre, if they were not originally identical, but that later the inclusion in the cognate but divided systems of local deities and the superimposition of the deities and rites of immigrant peoples had caused such differentiation as to render somewhat vague the original likeness between them. In the Mexican mythology we have as a key-note the custom of human sacrifice. It has often been stated as exhibiting the superior status in civilisation of the Maya that their religion was free from the revolting practices which characterised the Nahua faith. This, however, is totally erroneous. Although the Maya were not nearly so prone to the practice of human sacrifice as were the Nahua, they frequently engaged in it, and the pictures which have been drawn of their bloodless offerings must not lead us to believe that they never indulged in this rite. It is known, for example, that they sacrificed maidens to the water-god at the period of the spring florescence, by casting them into a deep pool, where they were drowned.

Quetzalcoatl among the Maya

One of the most obvious of the mythological relationships between the Maya and Nahua is exhibited in the Maya cult of the god Quetzalcoatl. It seems to have been a general belief in Mexico that Quetzalcoatl was a god foreign to the soil; or at least relatively aboriginal to his rival Tezcatlipoca, if not to the Nahua themselves. It is amusing to see it stated by authorities of the highest standing that his worship was free from bloodshed. But it does not appear whether the sanguinary rites connected with the name of Quetzalcoatl in Mexico were undertaken by his priests of their own accord or at the instigation and pressure of the pontiff of Huitzilopochtli, under whose jurisdiction they were. The designation by which Quetzalcoatl was known to the Maya was Kukulcan, which signifies "Feathered Serpent," and is exactly translated by his Mexican name. In Guatemala he was called Gucumatz, which word is also identical in Kiche with his other native appellations. But the Kukulcan of the Maya appears to be dissimilar from

Quetzalcoatl in several of his attributes. The difference in climate would probably account for most of these. In Mexico Quetzalcoatl, as we have seen, was not only the Man of the Sun, but the original wind-god of the country. The Kukulcan of the Maya has more the attributes of a thunder-god. In the tropical climate of Yucatan and Guatemala the sun at midday appears to draw the clouds around it in serpentine shapes. From these emanate thunder and lightning and the fertilising rain, so that Kukulcan would appear to have appealed to the Maya more as a god of the sky who wielded the thunderbolts than a god of the atmosphere proper like Quetzalcoatl, though several of the stelæ in Yucatan represent Kukulcan as he is portrayed in Mexico, with wind issuing from his mouth.

An Alphabet of Gods

The principal sources of our knowledge of the Maya deities are the Dresden, Madrid, and Paris codices alluded to previously, all of which contain many pictorial representations of the various members of the Maya pantheon. Of the very names of some of these gods we are so ignorant, and so difficult is the process of affixing to them the traditional names which are left to us as those of the Maya gods, that Dr. Paul Schellhas, a German student of Maya antiquities, has proposed that the figures of deities appearing in the Maya codices or manuscripts should be provisionally indicated by the letters of the alphabet. The figures of gods which thus occur are fifteen in number, and therefore take the letters of the alphabet from A to P, the letter J being omitted.

Difficulties of Comparison

Unluckily the accounts of Spanish authors concerning Maya mythology do not agree with the representations of the gods delineated in the codices. That the three codices have a mythology in common is certain. Again, great difficulty is found in comparing the deities of the codices with those represented by the carved and stucco bas-reliefs of the Maya region. It will thus be seen that very considerable difficulties beset the student in this mythological sphere. So few data have yet been collected regarding the Maya mythology that to dogmatise upon any subject connected with it would indeed be rash. But much has been accomplished in the past few decades, and evidence is slowly but surely accumulating from which sound conclusions can be drawn.

The Conflict between Light and Darkness

We witness in the Maya mythology a dualism almost as complete as that of ancient Persia—the conflict between light and darkness. Opposing each other we behold on the one hand the deities of the sun, the gods of warmth and light, of civilisation and the joy of life, and on the other the deities of darkness, death, of night, gloom, and fear. From these primal conceptions of light and darkness all the mythologic forms of the Maya are evolved. When we catch the first recorded glimpses of Maya belief we recognise that at the period when it came under the purview of Europeans the gods of darkness were in the ascendant and a deep pessimism had spread over Maya thought and theology. Its joyful side was

subordinated to the worship gloomy beings, the deities of death and hell, and if the cult or light was attended with such touching fidelity it was because the benign agencies who were worshipped in connection with it had promised not to desert mankind altogether, but to return at some future indefinite period and resume their sway of radiance and peace.

The Calendar

Like that of the Nahua, the Maya mythology was based almost entirely upon the calendar, which in its astronomic significance and duration was identical with that of the Mexicans. The ritual year of twenty "weeks " of thirteen days each was divided into four quarters, each of these being under the auspices of a different quarter of the heavens. Each "week" was under the supervision of a particular deity, as will be seen when we come to deal separately with the various gods.

Traditional Knowledge of the Gods

The heavenly bodies had important representation in the Maya pantheon. In Yucatan the sun-god was known as Kinich-ahau (Lord of the Face of the Sun). He was identified with the Fire-bird, or Arara, and was thus called Kinich-Kakmo (Fire-bird; lit. Sun-bird). He was also the presiding genius of the north.

Itzamna, one of the most important of the Maya deities, was a moon-god, the father of gods and men. In him was typified the decay and recurrence of life in nature. His name was derived from the words he was supposed to have given to men regarding himself: "Itz en caan, itz en muyal" ("I am the dew of the heaven, I am the dew of the clouds "). He was tutelar deity of the west.

Chac, the rain-god, is the possessor of an elongated nose, not unlike the proboscis of a tapir, which of course is the spout whence comes the rain which he blows over the earth. He is one of the best represented gods on both manuscripts and monuments, and presides over the east. The black god Ekchuah was the god of merchants and cacao-planters. He is represented in the manuscripts several times.

Ix ch'el was the goddess of medicine, and Ix chebel yax was identified by the priest Hernandez with the Virgin Mary. There were also several deities, or rather genii, called Bacabs, who were the upholders of the heavens in the four quarters of the sky. The names of these were Kan, Muluc, Ix, and Cauac, representing the east, north, west, and south. Their symbolic colours were yellow, white, black, and red respectively. The corresponded in some degree to the four variants of the Mexican rain-god Tlaloc, for many of the American races believed that rain, the fertiliser of the soil, emanated from the four points of the compass. We shall find still other deities when we come to discuss the Popol Vuh, the saga-book of the Kiche, but it is difficult to say how far these were connected with the deities of the Maya of Yucatan, concerning whom we have little traditional knowledge, and it is better to deal with them separately, pointing out resemblances where these appear to exist.

Maya Polytheism

On the whole the Maya do not seem to have been burdened with an extensive pantheon, as were the Nahuatl, and their polytheism appears to have been of a limited character. Although they possessed a number of divinities, these were in a great measure only different forms of one and the same divine power probably localised forms of it. The various Maya tribes worshipped similar gods under different names. They recognised divine unity in the god Hunabku, who was invisible and supreme, but he does not bulk largely in their mythology, any more than does the universal All-Father in other early faiths. The sun is the great deity in Maya religion, and the myths which tell of the origin of the Maya people are purely solar. As the sun comes from the east, so the hero-gods who bring with them culture and enlightenment have an oriental origin. As Votan, as Kabil, the "Red Hand" who initiates the people into the arts of writing and architecture, these gods are civilising men of the sun as surely as is Quetzalcoatl.

The Bat-God

A sinister figure, the prince of the Maya legions of darkness, is the bat-god, Zotzilaha Chimalman, who dwelt in the "House of Bats," a gruesome cavern on the way to the abodes of darkness and death. He is undoubtedly a relic of cave-worship pure and simple. "The Maya" says an old chronicler, "have an immoderate fear of death, and they seem to have given it a figure peculiarly repulsive." We shall find this deity alluded to in the *Popol Vuh*, under the name Camazotz, in close proximity to the Lords of Death and Hell, attempting to bar the journey of the hero-gods across these dreary realms. He is frequently met with on the Copan reliefs, and a Maya clan, the Ah-zotzils, were called by his name. They were of Kakchiquel origin, and he was probably their totem.

Modern Research

We must now turn to the question of what modern research has done to elucidate the character of the various Maya deities. We have already seen that they have been provisionally named by the letters of the alphabet until such proof is forthcoming as will identify them with the traditional gods of the Maya, and we will now briefly examine what is known concerning them under their temporary designations.

God A

In the Dresden and other codices god A is represented as a figure with exposed vertebrae and skull-like countenance, with the marks of corruption on his body, and displaying every sign of mortality. On his head he wears a snail-symbol, the Aztec sign of birth, perhaps to typify the connection between birth and death. He also wears a pair of cross-bones. The hieroglyph which accompanies his figure represents a corpse's head with closed eyes, a skull, and a sacrificial knife. His symbol is that for the calendar day Cimi, which means death. He presides over the west, the home of the dead, the region toward which they invariably depart with the setting sun. That he is a death-god there can be no doubt, but of his name we

are ignorant. He is probably identical with the Aztec god of death and hell, Mictlan, and is perhaps one of those Lords of Death and Hell who invite the heroes to the celebrated game of ball in the Kiche *Popol Vuh*, and hold them prisoners in their gloomy realm.

God B

God B is the deity who appears most frequently in the manuscripts. He has a long, truncated nose, like that of a tapir, and we find in him every sign of a god of the elements. He walks the waters, wields fiery torches, and seats himself on the cruciform tree of the four winds which appears so frequently in American myth. He is evidently a culture-god or hero, as he is seen planting maize carrying tools, and going on a journey, a fact which establishes his solar connection. He is, in fact, Kukulcan or Quetzalcoatl, and on examining him we feel that at least there can be no doubt concerning his identity.

God C

Concerning god C matter is lacking, but he is evidently a god of the pole-star, as in one of the codices he is surrounded by planetary signs and wears a nimbus of rays.

God D

God D is almost certainly a moon-god. He is represented as an aged man, with sunken cheeks and wrinkled forehead on which hangs the sign for night. His hieroglyph is surrounded by dots, to represent a starry sky, and is followed by the number 20, to show the duration of the moon. Like most moon deities he is connected with birth, for occasionally he wears the snail, symbol of parturition, on his head. It is probable that he is Itzamna, one of the greatest of Maya gods, who was regarded as the universal life-giver, and was probably of very ancient origin.

God E, The Maize-God

God E is another deity whom we have no difficulty in identifying. He wears the leafed ear of maize as his head-dress. In fact, his head has been evolved out of the conventional drawings of the ear of maize, so we may say at once without any difficulty that he is a maize-god pure and simple, and a parallel with the Aztec maize-god Centeotl. Brinton calls this god Ghanan, and Schellhas thinks he may be identical with a deity Yurn Kaax, whose name means "Lord of the Harvest Fields."

God F

A close resemblance can be noticed between gods F and A, and it is thought that the latter resembles the Aztec Xipe, the god of human sacrifice. He is adorned with the same black lines running over the face and body, typifying gaping death-wounds.

God G, The Sun-God

In G we may be sure that we have found a sun-god *par excellence*. His hieroglyph is the sun-sign, *kin*. But we must be careful not to confound him with deities like Quetzalcoatl or Kukulcan. He is, like the Mexican Totec, the sun itself, and not the Man of the Sun, the civilising agent, who leaves his bright abode to dwell with man and introduce him to the arts of cultured existence. He is the luminary himself, whose only acceptable food is human blood, and who must be fed full with this terrible fare or perish, dragging the world of men with him into a fathomless abyss of gloom. We need not be surprised, therefore, to see god G occasionally wearing the symbols of death.

God H

God H would seem to have some relationship to the serpent, but what it may be is obscure, and no certain identification can be made.

Goddess I

I is a water-goddess, an old woman with wrinkled brown body and claw-like feet, wearing on her head a grisly snake twisted into a knot, to typify the serpent-like nature of water. She holds in her hands an earthenware pot from which water flows. We cannot say that she resembles the Mexican water-goddess, Chalchihuitlicue, wife of Tlaloc, who was in most respects a deity of a beneficent character. I seems a personification of water in its more dreadful aspect of floods and waterspouts, as it must inevitably have appeared to the people of the more torrid regions of Central America, and that she was regarded as an agent of death is shown from her occasionally wearing the cross-bones of the death-god.

God K, "The God with the Ornamented Nose"

God K is scientifically known as "the god with the ornamented nose," and is probably closely related to god B. Concerning him no two authorities are at one, some regarding him as a storm-god, whose proboscis, like that of Kukulcan, is intended to represent the blast of the tempest. But we observe certain stellar signs in connection with K which would go to prove that he is, indeed, one of the Quetzalcoatl group. His features are constantly to be met with on the gateways and corners of the ruined shrines of Central America, and have led many "antiquarians" to believe in the existence of an elephant-headed god, whereas his trunk-like snout is merely a funnel through which he emitted the ales over which he had dominion, as a careful study of the *pinturas* shows, the wind being depicted issuing from the snout in question. At the same time, the snout may have been modelled on that of the tapir. "If the rain-god Chac is distinguished in the Maya manuscript by a peculiarly long nose curving over the mouth, and if in the other forms of the rain-god, to which, as it seems, the name of Balon Zacab belongs, the nose widens out and sends out shoots, I believe that the tapir which was employed identically with Chac, the Maya rain-god, furnished the model," says Dr. Seler. Is K, then, the same as Chac? Chac bears every sign of affinity with the Mexican rain-god Tlaloc, whose face was evolved from the coils of two snakes, and also some

resemblance to the snouted features of B and K. But, again, the Mexican pictures of Quetzalcoatl are not at all like those of Tlaloc, so that there can be no affinity between Tlaloc and K. Therefore if the Mexican Tlaloc and the Maya Chac be identical, and Tlaloc differs from Quetzalcoatl, who in turn is identical with B and K, it is clear that Chac has nothing to do with K.

God L, The Old Black God

God L Dr. Schellhas has designated "the Old Black God," from the circumstance that he is depicted as an old man with sunken face and toothless gums, the upper, or sometimes the lower, part of his features being covered with black paint. He is represented in the Dresden MS. only. Professor Cyrus Thomas, of New York, thinks that he is the god Ekchuah, who is traditionally described as black, but Schellhas fits this designation to god M. The more probable theory is that of Förstemann, who sees in L the god Votan, who is identical with the Aztec earth-god, Tepeyollotl. Both deities have similar face markings, and their dark hue is perhaps symbolical of the subterranean places where they were supposed to dwell.

God M, The Travellers' God

God M is a veritable black god, with reddish lips. On his head he bears a roped package resembling the loads carried by the Maya porter class, and he is found in violent opposition with F, the enemy of all who wander into the unknown wastes. A god of this description has been handed down by tradition under the name of Ekchuah, and his blackness is probably symbolical of the black or deeply bronzed skin of the porter class among the natives of Central America, who are constantly exposed to the sun. He would appear to be a parallel to the Aztec Yacatecutli, god of travelling merchants or chapmen.

God N, The God of Unlucky Days

God N is identified by Schellhas with the demon Uayayab, who presided over the five unlucky days which it will be recollected came at the end of the Mexican and Maya year. He was known to the Maya as "He by whom the year is poisoned." After modelling his image in clay they carried it out of their villages, so that his baneful influence might not dwell therein.

Goddess O

Goddess O is represented as an old woman engaged in the avocation of spinning, and is probably a goddess of the domestic virtues, the tutelary of married females.

God P, The Frog, God

God P is shown with the body and fins of a frog on a blue background, evidently intended to represent water. Like all other frog-gods he is, of course, a deity of water, probably in its agricultural significance.

We find him sowing seed and making furrows, and when we remember the important part played by frog deities in the agriculture of Anahuac we should have no difficulty in classing him with these. Seler asserts his identity with Kukulcan, but no reason except the circumstance of his being a rain-god can be advanced to establish the identity. He wears the year-sign on his head, probably with a seasonal reference.

Maya Architecture

It was in the wonderful architectural system which it developed without outside aid that the Maya people most individually expressed itself. As has been said, those buildings which still remain, and which have excited the admiration of generations of archxologists, are principally confined to examples of ecclesiastical and governmental architecture, the dwellings of the common people consisting merely of the flimsiest of wattle-and-daub structures, which would fall to pieces shortly after they were abandoned.

Buried in dense forests or mouldering on the sunexposed plains of Yucatan, Honduras, and Guatemala, the cities which boasted these edifices are for the most part situated away from modern trade routes, and are not a little difficult to come at. It is in Yucatan, the old home of the Cocomes and Tutul Xius, that the most perfect specimens of Maya architecture are to be found, especially as regards its later development, and here, too, it may be witnessed in its decadent phase.

Methods of Building

The Maya buildings were almost always erected upon a mound or *ku*, either natural or artificial, generally the latter. In this we discover affinities with the Mexican *teocalli* type. Often these *kus* stood alone, without any superincumbent building save a small altar to prove their relation to the temple type of Anahuac. The typical Maya temple was built on a series of earth terraces arranged in exact parallel order, the buildings themselves forming the sides of a square. The mounds are generally concealed by plaster or faced with stone, the variety employed being usually a hard sandstone, of which the Maya had a good supply in the quarries of Chiapas and Honduras. Moderate in weight, the difficulty of transport was easily overcome, whilst large blocks could be readily quarried. It will thus be seen that the Maya had no substantial difficulties to surmount in connection with building the large edifices and temples they raised, except, perhaps, the lack of metal tools to shape and carve and quarry the stone which they used. And although they exhibit considerable ingenuity in such architectural methods as they employed, they were still surprisingly ignorant of some of the first essentials and principles of the art.

No Knowledge of the Arch

For example, they were totally ignorant of the principles upon which the arch is constructed. This difficulty they overcame by making each course of masonry overhang the one beneath it, after the method employed by a boy with a box of bricks, who finds that he can only make "doorways" by this

means, or by the simple expedient-also employed by the Maya-of placing a slab horizontally upon two upright pillars. In consequence it will readily be seen that the superimposition of a second story upon such an insecure foundation was scarcely to be thought of, and that such support for the roof as towered above the doorway would necessarily require to be of the most substantial description. Indeed, this portion of the building often appears to be more than half the size of the rest of the edifice. This space gave the Maya builders a splendid chance for mural decoration, and it must be said they readily seized it and made the most of it, ornamental façades being perhaps the most typical features in the relics of Maya architecture.

Pyramidal Structures

But the Maya possessed another type of building which permitted or their raising more than one story. This was the pyramidal type, or which many examples remain. The first story was built in the usual manner, and the second was raised by increasing the height of the mound at the back of the building until it was upon a level with the roof-another device well known to the boy with the box of bricks. In the centre of the space thus made another story could be erected, which was entered by a staircase outside the building. Hampered by their inability to build to any appreciable height, the Maya architects made up for the deficiency by constructing edifices of considerable length and breadth, the squat appearance of which is counterbalanced by the beautiful mural decoration of the sides and façade.

Definiteness of Design

He would be a merely superficial observer who would form the conclusion that these specimens of an architecture spontaneously evolved were put together without survey, design, or previous calculation. That as much thought entered into their construction as is lavished upon his work by a modern architect is proved by the manner in which the carved stones fit into one another. It would be absurd to suppose that these tremendous façades bristling with scores of intricate designs could have been first placed in position and subsequently laden with the bas-reliefs they exhibit. It is plain that they were previously worked apart and separately from one entire design. Thus we see that the highest capabilities of the architect were essential in a measure to the erection of these imposing structures.

Architectural Districts

Although the mason-craft of the Maya peoples was essentially similar in all the regions populated by its various tribes and offshoots, there existed in the several localities occupied by them certain differences in construction and ornamentation which would almost justify us in dividing them into separate architectural spheres. In Chiapas, for example, we find the bas-relief predominant, whether in stone or stucco. In Honduras we find a stiffness of design which implies an older type of architecture, along with caryatides and memorial pillars of human shape. In Guatemala, again, we find traces of the employment of wood. As the civilisation of the Maya cannot be well comprehended without some knowledge of their

architecture, and as that art was unquestionably their national forte and the thing which most sharply distinguished them from the semisavage peoples that surrounded them, it will be well to consider it for a space as regards its better-known individual examples.

Fascination of the Subject

He would indeed be dull of imagination and of spirit who could enter into the consideration of such a subject as this without experiencing some thrill from the mystery which surrounds it. Although familiarised with the study of the Maya antiquities by reason of many years of close acquaintance with it, the author cannot approach the theme without a feeling of the most intense awe. We are considering the memorials of a race isolated for countless thousands of years from the rest of humanity—a race which by itself evolved a civilisation in every respect capable of comparison with those of ancient Egypt or Assyria. In these impenetrable forests and sun-baked plains mighty works were raised which tell of a culture of a lofty type. We are aware that the people who reared them entered into religious and perhaps philosophical considerations their interpretations of which place them upon a level with the most enlightened races of antiquity; but we have only stepped upon the margin of Maya history. What dread secrets, what scenes of orgic splendour have those carven walls witnessed? What solemn priestly conclave, what magnificence of rite, what marvels of initiation, have these forest temples known? These things we shall never learn. They are hidden from us in a gloom as palpable as that of the tree-encircled depths in which we find these shattered works of a once powerful hierarchy.

Mysterious Palenque

One of the most famous of these ancient centres of priestly domination is Palenque, situated in the modern state of Chiapas. This city was first brought into notice by Don José Calderon in 1774, when he discovered no less than eighteen palaces, twenty great buildings, and a hundred and sixty houses, which proves that in his day the primeval forest had not made such inroads upon the remaining buildings as it has during the past few generations. There is good evidence besides this that Palenque was standing at the time of Cortés' conquest of Yucatan. And here it will be well at once to dispel any conception the reader may have formed concerning the vast antiquity of these cities and the structures they contain. The very oldest of them cannot be of a date anterior to the thirteenth century, and few Americanists of repute would admit such an antiquity for them. There may be remains of a fragmentary nature here and there in Central America which are relatively more ancient. But no temple or edifice which remains standing can claim a greater antiquity.

Palenque is built in the form of an amphitheatre, and nestles on the lowest slopes of the Cordilleras. Standing on the central pyramid, the eye is met by a ring of ruined palaces and temples raised upon artificial terraces. Of these the principal and most imposing is the Palace, a pile reared upon a single platform, forming an irregular quadrilateral, with a double gallery on the east, north, and west sides, surrounding an inner structure with a similar gallery and two courtyards. It is evident that there was little system or plan observed in the construction of this edifice, an unusual circumstance in Maya architecture.

The dwelling apartments were situated on the southern side of the structure, and here there is absolute confusion, for buildings of all sorts and sizes jostle each other, and are reared on different levels.

Our interest is perhaps at first excited by three subterraneous apartments down a flight of gloomy steps. Here are -to be found three great stone tables, the edges of which are fretted with sculptured symbols. That these were altars admits of little doubt, although some visitors have not hesitated to call them dining tables! These constitute only one of the many puzzles in this building of 228 feet frontage, with a depth of 180 feet, which at the same time is only about 25 feet high!

On the north side of the Palace pyramid the façade of the Palace has crumbled into complete ruin, but some evidences of an entrance are still noticeable. There were probably fourteen doorways in all in the frontage, with a width of about 9 feet each, the piers of which were covered with figures in bas-relief. The inside of the galleries is also covered at intervals with similar designs, or medallions, many of which are probably representations of priests or priestesses who once dwelt within the classic shades and practised strange rites in the worship of gods long since forgotten. One of these is of a woman with delicate features and high-bred countenance, and the frame or rim surrounding it is decorated in a manner recalling the Louis XV style.

The east gallery is 114 feet long, the north 185 feet, and the west 102 feet, so that, as remarked above, a lack of symmetry is apparent. The great court is reached by a Mayan arch which leads on to a staircase, on each side of which grotesque human figures of the Maya type are sculptured. Whom they are intended to portray or what rite they are engaged in it would indeed be difficult to say. That they are priests may be hazarded, for they appear to be dressed in the ecclesiastical *maxtli* (girdle), and ont seems to be decorated with the beads seen in the pictures of the death-god. Moreover, they are mitred.

The courtyard is exceedingly irregular in shape. To the south side is a small building which has assisted our knowledge of Maya mural decoration; especially valuable is the handsome frieze with which it is adorned, on which we observe the rather familiar feathered serpent (Kukulcan or Quetzalcoatl). Everywhere we notice the flat Maya head-a racial type, perhaps brought about by deformation of the cranium in youth. One of the most important parts of the Palace from an architectural point of view is the east front of the inner wing, which is perhaps the best preserved, and exhibits the most luxurious ornamentation. Two roofed galleries supported by six pillars covered with bas-reliefs are reached by a staircase on which hieroglyphic signs still remain. The reliefs in cement are still faintly to be discerned on the pillars, and must have been of- great beauty. They represent mythological characters in various attitudes. Above, seven enormous heads frown on the explorer in grim menace. The effect of the entire façade is rich in the extreme, even in ruin, and from it we can obtain a faint idea of the splendours of this wonderful civilisation.

An Architectural Curiosity

One of the few towers to be seen among the ruins of Maya architecture stands at Palenque. It is square in shape and three stories in height, with sloping roof, and is not unlike the belfry of some little English

village church.

The building we have been describing, although traditionally known as a "palace," was undoubtedly a great monastery or ecclesiastical habitation. Indeed, the entire city of Palenque was solely a priestly centre, a place of pilgrimage. The bas-reliefs with their representations of priests and acolytes prove this, as does the absence of warlike or monarchical subjects.

The Temple of Inscriptions

The Temple of Inscriptions, perched on an eminence some 40 feet high, is the largest edifice in Palenque. It has a façade 74 feet long by 25 feet deep, composed of a great gallery which runs along the entire front of the fane. The building has been named from the inscriptions with which certain flagstones in the central apartment are covered. Three other temples occupy a piece of rising ground close by. These are the Temple of the Sun, closely akin in type to many Japanese temple buildings; the Temple of the Cross, in which a wonderful altar-piece was discovered; and the Temple of the Cross No. II. In the Temple of the Cross the inscribed altar gave its name to the building. In the central slab is a cross of the American pattern, its roots springing from the hideous head of the goddess Chicomecohuatl, the Earth-mother, or her Maya equivalent. Its branches stretch to where on the right and left stand two figures, evidently those of a priest and acolyte, performing some mysterious rite. On the apex of the tree is placed the sacred turkey, or "Emerald Fowl," to which offerings of maize paste are made. The whole is surrounded by inscriptions.

Aké and Itzamal

Thirty miles east of Merida lies Aké, the colossal and primeval ruins of which speak of early Maya occupation. Here are pyramids, tennis-courts, and gigantic pillars which once supported immense gallerics, all in a state of advanced ruin. Chief among these is the great pyramid and gallery, a mighty staircase rising toward lofty pillars, and somewhat reminiscent of Stonehenge. For what purpose it was constructed is quite unknown.

The House of Darkness

One ruin, tradition calls "The House of Darkness." Here no light enters save that which filters in by the open doorway. The vaulted roof is lost in a lofty gloom. So truly have the huge blocks of which the building is composed been laid that not even a needle could be inserted between them. The whole is coated with a hard plaster or cement

The Palace of Owls

The Knuc (Palace of Owls), where a beautiful frieze of diamond-shaped stones intermingling with spheres may be observed, is noteworthy. All here is undoubtedly of the first Yucatec era, the time when the Maya first overran the country.

At Itzamal the chief object of interest is the great pyramid of Kinich-Kakmo (The Sun's Face with Fiery Rays), the base of which covers an area of nearly 650 square feet. To this shrine thousands were wont to come in times of panic or famine, and from the summit, where was housed the glittering idol, the smoke of sacrifice ascended to the cloudless sky, whilst a multitude of white-robed priests and augurs chanted and prophesied. To the south of this mighty pile stand the ruins of the Ppapp-Hol-Chac (The House of Heads and Lightnings), the abode of the chief priest.

Itzamna's Fane

At Itzamal, too, stood one of the chief temples of the great god Itzamna, the legendary founder of the Maya empire. Standing on a lofty pyramid, four roads radiated from it, leading to Tabasco, Guatemala, and Chiapas; and here they brought the halt, the maimed, and the blind, aye, even the dead, for succour and resurrection, such faith had they in the mighty power of Kab-ul (The Miraculous Hand), as they designated the deity. The fourth road ran to the sacred isle of Cozumel, where first the men of Spain found the Maya cross, and supposed it to prove that St. Thomas had discovered the American continent in early times, and had converted the natives to a Christianity which had become debased.

Bearded Gods

To the west arose another pyramid, on the summit of which was built the palace of Hunpictok (The Commander-in-chief of Eight Thousand Flints), in allusion, probably, to the god of lightning, Hurakan, whose gigantic face, once dominating the basement wall, has now disappeared. This face possessed huge mustachios, appendages unknown to the Maya race; and, indeed, we are struck with the frequency with which Mexican and Mayan gods and heroes are adorned with beards and other hirsute ornaments both on the monuments and in the manuscripts. Was the original governing class a bearded race? It is scarcely probable. Whence, then, the ever-recurring beard and moustache? These may have been developed in the priestly class by constant ceremonial shaving, which often produces a thin beard in the Mongolians—as witness the modern Japanese, who in imitating a custom of the West often succeed in producing quite respectable beards.

A Colossal Head

Not far away is to be found a gigantic head, probably that of the god Itzamna. It is 13 feet in height, and the features were formed by first roughly tracing them in rubble, and afterwards coating the whole with plaster. The figure is surrounded by spirals, symbols of wind or speech. On the opposite side of the pyramid alluded to above is found a wonderful bas-relief representing a tiger couchant, with a human

head of the Maya type, probably depicting one of the early ancestors of the Maya, Balam-Quitze (Tiger with the Sweet Smile), of whom we read in the *Popol Vuh*.

Chichen-Itza

At Chichen-Itza, in Yucatan, the chief wonder is the gigantic pyramid-temple known as El Castillo. It is reached by a steep flight of steps, and from it the vast ruins of Chichen radiate in a circular manner. To the east is the market-place, to the north a mighty temple, and a tennis-court, perhaps the best example of its kind in Yucatan, whilst to the west stand the Nunnery and the Chichan-Chob, or prison. Concerning Chichen-Itza Cogolludo tells the following story: "A king of Chichen called Canek fell desperately in love with a young princess, who, whether she did not return his affection or whether she was compelled to obey a parental mandate, married a more powerful Yucatec *cacique*. The discarded lover, unable to bear his loss, and moved by love and despair, armed his dependents and suddenly fell upon his successful rival. Then the gaiety of the feast was exchanged for the din of war, and amidst the confusion the Chichen prince disappeared, carrying off the beautiful bride. But conscious that his power was less than his rival's, and fearing his vengeance, he fled the country with most of his vassals." It is a historical fact that the inhabitants of Chichen abandoned their city, but whether for the reason given in this story or not cannot be discovered.

The Nunnery

The Nunnery at Chichen is a building of great beauty of outline and decoration, the frieze above the doorway and the fretted ornamentation of the upper story exciting the admiration of most writers on the subject. Here dwelt the sacred women, the chief of whom, like their male prototypes, were dedicated to Kukulcan and regarded with much reverence. The base of the building is occupied by eight large figures, and over the door is the representation of a priest with a *panache*, whilst a row of gigantic heads crowns the north façade. Here, too, are figures of the wind-god, with projecting lips, which many generations of antiquarians took for heads of elephants with waving trunks! The entire building is one of the gems of Central American architecture, and delights the eye of archæologist and artist alike. In El Castillo are found wonderful bas-reliefs depicting bearded men, evidently the priests of Quetzalcoatl, himself bearded, and to the practised eye one of these would appear to be wearing a false hirsute appendage, as kings were wont to do in ancient Egypt. Were these beards artificial and symbolical?

The "Writing in the Dark"

The Akab-sib (Writing in the Dark) is a bas-relief found on the lintel of an inner door at the extremity of the building. It represents a figure seated before a vase, with outstretched forefinger, and whence it got its traditional appellation it would be hard to say, unless the person represented is supposed to be in the act of writing. The figure is surrounded by inscriptions. At Chichen were found a statue of Tlaloc, the god of rain or moisture, and immense torsos representing Kukulcan. There also was a terrible well into which

men were cast in time of drought as a propitiation to the rain-god.

Kabah

At Kabah there is a marvellous frontage which strikingly recalls that of a North American Indian totem-house in its fantastic wealth of detail. The ruins are scattered over a large area, and must all have been at one time painted in brilliant colours. Here two horses' heads in stone were unearthed, showing that the natives had copied faithfully the steeds of the conquering Spaniards. Nothing is known of the history of Kabah, but its neighbour, Uxmal, fifteen miles distant, is much more famous.

Uxmal

The imposing pile of the Casa del Gobernador (Governor's Palace, so called) at Uxmal is perhaps the best known and described of all the aboriginal buildings of Central America. It occupies three successive colossal terraces, and its frieze runs in a line of 325 feet, and is divided into panels, each of which frames a gigantic head of priest or deity. The striking thing concerning this edifice is that although it has been abandoned for over three hundred years it is still almost as fresh architecturally as when it left the builder's hands. Here and there a lintel has fallen, or stones have been removed in a spirit of vandalism to assist in the erection of a neighbouring *hacienda*, but on the whole we possess in it the most unspoiled piece of Yucatec building in existence. On the side of the palace where stands the main entrance, directly over the gateway, is the most wonderful fretwork and ornamentation, carried out in high relief, above which soar three eagles in hewn stone, surmounted by a plumed human head. In the plinth are three heads, which in type recall the Roman, surrounded by inscriptions. A clear proof of the comparative lateness of the period in which Uxmal was built is found in the circumstance that all the lintels over the doorways are of wood, of which much still exists in a good state of preservation. Many of the joists of the roofs were also of timber, and were fitted into the stonework by means of specially carved ends.

The Dwarf's House

There is also a nunnery which forcibly recalls that at Chichen, and is quite as elaborate and flamboyant in its architectural design. But the real mystery at Uxmal is the Casa del Adivino (The Prophet's House), also locally known as "The Dwarf's House." It consists of two portions, one of which is on the summit of an artificial pyramid, whilst the other, a small but beautifully finished chapel, is situated lower down facing the town. The loftier building is reached by an exceedingly steep staircase, and bears every evidence of having been used as a sanctuary, for here were discovered cacao and copal, recently burnt, by Cogolludo as late as 1656, which is good evidence that the Yucatecs did not all at once abandon their ancient faith at the promptings of the Spanish fathers.

The Legend of the Dwarf

In his *Travels in Yucatan* Stephens has a legend relating to this house which may well be given in his own words: "An old woman," he says, "lived alone in her hut, rarely leaving her chimney-corner. She was much distressed at having no children, and in her grief one day took an egg, wrapped it up carefully in cotton cloth, and put it in a corner of her hut. She looked every day in great anxiety, but no change in the egg was observable. One morning, however, she found the shell broken, and a lovely tiny creature was stretching out its arms to her. The old woman was in raptures. She took it to her heart, gave it a nurse, and was so careful of it that at the end of a year the baby walked and talked as well as a grown-up man. But he stopped growing. The good old woman in her joy and delight exclaimed that the baby should be a great chief. One day she told him to go to the king's palace and engage him in a trial of strength. The dwarf begged hard not to be sent on such an enterprise. But the old woman insisted on his going, and he was obliged to obey. When ushered into the presence of the sovereign he threw down his gauntlet. The latter smiled, and asked him to lift a stone of three arobes (75 lb.). The child returned crying to his mother, who sent him back, saying, 'If the king can lift the stone, you can lift it too.' The king did take it up, but so did the dwarf. His strength was tried in many other ways, but all the king did was as easily done by the dwarf. Wroth at being outdone by so puny a creature, the prince told the dwarf that unless he built a palace loftier than any in the city he should die. The affrighted dwarf returned to the old woman, who bade him not to despair, and the next morning they both awoke in the palace which is still standing. The king saw the palace with amazement. He instantly sent for the dwarf, and desired him to collect two bundles of *cogoiol* (a kind of hard wood), with one of which he would strike the dwarf on the head) and consent to be struck in return by his tiny adversary. The latter again returned to his mother moaning and lamenting. But the old woman cheered him up, and, placing a *tortilla* on his head, sent him back to the king. The trial took place in the presence of all the state grandees. The king broke the whole of his bundle on the dwarf's head without hurting him in the least, seeing which he wished to save his own head from the impending ordeal; but his word had been passed before his assembled court, and he could not well refuse. The dwarf struck, and at the second blow the king's skull was broken to pieces. The spectators immediately proclaimed the victorious dwarf their sovereign. After this the old woman disappeared. But in the village of Mani, fifty miles distant, is a deep well leading to a subterraneous passage which extends as far as Merida. In this passage is an old woman sitting on the bank of a river shaded by a great tree, having a serpent by her side. She sells water in small quantities, accepting no money, for she must have human beings, innocent babies, which are devoured by the serpent. This old woman is the dwarf's mother."

The interpretation of this myth is by no means difficult. The old woman is undoubtedly the rain-Goddess, the dwarf the Man of the Sun who emerges from the cosmic egg. In Yucatan dwarfs were sacred to the sun-god, and were occasionally sacrificed to him, for reasons which appear obscure.

The Mound of Sacrifice

Another building at Uxmal the associations of which render it of more than passing interest is the Pyramid of Sacrifice, an edifice built on the plan of the Mexican *teocalli*. Indeed, it is probably of Aztec origin, and may even have been erected by the mercenaries who during the fifteenth century swarmed from Mexico into Yucatan and Guatemala to take service with the rival chieftains who carried on civil

war in those states. Beside this is another mound which was crowned by a very beautiful temple, now in an advanced state of ruin. The "Pigeon House" is an ornate pile with pinnacles pierced by large openings which probably served as dovecotes. The entire architecture of Uxmal displays a type more primitive than that met elsewhere in Yucatan. There is documentary evidence to prove that so late as 1673 the Indians still worshipped in the ruins of Uxmal, where they burnt copal, and performed "other detestable sacrifices." So that even a hundred and fifty years of Spanish rule had not sufficed to wean the natives from the worship of the older gods to whom their fathers had for generations bowed down. This would also seem conclusive evidence that the ruins of Uxmal at least were the work of the existing race.

The Phantom City

In his *Travels in Central America* Stephens recounts a fascinating story told him by a priest of Santa Cruz del Quiche, to the effect that four days' journey from that place a great Indian city was to be seen, densely populated, and preserving the ancient civilisation of the natives. He had, indeed, beheld it from the summit of a cliff, shining in glorious whiteness many leagues away. This was perhaps Lorillard City, discovered by Suarez, and afterwards by Charnay. In general type Lorillard closely resembles Palenque. Here was found a wonderfully executed stone idol, which Charnay thought represented a different racial type from that seen in the other Central American cities. The chief finds of interest in this ancient city were the intricate bas-reliefs, one over the central door of a temple, probably a symbolic representation of Quetzalcoatl, who holds the rain-cross, in both hands, and is seen *vis-à-vis* with an acolyte, also holding the symbol, though it is possible that the individual represented may have been the high-priest of Quetzalcoatl or Kukulcan. Another bas-relief represents a priest sacrificing to Kukulcan by passing a rope of maguey fibre over his tongue for the purpose of drawing blood -an instance of the substitution in sacrifice of the part for the whole.

The Horse-God

At Peten-Itza, Cortés left his horse, which had fallen sick, to the care of the Indians. The animal died under their mismanagement and because of the food offered it, and the terrified natives, fancying it a divine being, raised an image of it, and called it Izimin Chac (Thunder and Lightning), because they had seen its rider discharge a firearm, and they imagined that the flash and the report had proceeded from the creature. The sight of the idol aroused such wrath in the zealous bosom of a certain Spanish monk that he broke it with a huge stone-and, but for the interference of the *cacique*, would have suffered death for his temerity. Peten was a city "filled with idols," as was Tayasal, close at hand, where in the seventeenth century no less than nine new temples were built, which goes to prove that the native religion was by no means extinct. One of these new temples, according to Villagutierre, had a Spanish balcony of hewn stone! In the Temple of the Sun at Tikal, an adjoining city, is a wonderful altar panel, representing in unknown deity, and here also are many of those marvellously carved idols of which Stephens gives such capital illustrations in his fascinating book.

Copan

Copan, one of the most interesting of these wondrous city-centres., the name of which has, indeed, become almost a household word, is in the same district as the towns just described, and abounds chiefly in monolithic images. It yielded after a desperate struggle to Hernandez de Chaves, one of Alvarado's lieutenants, in 1530. The monolithic images so abundantly represented here are evolved from the stelx and the bas relief, and are not statues in the proper sense of the term, as they are not completely cut away from the stone background out of which they were carved. An altar found at Copan exhibits real skill in sculpture, the head-dresses, ornaments, and expressions of the eight figures carved on its sides being elaborate in the extreme and exceedingly lifelike. Here again we notice a fresh racial type, which goes to prove that one race alone cannot have been responsible for these marvellous ruined cities and all that they contain and signify. We have to imagine a shifting of races and a fluctuation of peoples in Central America such as we know took place in Europe and Asia before we can rightly understand the ethnological problems of the civilised sphere of the New World, and any theory which does not take due account of such conditions is doomed to failure.

Mitla

We now come to the last of these stupendous remnants of a vanished civilisation-Mitla, by no means the least of the works of civilised man in Central America. At the period of the conquest the city occupied a wide area, but at the present time only six palaces and three ruined pyramids are left standing. The great palace is a vast edifice in the shape of the letter T, and measures 130 feet in its greater dimension, with an apartment of a like size. Six monolithic columns which supported the roof still stand in gigantic isolation, but the roof itself has long fallen in. A dark passage leads to the inner court, and the walls of this are covered with mosaic work in panels which recalls somewhat the pattern known as the "Greek fret." The lintels over the doorways are of huge blocks of stone nearly eighteen feet long. Of this building Viollet-le-Duc says: "The monuments of Greece and Rome in their best time can alone compare with the splendour of this great edifice."

A Place of Sepulture

The ruins at Mitla bear no resemblance to those of Mexico or Yucatan, either as regards architecture or ornamentation, for whereas the Yucatec buildings possess overlapping walls, the palaces of Mitla consist of perpendicular walls intended to support flat roofs. Of these structures the second and fourth palaces alone are in such a state of preservation as to permit of general description. The second palace shows by its sculptured lintel and two inner columns that the same arrangement was observed in its construction as in the great palace just described. The fourth palace has on its southern faqade oblong panels and interesting caryatides or pillars in the shape of human figures. These palaces consisted of four upper apartments, finely sculptured, and a like number of rooms on the lower story, which was occupied by the high-priest, and to which the king came to mourn on the demise of a relative. Here, too, the priests were

entombed, and in an adjoining room the idols were kept. Into a huge underground chamber the bodies of eminent warriors and sacrificial victims were cast. Attempts have been made to identify Mitla with Mictlan, the Mexican Hades, and there is every reason to suppose that the identification is correct. It must be borne in mind that Mictlan was as much a place of the dead as a place of punishment, as was the Greek Hades, and therefore might reasonably, signify a place of sepulture, such as Mitla undoubtedly was. The following passages from the old historians of Mitla, Torquemada and Burgoa, throw much light on this aspect of the city, and besides are full of the most intense interest and curious information, so that they may be given *in extenso*. But before passing on to them we should for a moment glance at Seler's suggestion that the American race imagined that their ancestors had originally issued from the underworld through certain caverns into the light of day, and that this was the reason why Mitla was not only a burial-place but a sanctuary.

An Old Description of Mitla

Of Mitla Father Torquemada writes:

"When some monks of my order, the Franciscan, passed, preaching and shriving, through the province of Zapoteca, whose capital city is Tehuantepec, they came to a village which was called Mictlan, that is, Underworld [Hell]. Besides mentioning the large number of people in the village they told of buildings which were prouder and more magnificent than any which they had hitherto seen in New Spain. Among them was a temple of the evil spirit and living-rooms for his demoniacal servants, and among other fine things there was a hall with ornamented panels, which were constructed of stone in a variety of arabesques and other very remarkable designs. There were doorways there, each one of which was built of but three stones, two upright at the sides and one across them, in such a manner that, although these doorways were very high and broad, the stones sufficed for their entire construction. They were so thick and broad that we were assured there were few like them. There was another hall in these buildings, or rectangular temples, which was erected entirely on round stone pillars, very high and very thick, so thick that two grown men could scarcely encircle them with their arms, nor could one of them reach the fingertips of the other. These pillars were all in one piece, and, it was said, the whole shaft of a pillar measured 5 ells from top to bottom, and they were very much like those of the Church of Santa Maria Maggiore in Rome, very skilfully made and polished."

Father Burgoa gives a more exact description. He says:

"The Palace of the Living and of the Dead was built for the use of this person [the high-priest of the Zapotecs]. . . . They built this magnificent house or pantheon in the shape of a rectangle, with portions rising above the earth and portions built down into the earth, the latter in the hole or cavity which was found below the surface of the earth, and ingeniously made the chambers of equal size by the manner of joining them, leaving a spacious court in the middle; and in order to secure four equal chambers they accomplished what barbarian heathen (as they were) could only achieve by the powers and skill of an architect. It is not known in what stone-pit they quarried the pillars, which are so thick that two men can scarcely encircle them with their arms. These are, to be sure, mere shafts without capital or pedestal, but

they are wonderfully regular and smooth, and they are about 5 ells high and in one piece. These served to support the roof, which consists of stone slabs instead of beams. The slabs are about 2 ells long, 1 ell broad, and half an ell thick, extending from pillar to pillar. The pillars stand in a row, one behind the other, in order to receive the weight. The stone slabs are so regular and so exactly fitted that, without any mortar or cement, at the joints they resemble mortised beams. The four rooms, which are very spacious, are arranged in exactly the same way and covered with the same kind of roofing. But in the construction of the walls the greatest architects of the earth have been surpassed, as I have not found this kind of architecture described either among the Egyptians or among the Greeks, for they begin at the base with a narrow outline and, as the structure rises in height, spread out in wide copings at the top, so that the upper part exceeds the base in breadth and looks as if it would fall over. The inner side of the walls consists of a mortar or stucco of such hardness that no one knows with what kind of liquid it could have been mixed. The outside is of such extraordinary workmanship that on a masonry wall about an ell in height there are placed stone slabs with a projecting edge, which form the support for an endless number of small white stones, the smallest of which are a sixth of an ell long, half as broad, and a quarter as thick, and which are as smooth and regular as if they had all come from one mould. They had so many of these stones that, setting them in, one beside the other, they formed with them a large number of different beautiful geometric designs, each an ell broad and running the whole length of the wall, each varying in pattern up to the crowning piece, which was the finest of all. And what has always seemed inexplicable to the greatest architects is the adjustment of these little stones without a single handful of mortar, and the fact that without tools, with nothing but hard stones and sand, they could achieve such solid work that, though the whole structure is very old and no one knows who made it, it has been preserved until the present day.

Human Sacrifice at Mitla

"I carefully examined these monuments some thirty years ago in the chambers above ground, which are constructed of the same size and in the same way as those below ground, and, though single pieces were in ruins because some stones had become loosened, there was still much to admire. The doorways were very large, the sides of each being of single stones of the same thickness as the wall, and the lintel was made out of another stone which held the two lower ones together at the top. There were four chambers above ground and four below. The latter were arranged according to their purpose in such a way that one front chamber served as chapel and sanctuary for the idols) which were placed on a great stone which served as an altar. And for the more important feasts which they celebrated with sacrifices, or at the burial of a king or great lord, the high-priest instructed the lesser priests or the subordinate temple officials who served him to prepare the chapel and his vestments and a large quantity of the incense used by them. And then he descended with a great retinue, while none of the common people saw him or dared to look in his face, convinced that if they did so they would fall dead to the earth as a punishment for their boldness. And when he entered the chapel they put on him a long white cotton garment made like an alb, and over that a garment shaped like a dalmatic, which was embroidered with pictures of wild beasts and birds; and they put a cap on his head, and on his feet a kind of shoe woven of many coloured feathers. And when he had put on these garments he walked with solemn mien and measured step to the altar, bowed low before the idols, renewed the incense, and then in quite unintelligible murmurs he began

to converse with these images, these depositories of infernal spirits, and continued in this sort of prayer with hideous grimaces and writhings, uttering inarticulate sounds, which filled all present with fear and terror, till he came out of that diabolical trance and told those standing around the lies and fabrications which the spirit had imparted to him or which he had invented himself. When human beings were sacrificed the ceremonies were multiplied, and the assistants of the high-priest stretched the victim out upon a large stone, baring his breast, which they tore open with a great stone knife, while the body writhed in fearful convulsions, and they laid the heart bare, ripping it out, and with it the soul, which the devil took, while they carried the heart to the high-priest that he might offer it to the idols by holding it to their mouths, among other ceremonies; and the body was thrown into the burial-place of their 'blessed,' as they called them. And if after the sacrifice he felt inclined to detain those who begged any favour he sent them word by the subordinate priests not to leave their houses till their gods were appeased, and he commanded them to do penance meanwhile, to fast and to speak with no woman, so that, until this father of sin had interceded for the absolution of the penitents and had declared the gods appeased, they did not dare to cross their thresholds.

"The second (underground) chamber was the burial-place of these high-priests, the third that of the kings of Theozapotlan, whom they brought hither rich y dressed in their best attire, feathers, jewels, golden necklaces, and precious stones, placing a shield in the left hand and a javelin in the right, just as they used them in war. And at their burial rites great mourning prevailed; the instruments which were played made mournful sounds; and with loud wailing and continuous sobbing they chanted the life and exploits of their lord until they laid him on the structure which they had prepared for this purpose.

Living Sacrifices

"The last (underground) chamber had a second door at the rear, which led to a dark and gruesome room. This was closed with a stone slab, which occupied the whole entrance. Through this door they, threw the bodies of the victims and of the great lords and chieftains who had fallen in battle, and they brought them from the spot where they fell, even when it was very far off, to this burial-place; and so great was the barbarous infatuation of those Indians that, in the belief of the happy life which awaited them, many who were oppressed by diseases or hardships begged this infamous priest to accept them as living sacrifices and allow them to enter through that portal and roam about in the dark interior of the mountain, to seek the feasting-places of their forefathers. And when any one obtained this favour the servants of the high-priest led him thither with special ceremonies, and after they allowed him to enter through the small door they rolled the stone before it again and took leave of him, and the unhappy man, wandering in that abyss of darkness, died of hunger and thirst, beginning already in life the pain of his damnation, and on account of this horrible abyss they called this village Liyobaa.

The Cavern of Death

"When later there fell upon these people the light of the Gospel, its servants took much trouble to instruct them, and to find out whether this error, common to all these nations, still prevailed; and they learned

from the stories which had been handed down that all were convinced that this damp cavern extended more than thirty leagues underground, and that its roof was supported by pillars. And there were people, zealous prelates anxious for knowledge, who, in order to convince these ignorant people of their error, went into this cave accompanied by a large number of people bearing lighted torches and firebrands, and descended several large steps. And they soon came upon many great buttresses which formed a kind of street. They had prudently brought a quantity of rope with them to use as guiding-lines, that they might not lose themselves in this confusing labyrinth. And the putrefaction and the bad odour and the dampness of the earth were very great, and there was also a cold wind which blew out their torches. And after they had gone a short distance, fearing to be overpowered by the stench, or to step on poisonous reptiles, of which some had been seen, they resolved to go out again, and to completely wall up this back door of hell. The four buildings above ground were the only ones which still remained open, and they had a court and chambers like those underground; and the ruins of these have lasted even to the present day.

Palace of the High-Priest

"One of the rooms above ground was the palace of the high-priest, where he sat and slept, for the apartment offered room and opportunity for everything. The throne was like a high cushion, with a high back to lean ainst, all of tiger-skin, stuffed entirely with delicate afeathers, or with fine grass which was used for this purpose. The other seats were smaller, even when the king came to visit him. The authority of this devilish priest was so great that there was no one who dared to cross the court, and to avoid this the other three chambers had doors in the rear, through which even the kings entered. For this purpose they had alleys and passage-ways on the outside above and below, by which people could enter and go out when they came to see the high-priest. . . .

"The second chamber above ground was that of the priests and the assistants of the high-priest. The third was that of the king when he came. The fourth was that of the other chieftains and captains, and though the space was small for so great a number, and for so many different families, yet they accommodated themselves to each other out of respect for the place, and avoided dissensions and factions. Furthermore, there was no other administration of justice in this place than that of the high-priest, to whose unlimited power all bowed.

Furniture of the Temples

"All the rooms were clean, and well furnished with mats. It was not the custom to sleep on bedsteads, however great a lord might be. They used very tastefully braided mats, which were spread on the floor, and soft skins of animals and delicate fabrics for coverings. Their food consisted usually of animals killed in the hunt-deer, rabbits, armadillos, &c., and also birds, which they killed with snares or arrows. The bread, made of their maize, was white and well kneaded. Their drinks were always cold, made of ground chocolate, which was mixed with water and pounded maize. Other drinks were made of pulpy and of crushed fruits, which were then mixed with the intoxicating drink prepared from the agave; for since the common people were forbidden the use of intoxicating drinks, there was always an abundance

of these on hand."

[Next: CHAPTER V: Myths of the Maya](#)

CHAPTER V: Myths of the Maya

Mythology of the Maya

OUR knowledge of the mythology of the Maya is by no means so full and comprehensive as in the case of Mexican mythology. Traditions are few and obscure, and the hieroglyphic matter is closed to us. But one great mine of Maya-Kiche mythology exists which furnishes us with much information regarding Kiche cosmogony and pseudo-history, with here and there an interesting allusion to the various deities of the Kiche pantheon. This is the *Popol Vuh*, a volume in which a little real history is mingled with much mythology. It was composed in the form in which we now possess it by a Christianised native of Guatemala in the seventeenth century, and copied in Kiche, in which it was originally written, by one Francisco Ximenes, a monk, who also added to it a Spanish translation.

The Lost "Popol Vuh"

For generations antiquarians interested in this wonderful compilation were aware that it existed somewhere in Guatemala, and many were the regrets expressed regarding their inability to unearth it. A certain Don Felix Cabrera had made use of it early in the nineteenth century, but the whereabouts of the copy he had seen could not be discovered. A Dr. C. Scherzer, of Austria, resolved, if possible, to discover it, and paid a visit to Guatemala in 1854 for that purpose. After a diligent search he succeeded in finding the lost manuscript in the University of San Carlos in the city of Guatemala. Ximenes, the copyist, had placed it in the library of the convent of Chichicastenango. whence it passed to the San Carlos library in 1830

Genuine Character of the Work

Much doubt has been cast upon the genuine character of the *Popol Vuh*, principally by persons who were almost if not entirely ignorant of the problems of preColumbian history in America. Its genuine character, however, is by no means difficult to prove. It has been stated that it is a mere *réchauffé* of the known facts of Maya history coloured by Biblical knowledge, a native version of the Christian Bible. But such a theory will not stand when it is shown that the matter it contains squares with the accepted facts of Mexican mythology, upon which the *Popol Vuh* throws considerable light. Moreover, the entire work bears the stamp of being a purely native compilation, and has a flavour of great antiquity. Our knowledge of the general principles of mythology, too, prepares us for the unqualified acceptance of the material of the *Popol Vuh*, or we find there the stories and tales, the conceptions and ideas connected with early religion which are the property of no one people, but of all peoples and races in an early social state.

Likeness to other Pseudo-Histories

We find in this interesting book a likeness to many other works of early times. The *Popol Vuh* is, indeed, of the same genre and class as the *Heimskringla* of Snorre, the history of Saxo Grammaticus, the Chinese history in the *Five Books*, the Japanese *Nihongi*, and many other similar compilations. But it surpasses all these in pure interest because it is the only native American work that has come down to us from pre-Columbian times.

The name "Popol Vuh " means "The Collection of Written Leaves," which proves that the book must have contained traditional matter reduced to writing at a very early period. It is, indeed, a compilation of mythological character, interspersed with pseudo-history, which, as the account reaches modern times, shades off into pure history and tells the deeds of authentic personages. The language in which it was written, the Kiche, was a dialect of the Maya-Kiche tongue spoken at the time of the conquest in Guatemala, Honduras, and San Salvador, and still the tongue of the native populations in these districts.

The Creation Story

The beginning of this interesting book is taken up with the Kiche story of the creation, and what occurred directly subsequent to that event. We are told that the god Hurakan, the mighty wind, a deity in whom we can discern a Kiche equivalent to Tezcatlipoca, passed over the universe, still wrapped in gloom. He called out "Earth", and the solid land appeared. Then the chief gods took counsel among themselves as to what should next be made. These were Hurakan, Gucumatz or Quetzalcoatl, and Xpiyacoc and Xmucane, the mother and father gods. They agreed that animals should be created. This was accomplished, and they next turned their attention to the framing of man. They made a number of mannikins carved out of wood. But these were irreverent and angered the gods, who resolved to bring about their downfall. Then Hurakan (The Heart of Heaven) caused the waters to be swollen, and a mighty flood came upon the mannikins. Also a thick resinous rain descended upon them. The bird Xecotcovach tore out their eyes, the bird Camulatz cut off their heads, the bird Cotzbalarn devoured their flesh, the bird Tecumbalam broke their bones and sinews and ground them into powder. Then all sorts of beings, great and small, abused the mannikins. The household utensils and domestic animals jeered at them, and made game of them in their plight. The dogs and hens said: "Very badly have you treated us and you have bitten us. Now we bite you in turn." The millstones said: "Very much were we tormented by you, and daily, daily, night and day, it was squeak, screech, screech, holi, holi, huqi, huqi, for your sake. Now you shall feel our strength, and we shall grind your flesh and make meal of your bodies. " And the dogs growled at the unhappy images because they had not been fed, and tore them with their teeth. The cups and platters said: "Pain and misery you gave us, smoking our tops and sides, cooking us over the fire, burning and hurting us as if we had no feeling. Now it is your turn, and you shall burn." The unfortunate mannikins ran hither and thither in their despair. They mounted upon the roofs of the houses, but the houses crumbled beneath their feet; they tried to climb to the tops of the trees, but the trees hurled them down; they were even repulsed by the caves, which closed before them. Thus this ill-starred race was finally destroyed and

overthrown, and the only vestiges of them which remain are certain of their progeny, the little monkeys which dwell in the woods.

Vukub-Cakix, the Great Macaw

Ere the earth was quite recovered from the wrathful flood which had descended upon it there lived a being orgulous and full of pride, called Vukub-Cakix (Seventimes-the-colour-of-fire-the Kiche name for the great macaw bird). His teeth were of emerald, and other parts of him shone with the brilliance of gold and silver. In short, it is evident that he was a sun-and-moon god of prehistoric times. He boasted dreadfully, and his conduct so irritated the other gods that they resolved upon his destruction. His two sons, Zipacna and Cabrakan (Cockspur or Earth-heaper, and Earthquake), were earthquake-gods of the type of the Jotuns of Scandinavian myth or the Titans of Greek legend. These also were prideful and arrogant, and to cause their downfall the gods despatched the heavenly twins Hun-Apu and Xbalanque to earth, with instructions to chastise the trio.

Vukub-Cakix prided himself upon his possession of the wonderful nanze-tree, the tapal, bearing a fruit round, yellow, and aromatic, upon which he breakfasted every morning. One morning he mounted to its summit, whence he could best espy the choicest fruits, when he was surprised and infuriated to observe that two strangers had arrived there before him, and had almost denuded the tree of its produce. On seeing Vukub, Hun-Apu raised a blow-pipe to his mouth and blew a dart at the giant. It struck him on the mouth, and he fell from the top of the tree to the ground. Hun-Apu leapt down upon Vukub and grappled with him, but the giant in terrible anger seized the god by the arm and wrenched it from the body. He then returned to his house, where he was met by his wife, Chimalmat, who inquired for what reason he roared with pain. In reply he pointed to his mouth, and so full of anger was he against Hun-Apu that he took the arm he had wrenched from him and hung it over a blazing fire. He then threw himself down to bemoan his injuries, consoling himself, however, with the idea that he had avenged himself upon the disturbers of his peace.

Whilst Vukub-Cakix moaned and howled with the dreadful pain which he felt in his jaw and teeth (for the dart which had pierced him was probably poisoned) the arm of Hun-Apu hung over the fire, and was turned round and round and basted by Vukub's spouse, Chimalmat. The sun-god rained bitter imprecations upon the interlopers who had penetrated to his paradise and had caused him such woe, and he gave vent to dire threats of what would happen if he succeeded in getting them into his power.

But Hun-Apu and Xbalanque were not minded that Vukub-Cakix should escape so easily, and the recovery of Hun-Apu's arm must be made at all hazards. So they went to consult two great and wise magicians, Xpiyacoc and Xmucane, in whom we see two of the original Kiche creative deities, who advised them to proceed with them in disguise to the dwelling of Vukub, if they wished to recover the lost arm. The old magicians resolved to disguise themselves as doctors, and dressed Hun-Apu and Xbalanque in other garments to represent their sons.

Shortly they arrived at the mansion of Vukub, and while still some way off they could hear his groans

and cries. Presenting themselves at the door, they accosted him. They told him that they had heard some one crying out in pain, and that as famous doctors they considered it their duty to ask who was suffering.

Vukub appeared quite satisfied, but closely questioned the old wizards concerning the two young men who accompanied them.

"They are our sons," they replied.

"Good," said Vukub. " Do you think you will be able to cure me?"

"We have no doubt whatever upon that head."

answered Xpiyacoc. "You have sustained very bad injuries to your mouth and eyes."

"The demons who shot me with an arrow from their, blow-pipe are the cause of my sufferings," said Vukub. "If you are able to cure me I shall reward you richly."

"Your Highness has many bad teeth, which must be removed," said the wily old magician. "Also the balls of your eyes appear to me to be diseased."

Vukub appeared highly alarmed, but the magicians speedily reassured him.

"It is necessary," said Xpiyacoc, "that we remove your teeth, but we will take care to replace them with grains of maize, which you will find much more agreeable in every way."

The unsuspecting giant agreed to the operation, and very quickly Xpiyacoc, with the help of Xmucane, removed his teeth of emerald, and replaced them by grains of white maize. A change quickly came over the Titan. His brilliancy speedily vanished, and when they removed the balls of his eyes he sank into insensibility and died.

All this time the wife of Vukub was turning Hun-Apu's arm over the fire, but Hun-Apu snatched the limb from above the brazier, and with the help of the magicians replaced it upon his shoulder. The discomfiture of Vukub was then complete. The party left his dwelling feeling that their mission had been accomplished.

The Earth-Giants

But in reality it was only partially accomplished, because Vukub's two sons, Zipacna and Cabrakan, still remained to be dealt with. Zipacna was daily employed in heaping up mountains, while Cabrakan, his brother, shook them in earthquake. The vengeance of Hun-Apu and Xbalanque was first directed against Zipacna, and they conspired with a band of young men to bring about his death.

The young men, four hundred in number, pretended to be engaged in building a house. They cut down a large tree, which they made believe was to be the roof-tree of their dwelling, and waited in a part of the forest through which they knew Zipacna must pass. After a while they could hear the giant crashing through the trees. He came into sight, and when he saw them standing round the giant tree-trunk, which they could not lift, he seemed very much amused.

"What have you there, O little ones?" he said laughing.

"Only a tree, your Highness, which we have felled for the roof-tree of a new house we are building."

"Cannot you carry it?" asked the giant disdainfully.

"No, your Highness," they made answer; "it is much too heavy to be lifted even by our united efforts."

With a good-natured laugh the Titan stooped and lifted the great trunk upon his shoulder. Then, bidding them lead the way, he trudged through the forest, evidently not disconcerted in the least by his great burden. Now the young men, incited by Hun-Apu and Xbalanque, had dug a great ditch, which they pretended was to serve for the foundation of their new house. Into this they requested Zipacna to descend, and, scenting no mischief, the giant readily complied. On his reaching the bottom his treacherous acquaintances cast huge trunks of trees upon him, but on hearing them coming down he quickly took refuge in a small side tunnel which the youths had constructed to serve as a cellar beneath their house.

Imagining the giant to be killed, they began at once to express their delight by singing and dancing, and to lend colour to his stratagem Zipacna despatched several friendly ants to the surface with strands of hair, which the young men concluded had been taken from his dead body. Assured by the seeming proof of his death, the youths proceeded to build their house upon the tree-trunks which they imagined covered Zipacna's body, and, producing a quantity of pulque, they began to make merry over the end of their enemy. For some hours their new dwelling rang with revelry.

All this time Zipacna, quietly hidden below, was listening to the hubbub and waiting his chance to revenge himself upon those who had entrapped him.

Suddenly arising in his giant might, he cast the house and all its inmates high in the air. The dwelling was utterly demolished, and the band of youths were hurled with such force into the sky that they remained there, and in the stars we call the Pleiades we can still discern them wearily waiting an opportunity to return to earth.

The Undoing of Zipacna

But Hun-Apu and Xbalanque, grieved that their comrades had so perished, resolved that Zipacna must

not be permitted to escape so easily. He, carrying the mountains by night, sought his food by day on the shore of the river, where he wandered catching fish and crabs. The brothers made a large artificial crab, which they placed in a cavern at the bottom of a ravine. They then cunningly undermined a huge mountain, and awaited events. Very soon they saw Zipacna wandering along the side of the river, and asked him where he was going.

"Oh, I am only seeking my daily food," replied the giant.

"And what may that consist of asked the brothers.

"Only of fish and crabs," replied Zipacna.

"Oh, there is a crab down yonder," said the crafty brothers, pointing to the bottom of the ravine. "We espied it as we came along. Truly, it is a great crab, and will furnish you with a capital breakfast."

Splendid! " cried Zipacna, with glistening eyes. "I must have it at once," and with one bound he leapt down to where the cunningly contrived crab lay in the cavern.

No sooner had he reached it than Hun-Apu and Xbalanque cast the mountain upon him; but so desperate were his efforts to get free that the brothers feared he might rid himself of the immense weight of earth under which he was buried, and to make sure of his fate they turned him into stone. Thus at the foot of Mount Meahuan, near Vera Paz, perished the proud Mountain-Maker.

The Discomfiture of Cabrakan

Now only the third of this family of boasters remained, and he was the most proud of any.

"I am the Overturmer of Mountains!" said he.

But Hun-Apu and Xbalanque had made up their minds that not one of the race of Vukub should be left alive.

At the moment when they were plotting the over. throw of Cabrakan he was occupied in moving mountains. He seized the mountains by their bases and, exerting his mighty strength, cast them into the air; and of the smaller mountains he took no account at all. While he was so employed he met the brothers, who greeted him cordially.

"Good day, Cabrakan," said they. " What may you be doing? "

"Bah! nothing at all," replied the giant. " Cannot you see that I am throwing the mountains about, which is my usual occupation? And who may you be that ask such stupid questions? What arc your names?"

"We have no names " replied they. "We are only hunters, and here we have our blow-pipes, with which we shoot the birds that live in these mountains. So you see that we do not require names, as we meet no one."

Cabrakan looked at the brothers disdainfully, and was about to depart when they said to him: "Stay; we should like to behold these mountain-throwing feats of yours.

This aroused the pride of Cabrakan.

"Well, since you wish it," said he, "I will show you how I can move a really great mountain. Now, choose the one you would like to see me destroy, and before you are aware of it I shall have reduced it to dust."

Hun-Apu looked around him, and espying a great peak pointed toward it. "Do you think you could overthrow that mountain?" he asked.

"Without the least difficulty," replied Cabrakan, with a great laugh. "Let us go toward it."

"But first you must eat," said Hun-Apu. "You have had no food since morning, and so great a feat can hardly be accomplished fasting."

The giant smacked his lips. "You are right" he said, with a hungry look. Cabrakan was one of those people who are always hungry. "But what have you to give me?"

"We have nothing with us," said Hun-Apu.

"Umph!" growled Cabrakan, "you are a pretty fellow. You ask me what I will have to eat, and then tell me you have nothing," and in his anger he seized one of the smaller mountains and threw it into the sea, so that the waves splashed up to the sky.

"Come," said Hun-Apu, "don't get angry. We have our blow-pipes with us, and will shoot a bird for your dinner."

On hearing this Cabrakan grew somewhat quieter. "Why did you not say so at first?" he growled.

"But be quick, because I am hungry."

Just at that moment a large bird passed overhead, and Hun-Apu and Xbalanque raised their blow-pipes to their mouths. The darts sped swiftly upward, and both of them struck the bird, which came tumbling down through the air, falling at the feet of Cabrakan.

"Wonderful, wonderful!" cried the giant. "You are clever fellows indeed, and, seizing the dead bird, he was going to eat it raw when Hun-Apu stopped him.

Wait a moment, said he. "It will be much nicer when cooked," and, rubbing two sticks together, he ordered Xbalanque to gather some dry wood, so that a fire was soon blazing.

The bird was then suspended over the fire, and in a short time a savoury odour mounted to the nostrils of the giant, who stood watching the cooking with hungry eyes and watering lips.

Before placing the bird over the fire to cook, however, Hun-Apu had smeared its feathers with a thick coating of mud. The Indians in some parts of Central America still do this, so that when the mud dries with the heat of the fire the feathers will come off with it, leaving the flesh of the bird quite ready to eat. But Hun-Apu had done this with a purpose. The mud that he spread on the feathers was that of a poisoned earth, called *tizate*, the elements of which sank deeply into the flesh of the bird.

When the savoury mess was cooked, he handed it to Cabrakan, who speedily devoured it.

"Now" said Hun-Apu, "let us go toward that great mountain and see if you can lift it as you boast."

But already Cabrakan began to feel strange pangs.

"What is this?" said he, passing his hand across his brow. "I do not seem to see the mountain you mean.

"Nonsense," said Hun-Apu. Yonder it is, see, to the east there."

"My eyes seem dim this morning," replied the giant.

"No, it is not that," said Hun-Apu. "You have boasted that you could lift this mountain, and now you are afraid to try."

"I tell you," said Cabrakan, "that I have difficulty in seeing. Will you lead me to the mountain? "

"Certainly," said Hun-Apu, giving him his hand, and with several strides they were at the foot of the eminence.

" Now," said Hun-Apu, "see what you can do, boaster."

Cabrakan gazed stupidly at the great mass in front of him. His knees shook together so that the sound was like the beating of a war-drum, and the sweat poured from his forehead and ran in a little stream down the side of the mountain.

"Come," cried Hun-Apu derisively, "are you going to lift the mountain or not?"

"He cannot," sneered Xbalanque. "I knew he could not."

Cabrakan shook himself into a final effort to regain his senses, but all to no purpose. The poison rushed through his blood, and with a groan he fell dead before the brothers.

Thus perished the last of the earth-giants of Guatemala, whom Hun-Apu and Xbalanque had been sent to destroy.

The Second Book

The second book of the Popol Vuh outlines the history of the hero-gods Hun-Apu and Xbalanque. We are told that Xpiyacoc and Xmucane, the father and mother gods, had two sons, Hunhun-Apu and Vukub-Hunapu, the first of whom had by his wife Xbakiyalo two sons, Hunbatz and Hunchouen. The weakness of the whole family was the native game or ball, possibly the Mexican-Mayan game of *tlachtli*, a sort of hockey. To this pastime the natives of Central America were greatly addicted, and numerous remains of *tlachtli* courts are to be found in the ruined cities of Yucatan and Guatemala. The object of the game was to "putt" the ball through a small hole in a circular stone or goal, and the player who succeeded in doing this might demand from the audience all their clothes and jewels. The game, as we have said, was exceedingly popular in ancient Central America, and there is good reason to believe that inter-city matches took place between the various city-states, and were accompanied by a partisanship and rivalry as keen as that which finds expression among the crowd at our principal football matches to-day.

A Challenge from Hades

On one occasion Hunhun-Apu and Vukub-Hunapu played a game of ball which in its progress took them into the vicinity of the realm of Xibalba (the Kiche Hades). The rulers of that drear abode, imagining that they had a chance of capturing the brothers, extended a challenge to them to play them at ball, and this challenge Hun-Came and Vukub-Came, the sovereigns of the Kiche Hell, despatched by four messengers in the shape of owls. The brothers accepted the challenge, and, bidding farewell to their mother Xmucane and their respective sons and nephews, followed the feathered messengers down the long hill which led to the Underworld.

The Fooling of the Brethren

The American Indian is grave and taciturn. If there is one thing he fears and dislikes more than another it is ridicule. To his austere and haughty spirit it appears as something derogatory to his dignity, a slur upon his manhood. The hero-brothers had not been long in Xibalba when they discovered that it was the intention of the Lords of Hades to fool them and subject them to every species of indignity. After

crossing a river of blood, they came to the palace of the Lords of Xibalba, where they espied two seated figures in front of them. Thinking that they recognised in them Hun-Came and Vukub-Came, they saluted them in a becoming manner, only to discover to their mortification that they were addressing figures of wood. This incident excited the ribald jeers of the Xibalbans, who scoffed at the brothers. Next they were invited to sit on the seat of honour, which they found to their dismay to be a red-hot stone, a circumstance which caused unbounded amusement to the inhabitants of the Underworld. Then they were imprisoned in the House of Gloom, where they were sacrificed and buried. The head of Hunhun-Apu was, however, suspended from a tree, upon the branches of which grew a crop of gourds so like the dreadful trophy as to be indistinguishable from it. The fiat went forth that no one in Xibalba must eat of the fruit of that tree. But the Lords of Xibalba had reckoned without feminine curiosity and its unconquerable love of the forbidden.

The Princess Xquiq

One day-if day ever penetrated to that gloomy and unwholesome place-a princess of Xibalba called Xquiq (Blood), daughter of Cuchumaquiq, a notability of Xibalba, passed under the tree, and, observing the desirable fruit with which it was covered, stretched out her hand to pluck one of the gourds. Into the outstretched palm the head of Hunhun-Apu spat, and told Xquiq that she would become a mother. Before she returned home, however, the hero-god assured her that no harm would come to her, and that she must not be afraid. In a few months' time the princess's father heard of her adventure, and she was doomed to be slain, the royal messengers of Xibalba, the owls, receiving commands to despatch her and to bring back her heart in a vase. But on the way she overcame the scruples of the owls by splendid promises, and they substituted for her heart the coagulated sap of the bloodwort plant.

The Birth of Hun-Apu and Xbalanque

Xmucane, left at home, looked after the welfare of the young Hunbatz and Hunchouen, and thither, at the instigation of the head of Hunhun-Apu, went Xquiq for protection. At first Xmucane would not credit her story, but upon Xquiq appealing to the gods a miracle was performed on her behalf, and she was permitted to gather a basket of maize where no maize grew to prove the authenticity of her claim. As a princess of the Underworld, it is not surprising that she should be connected with such a phenomenon, as it is from deities of that region that we usually expect the phenomena of growth to proceed. Shortly afterwards, when she had won the good graces of the aged Xmucane, her twin sons were born, the Hun-Apu and Xbalanque whom we have already met as the central figures of the first book.

The Divine Children

But the divine children were both noisy and mischievous. They tormented their venerable grandmother with their shrill uproar and tricky behaviour. At last Xmucane, unable to put up with their habits, turned them out of doors. They took to an outdoor life with surprising ease, and soon became expert hunters and

skilful in the use of the *serbatana* (blow-pipe), with which they shot birds and small animals. They were badly treated by their half-brothers Hunbatz and Hunchouen, who, jealous of their fame as hunters, annoyed them in every possible manner. But the divine children retaliated by turning their tormentors into hideous apes. The sudden change in the appearn of her grandsons caused Xmucane the most profound grief and dismay, and she begged that they who had brightened her home with their singing and flute-playing might not be condemned to such a dreadful fate. She was informed by the divine brothers that if she could behold their antics unmoved by mirth her wish would be granted. But the capers they cut and their grimaces caused her such merriment that on three separate occasions she was unable to restrain her laughter, and the men-monkeys took their leave.

The Magic Tools

The childhood of Hun-Apu and Xbalanque was full of such episodes as might be expected from these beings. We find, for example, that on attempting to clear a *milpa* (maize plantation) they employed magic tools which could be trusted to undertake a good day's work whilst they were absent at the chase. Returning at night, they smeared soil over their hands and faces, for the purpose of deluding Xmucane into the belief that they had been toiling all day in the fields. But the wild beasts met in conclave during the night, and replaced all the roots and shrubs which the magic tools had cleared away. The twins recognised the work of the various animals) and placed a large net on the ground, so that if the creatures came to the spot on the following night they might be caught in its folds. They did come, but all made good their escape save the rat. The rabbit and deer lost their tails, however, and that is why these animals possess no caudal appendages! The rat, in gratitude for their sparing its life, told the brothers the history of their father and uncle, of their heroic efforts against the powers of Xibalba, and of the existence of a set of clubs and balls with which they might play *tlachtli* on the ballground at Ninxor-Carchah, where Hunhun-Apu and Vukub-Hunapu had played before them.

The Second Challenge

But the watchful Hun-Came and Vukub-Came soon heard that the sons and nephews of their first victims had adopted the game which had led these last into the clutches of the cunning Xibalbans, and they resolved to send a similar challenge to Hun-Apu and Xbalanque, thinking that the twins were unaware of the fate of Hunhun-Apu and Vukub-Hunapu. They therefore despatched messengers to the home of Xmucane with a challenge to play them at the ball-game, and Xmucane, alarmed by the nature of the message, sent a louse to warn her grandsons. The louse, unable to proceed as quickly as he wished, permitted himself to be swallowed by a toad, the toad by a serpent, and the serpent by the bird Voc, the messenger O Hurakan. At the end of the journey the other animals duly liberated each other, but the toad could not rid himself of the louse, who had in reality hidden himself in the toad's gums, and had not been swallowed at all. At last the message was delivered, and the twins returned to the abode of Xmucane, to bid farewell to their grandmother and mother. Before leaving they each planted a cane in the midst of the hut, saying that it would wither if any fatal accident befell them.

The Tricksters Tricked

They then proceeded to Xibalba, on the road trodden by Hunhun-Apu and Vukub-Hunapu, and passed the river of blood as the others had done. But they adopted the precaution of despatching ahead an animal called Xan as a sort of spy or scout. They commanded this animal to prick all the Xibalbans with a hair from Hun-Apu's leg, in order that they might discover which of them were made of wood, and incidentally learn the names of the others as they addressed one another when pricked by the hair. They were thus enabled to ignore the wooden images on their arrival at Xibalba, and they carefully avoided the red-hot stone. Nor did the ordeal of the House of Gloom affright them, and they passed through it scatheless. The inhabitants of the Underworld were both amazed and furious with disappointment. To add to their annoyance, they were badly beaten in the game of ball which followed. The Lords of Hell then requested the twins to bring them four bouquets of flowers from the royal garden of Xibalba, at the same time commanding the gardeners to keep good watch over the flowers so that none of them might be removed. But the brothers called to their aid a swarm of ants, who succeeded in returning with the flowers. The anger of the Xibalbans increased to a white fury, and they incarcerated Hun-Apu and Xbalanque in the House of Lances, a dread abode where demons armed with sharp spears thrust at them fiercely. But they bribed the lancers and escaped. The Xibalbans slit the beaks of the owls who guarded the royal gardens, and howled in fury.

The Houses of the Ordeals

They were next thrust into the House of Cold. Here they escaped a dreadful death from freezing by warming themselves with burning pine-cones. Into the House of Tigers and the House of Fire they were thrown for a night each, but escaped from both. But they were not so lucky in the House of Bats. As they threaded this place of terror, Camazotz, Ruler of the Bats, descended upon them with a whirring of leathern wings, and with one sweep of his sword-like claws cutoff Hun-Apu's head. (See Mictlan, pp. 95, 96.) But a tortoise which chanced to pass the severed neck of the hero's prostrate body and came into contact with it was immediately turned into a head, and Hun-Apu arose from his terrible experience not a whit the worse.

These various houses in which the brothers were forced to pass a certain time forcibly recall to our minds the several circles of Dante's Hell. Xibalba was to the Kiche not a place of punishment, but a dark place of horror and myriad dangers. No wonder the Maya had what Landa calls "an immoderate fear of death" if they believed that after it they would be transported to such a dread abode!

With the object of proving their immortal nature to their adversaries, Hun-Apu and Xbalanque, first arranging for their resurrection with two sorcerers, Xulu and Pacaw, stretched themselves upon a bier and died. Their bones were ground to powder and thrown into the river. They then went through a kind of evolutionary process, appearing on the fifth day after their deaths as men-fishes and on the sixth as old men, ragged and tattered in appearance, killing and restoring each other to life. At the request of the princes of Xibalba, they burned the royal palace and restored it to its pristine splendour, killed and

resuscitated the king's dog, and cut a man in pieces, bringing him to life again. The Lords of Hell were curious about the sensation of death, and asked to be killed and resuscitated. The first portion of their request the hero-brothers speedily granted, but did not deem it necessary to pay any regard to the second.

Throwing off all disguise, the brothers assembled the now thoroughly cowed princes of Xibalba, and announced their intention of punishing them for their animosity against themselves, their father and uncle. They were forbidden to partake in the noble and classic game of ball-a great indignity in the eyes of Maya of the higher caste-they were condemned to menial tasks, and they were to have sway over the beasts of the forest alone. After this their power rapidly waned. These princes of the Underworld are described as being owl-like, with faces painted black and white, as symbolical of their duplicity and faithless disposition.

As some reward for the dreadful indignities they had undergone, the souls of Hunhun-Apu and Vukub-Hunapu, the first adventurers into the darksome region of Xibalba, were translated to the skies, and became the sun and moon, and with this apotheosis the second book ends.

We can have no difficulty, in the light of comparative mythology, in seeing in the matter of this book a version of "the harrying of hell" common to many mythologies. In many primitive faiths a hero or heroes dares the countless dangers of Hades in order to prove to the savage mind that the terrors of death can be overcome. In Algonquian mythology Blue-Jay makes game of the Dead Folk whom his sister Ioi has married, and Balder passes through the Scandinavian Helheim. The god must first descend into the abyss and must emerge triumphant if humble folk are to possess assurance of immortality.

The Reality of Myth

It is from such matter as that found in the second book of the Popol Vuh that we are enabled to discern how real myth can be on occasion. It is obvious, as has been pointed out, that the dread of death in the savage mind may give rise to such a conception of its vanquishment as appears in the Popol Vuh. But there is reason to suspect that other elements have also entered into the composition of the myth. It is well known that an invading race, driving before them the remnants of a conquered people, are prone to regard these in the course of a few generations as almost supernatural and as denizens of a sphere more or less infernal. Their reasons for this are not difficult of comprehension. To begin with, a difference in ceremonial ritual gives rise to the belief that the inimical race practises magic. The enemy is seldom seen, and, if perceived, quickly takes cover or "vanishes." The majority of aboriginal races were often earth- or cave-dwellers, like the Picts of Scotland, and such the originals of the Xibalbans probably were.

The invading Maya-Kiche, encountering such a folk in the cavernous recesses of the hill-slopes of Guatemala, would naturally refer them to the Underworld. The cliff-dwellings of Mexico and Colorado exhibit manifest signs of the existence of such a cave-dwelling race. In the latter state is the Cliff Palace Caflon, a huge natural recess, within which a small city was actually built, which still remains in excellent preservation. In some such semi-subterranean recess, then, may the city of "Xibalba" have stood.

The Xibalbans

We can see, too, that the Xibalbans were not merely a plutonic race. Xibalba is not a Hell, a place of punishment for sin, but a place of the dead, and its inhabitants were scarcely "devils," nor evil gods. The transcriber of the Popol Vuh says of them: "In the old times they did not have much power. They were but annoyers and opposers of men, and, in truth, they were not regarded as gods." The word Xibalba is derived from a root meaning "to fear," from which comes the name for a ghost or phantom. Xibalba was thus the "Place of Phantoms."

The Third Book

The opening of the third book finds the gods once more deliberating as to the creation of man. Four men are evolved as the result of these deliberations. These beings were moulded from a paste of yellow and white maize, and were named Balam-Quitze (Tiger with the Sweet Smile), Balam-Agab (Tiger of the Night), Mahacutah (The Distinguished Name), and Iqi-Balam (Tiger of the Moon).

But the god Hurakan who had formed them was not overpleased with his handiwork, for these beings were too much like the gods themselves. The gods once more took counsel, and agreed that man must be less perfect and possess less knowledge than this new race. He must not become as a god. So Hurakan breathed a cloud over their eyes in order that they might only see a portion of the earth, whereas before they had been able to see the whole round sphere of the world. After this the four men were plunged into a deep sleep, and four women were created, who were given them as wives. These were Caha-Paluma (Falling Water), Choima (Beautiful Water), Tzununiha (House of the Water), and Cakixa (Water of Parrots, or Brilliant Water), who were espoused to the men in the respective order given above.

These eight persons were the ancestors of the Kiche only, after which were created the forerunners of the other peoples. At this time there was no sun, and comparative darkness lay over the face of the earth. Men knew not the art of worship, but blindly lifted their eyes to heaven and prayed the Creator to send them quiet lives and the light of day. But no sun came, and dispeace entered their hearts. So they journeyed to a place called Tulan-Zuiva (The Seven Caves)-practically the same as Chicomoztoc in the Aztec myth and there gods were vouchsafed to them. The names of these were Tohil, whom Balam-Quitze received; Avilix, whom Balam-Agab received; and Hacavitz, granted to Mahacutah. Iqi-Balam received a god, but as he had no family his worship and knowledge died out.

The Granting of Fire

Grievously did the Kiche feel the want of fire in the sunless world they inhabited, but this the god Tohil (The Rumbler, the Fire-god) quickly provided them with. However, a mighty rain descended and extinguished all the fires in the land. These, however, were always supplied again by Tohil, who had only

to strike his feet together to produce fire. In this figure there is no difficulty in seeing a fully developed thunder-god.

The Kiche Babel

Tulan-Zuiva was a place of great misfortune to the Kiche, for here the race suffered alienation in its different branches by reason of a confounding of their speech, which recalls the story of Babel. Owing to this the first four men were no longer able to comprehend each other, and determined to leave the place of their mischance and to seek the leadership of the god Tohil into another and more fortunate sphere. In this journey they met with innumerable hardships. They had to cross many lofty mountains, and on one occasion had to make a long *détour* across the bed of the ocean, the waters of which were miraculously divided to permit of their passage. At last they arrived at a mountain which they called Hacavitz, after one of their deities, and here they remained, for it had been foretold that here they should see the sun. At last the luminary appeared. Men and beasts went wild with delight, although his beams were by no means strong, and he appeared more like a reflection in a mirror than the strong sun of later days whose fiery beams speedily sucked up the blood of victims on the altar. As he showed his face the three tribal gods of the Kiche were turned into stone, as were the gods or totems connected with the wild animals. Then arose the first Kiche town, or permanent dwelling-place.

The Last Days of the First Men

Time passed, and the first men of the Kiche race grew old. Visions came to them, in which they were exhorted by the gods to render human sacrifices, and in order to obey the divine injunctions they raided the neighbouring lands, the folk of which made a spirited resistance. But in a great battle the Kiche were miraculously assisted by a horde of wasps and hornets, which flew in the faces of their foes, stinging and blinding them, so that they could not wield weapon nor see to make any effective resistance. After this battle the surrounding races became tributary to them.

Death of the First Men

Now the first men felt that their death-day was nigh, and they called their kin and dependents around them to hear their dying words. In the grief of their souls they chanted the song "Kamucu," the song "We see," that they had sung so joyfully when they had first seen the light of day. Then they parted from their wives and sons one by one. And of a sudden they were not, and in their place was a great bundle, which was never opened. It was called the "Majesty Enveloped." So died the first men of the Kiche.

In this book it is clear that we have to deal with the problem which the origin and creation of man presented to the Maya-Kiche mind. The several myths connected with it bear a close resemblance to those of other American peoples. In the mythology of the American Indian it is rare to find an Adam, a single figure set solitary in a world without companionship of some sort. Man is almost invariably the

child of Mother Earth, and emerges from some cavern or subterranean country fully grown and fully equipped for the upper earth-life. We find this type of myth in the mythologies of the Aztecs, Peruvians, Choctaws, Blackfeet Indians, and those of many other American tribes.

American Migrations

We also find in the story of the Kiche migration a striking similarity to the migration myths of other American races. But in the Kiche myth we can trace a definite racial movement from the cold north to the warm south. The sun is not at first born. There is darkness. When he does appear he is weak and his beams are dull and watery like those of the luminary in a northern clime. Again, there are allusions to the crossing of rivers by means of "shining sand" which covered them, which might reasonably be held to imply the presence upon them of ice. In this connection we may quote from an Aztec migration myth which appears almost a parallel to the Kiche story.

"This is the beginning of the record of the coming of the Mexicans from the place called Aztlan. It is by means of the water that they came this way, being four tribes, and in coming they rowed in boats. They built their huts on piles at the place called the grotto of Quincveyan. It is there from which the eight tribes issued. The first tribe is that of the Huexotzincos., the second the Chalcas, the third the Xochimilcos, the fourth the Cuitlavacas, the fifth the Mallinalcas, the sixth the Chichimecas, the seventh the Tepanecas, the eighth the Matlatzincas. It is there where they were founded in Colhuacan. They were the colonists of it since they landed there, coming from Aztlan. . . . It is there that they soon afterwards went away from, carrying with them their god Vitzilopochtli. . . . There the eight tribes opened up our road by water."

The "Wallum Olum," or painted calendar records, of the Leni-Lenape Indians contain a similar myth.

"After the flood," says the story, "the Lenape with the manly turtle beings dwelt close together at the cave house and dwelling of Talli. . . . They saw that the snake-land was bright and wealthy. Having all agreed, they went over the water of the frozen sea to possess the land. It was wonderful when they all went over the smooth deep water of the frozen sea at the gap of the snake sea in the great ocean."

Do these myths contain any essence of the truth? Do they refer to an actual migration when the ancestors of certain American tribes crossed the frozen ocean of the Kamchatka Strait and descended from the sunless north and the boreal night of these subArctic regions to a more genial clime? Can such a tradition have been preserved throughout the countless ages which must have passed between the arrival of proto-Mongolian man in America and the writing or composition of the several legends cited? Surely not. But may there not have been later migrations from the north? May not hordes of folk distantly akin to the first Americans have swept across the frozen strait, and within a few generations have made their way into the warmer regions, as we know the Nahua did? The Scandinavian vikings who reached north-eastern America in the tenth century found there a race totally distinct from the Red Man, and more approaching the Esquimaux, whom they designated Skrellingr, or "Chips," so small and misshapen were they. Such a description could hardly have been applied to the North American Indian as we know him. From the legends of the Red race of North America we may infer that they remained for a number of generations in

the Far West of the North American continent before they migrated eastward. And a guess might be hazarded to the effect that, arriving in America somewhere about the dawn of the Christian era, they spread slowly in a south-easterly direction, arriving in the eastern parts of North America about the end of the eleventh century, or even a little later. This would mean that such a legend as that which we have just perused would only require to have survived a thousand years, provided the *Popol Vuh* was first composed about the eleventh century, as appears probable. But such speculations are somewhat dangerous in the face of an almost complete lack of evidence, and must be met with the utmost caution and treated as surmises only.

Cosmogony of the "Popol Vuh"

We have now completed our brief survey of the mythological portion of the *Popol Vuh*, and it will be well at this point to make some inquiries into the origin and nature of the various gods, heroes, and similar personages who fill its pages. Before doing so, however, let us glance at the creation-myth which we find detailed in the first book. We can see by internal evidence that this must be the result of the fusion of more than one creation-story. We find in the myth that mention is made of a number of beings each of whom appears to exercise in some manner the functions of a creator or "moulder." These beings also appear to have similar attributes. There is evidently here the reconciliation of early rival faiths. We know that this occurred in Peruvian cosmogony, which is notoriously composite, and many another mythology, European and Asiatic, exhibits a like phenomenon. Even in the creation-story as given in Genesis we can discover the fusion of two separate accounts from the allusion to the creative power as both "Jahveh " and " Elohim," the plural ending of the second name proving the presence of polytheistic as well as monotheistic conceptions.

Antiquity of the "Popol Vuh"

These considerations lead to the assumption that the *Popol Vuh* is a mythological collection of very considerable antiquity, as the fusion of religious beliefs is a comparatively slow process. It is, of course, in the absence of other data, impossible to fix the date of its origin, even approximately. We possess only the one version of this interesting work, so that we are compelled to confine ourselves to the consideration of that alone, and are without the assistance which philology would lend us by a comparison of two versions of different dates.

The Father-Mother Gods

We discover a pair of dual beings concerned in the Kiche creation. These are Xpiyacoc and Xmucane, the Father-Mother deities, and are obviously Kiche equivalents to the Mexican Ometecutli-Omeciuatl, whom we have already noticed (pp. 103-4). The former is the male fructifier, whilst the name of the latter signifies " Female Vigour." These deities were probably regarded as hermaphroditic, as numerous North American Indian gods appear to be, and may be analogous to the "Father Sky" and "Mother Earth " of so

many mythologies.

Gucumatz

We also find Gucumatz concerned in the Kiche scheme of creation. He was a Maya-Kiche form of the Mexican Quetzalcoatl, or perhaps the converse was the case. The name signifies, like its Nahuatl equivalent, "Serpent with Green Feathers."

Hurakan

Hurakan) the wind-god, "He who hurls below," whose name perhaps signifies "The One-legged," is probably the same as the Nahuatl Tezcatlipoca. It has been suggested that the word "hurricane" has been evolved from the name of this god, but the derivation seems rather too fortuitous to be real. Hurakan had the assistance of three sub-gods, Cakulha-Hurakan (Lightning), Chipi-Cakulha (Lightning-flash), and Raxa-Cakulha (Track of the Lightning).

Hun-Apu and Xbalanque

Hun-Apu and Xbalanque, the hero-gods, appear to have the attributes of demi-gods in general. The name Hun-Apu means "Master" or "Magician," and Xbalanque "Little Tiger." We find many such figures in American myth, which is rich in hero-gods.

Vukub-Cakix and his Sons

Vukub-Cakix and his progeny are, of course, earth-giants like the Titans of Greek mythology or the Jötuns of Scandinavian story. The removal of the emerald teeth of Vukub-Cakix and their replacement by grains of maize would seem to be a mythical interpretation or allegory of the removal of the virgin turf of the earth and its replacement by maize-seed. Therefore it is possible that Vukub-Cakix is an earth-god, and not a prehistoric sun-and-moon god, as stated by Dr. Seler.

Metrical Origin of the "Popol Vuh"

There is reason to believe that the *Popol Vuh* was originally a metrical composition. This would assist the hypothesis of its antiquity, on the ground that it was for generations recited before being reduced to writing. Passages here and there exhibit a decided metrical tendency, and one undoubtedly applies to a descriptive dance symbolical of sunrise. It is as follows:

" 'Ama x-u ch'ux ri Vuch?'

'Ve,' x-cha ri mama.
 Ta chi xaquinic.
 Quate ta chi gecumarchic.
 Cahmul xaquin ri mama.
 'Ca xaquin-Vuch,' ca cha vinak vacamic."

This may be rendered freely:

"'Is the dawn about to be?'
 Yes,' answered the old man.
 Then he spread apart his legs.
 Again the darkness appeared.
 Four times the old man spread his legs.
 'Now the opossum spreads his legs,' Say the people."

It is obvious that many of these lines possess the well-known quality of savage dance-poetry, which displays itself in a rhythm of one long foot followed by two short ones. We know that the Kiche were very fond of ceremonial dances, and of repeating long chants which they called *nugum tzih*, or "garlands of words," and the *Popol Vuh*, along with other matter, probably contained many of these.

Pseudo-History of the Kiche

The fourth book of the *Popol Vuh* contains the pseudo-history of the Kiche kings. It is obviously greatly confused, and it would be difficult to say how much of it originally belonged to the *Popol Vuh* and how much had been added or invented by its latest compiler. One cannot discriminate between saga and history, or between monarchs and gods, the real and the fabulous. Interminable conflicts are the theme of most of the book, and many migrations are recounted.

Queen Mío

Whilst dealing with Maya pseudo-history it will be well to glance for a moment at the theories of the late Augustus Le Plongeon, who lived and carried on excavations in Yucatan for many years. Dr. Le Plongeon was obsessed with the idea that the ancient Maya spread their civilisation all over the habitable globe, and that they were the originators of the Egyptian, Palestinian, and Hindu civilisations, besides many others. He furthermore believed himself to be the true elucidator of the Maya system of hieroglyphs, which in his estimation were practically identical with the Egyptian. We will not attempt to refute his theories, as they are based on ignorance of the laws which govern philology, anthropology, and mythology. But he possessed a thorough knowledge of the Maya tongue, and his acquaintance with Maya customs was extensive and peculiar. One of his ideas was that a certain hall among the ruins of Chichen-Itza had been built by a Queen Mío, a Maya princess who after the tragic fate of her brother-husband and the catastrophe which ended in the sinking of the continent of Atlantis fled to Egypt, where she founded

the ancient Egyptian civilisation. It would be easy to refute this theory. But the tale as told by Dr. Le Plongeon possesses a sufficiency of romantic interest to warrant its being rescued from the little-known volume in which he published it. [Queen M'oo and the Egyptian Sphinx (London, 1896).]

We do not learn from Dr. Le Plongeon's book by what course of reasoning he came to discover that the name of his heroine was the rather uneuphonious one of M'oo. Probably he arrived at it by the same process as that by which he discovered that certain Mayan architectural ornaments were in reality Egyptian letters. But it will be better to let him tell his story in his own words. It is as follows

The Funeral Chamber

"As we are about to enter the funeral chamber hallowed by the love of the sister-wife, Queen M'oo, the beauty of the carvings on the zapote beam that forms the lintel of the doorway calls our attention. Here is represented the antagonism of the brothers Aac and Coh, that led to the murder of the latter by the former. Carved on the lintel are the names of these personages, represented by their totems—a leopard head for Coh, and a boar head as well as a turtle for Aac, this word meaning both boar and turtle in Maya. Aac is pictured within the disk of the sun, his protective deity which he worshipped, according to mural inscriptions at Uxmal. Full of anger he faces his brother. In his right hand there is a badge ornamented with feathers and flowers. The threatening way in which this is held suggests a concealed weapon. . . . The face of Coh also expresses anger. With him is the feathered serpent, emblematic of royalty, thence of the country, more often represented as a winged serpent protecting Coh. In his left hand he holds his weapon down, whilst his right hand clasps his badge of authority, with which he covers his breasts as for protection, and demanding the respect due to his rank. . . .

"Passing between the figures of armed chieftains sculptured on the iambs of the doorway, and seeming like sentinels guarding the entrance of the funeral chamber, we notice one wearing a headdress similar to the crown of Lower Egypt, which formed part of the pschent of the Egyptian monarchs.

The Frescoes

"The frescoes in the funeral chamber of Prince Coh's Memorial Hall, painted in water-colours taken from the vegetable kingdom, are divided into a series of tableaux separated by blue lines. The plinths, the angles of the room, and the edges of the ceiling, being likewise painted blue, indicate that this was intended for a funeral chamber. . . . The first scene represents Queen M'oo while yet a child. She is seated on the back of a peccary, or American wild boar, under the royal umbrella of feathers, emblem of royalty in Mayach, as it was in India, Chaldea, and other places. She is consulting a *h-men*, or wise man; listening with profound attention to the decrees of fate as revealed by the cracking of the shell of an armadillo exposed to a slow fire on a brazier, the condensing on it of the vapour, and the various tints it assumes. This mode of divination is one of the customs of the Mayas. . . .

The Soothsayers

"In front of the young Queen Mío, and facing her, is seated the soothsayer, evidently a priest of high rank, judging from the colours, blue and yellow, of the feathers of his ceremonial mantle. He reads the decrees of fate on the snell of the armadillo, and the scroll issuing from his throat says what they are. By him stands the winged serpent, emblem and protective genius of the Maya Empire. His head is turned towards the royal banner, which he seems to caress. His satisfaction is reflected in the mild and pleased expression of his face. Behind the priest, the position of whose hand is the same as that of Catholic priests in blessing their congregation, and the significance of which is well known to occultists, are the ladies-in-waiting of the young Queen.

The Royal Bride

"In another tableau we again see Queen Mío, no longer a child, but a comely young woman. She is not seated under the royal umbrella or banner, but she is once more in the presence of the *h-men*, whose face is concealed by a mask representing an owl's head. She, pretty and coquettish, has many admirers, who vie with each other for the honour of her hand. In company with one of her wooers she comes to consult the priest, accompanied by an old lady, her grandmother probably, and her female attendants. According to custom the old lady is the spokeswoman. She states to the priest that the young man, he who sits on a low stool between two female attendants desires to marry the Queen. The priest's attendant, seated also on a stool, back of all, acts as crier, and repeats in a loud voice the speech of the old lady.

Mío's Refusal

"The young Queen refuses the offer. The refusal is indicated by the direction of the scroll issuing from her mouth. It is turned backward, instead of forward towards the priest, as would be the case if she assented to the marriage. The *h-men* explains that Moo, being a daughter of the royal family, by law and custom must marry one of her brothers. The youth listens to the decision with due respect to the priest, as shown by his arm being placed across his breast, the left hand resting on the right shoulder. He does not accept the refusal in a meek spirit, however. His clenched fist, his foot raised as in the act of stamping, betoken anger and disappointment, while the attendant behind him expostulates, counselling patience and resignation, judging by the position and expression of her lefthand palm upward.

The Rejected Suitor

"In another tableau we see the same individual whose offer of marriage was rejected by the young Queen in consultation with a nubchi, or prophet, a priest whose exalted rank is indicated by his headdress, and the triple breastplate he wears over his mantle of feathers. The consulter, evidently a person of importance, has come attended by his hachetail, or confidential friend, who sits behind him on a cushion.

The expression on the face of the said consulter shows that he does not accept patiently the decrees of fate, although conveyed by the interpreter in as conciliatory a manner as possible. The adverse decision of the gods is manifested by the sharp projecting centre part of the scroll, but it is wrapped in words as persuasive and consoling, preceded by as smooth a preamble as the rich and beautiful Maya language permits and makes easy. His friend is addressing the prophet's assistant. Reflecting the thoughts of his lord, he declares that the noble's fine discourse and his pretended reading of the will of the gods are all nonsense, and exclaims 'Pshaw!' which contemptuous exclamation is pictured by the yellow scroll, pointed at both ends, escaping from his nose like a sneeze. The answer of the priest's assistant, evidenced by the gravity of his features, the assertive position of his hand, and the bluntness of his speech, is evidently 'It is so!'

Aac's Fierce Wooing

"Her brother Aac is madly in love with M'oo. He is portrayed approaching the interpreter of the will of the gods, divested of his garments in token of humility in presence of their majesty and of submission to their decrees. He comes full of arrogance, arrayed in gorgeous attire, and with regal pomp. He comes not as a suppliant to ask and accept counsel, but haughty, he makes bold to dictate. He is angered at the refusal of the priest to accede to his demand for his sister M'oo's hand, to whose totem, an armadillo on this occasion, he points imperiously. It was on an armadillo's shell that the fates wrote her destiny when consulted by the performance of the *Pou* ceremony. The yellow flames of wrath darting from all over his person, the sharp yellow scroll issuing from his mouth, symbolise Aac's feelings. The pontiff, however, is unmoved by them. In the name of the gods with serene mien he denies the request of the proud noble man, as his speech indicates. The winged serpent, genius of the country, that stands erect and ireful by Aac, is also wroth at his pretensions, and shows in its features and by sending its dart through Aac's royal banner a decided opposition to them, expressed by the ends of his speech being turned backwards, some of them terminating abruptly, others in sharp points.

Prince Coh

"Prince Coh sits behind the priest as one of his attendants. He witnesses the scene, hears the calm negative answer, sees the anger of his brother and rival, smiles at his impotence, is happy at his discomfiture. Behind him, however, sits a spy who will repeat his words, report his actions to his enemy. He listens, he watches. The high-priest himself, Cay, their elder brother, sees the storm that is brewing behind the dissensions of Coh and Aac. He trembles at the thought of the misfortunes that will surely befall the dynasty of the Cans, of the ruin and misery of the country that will certainly follow. Divested of his priestly raiment, he comes nude and humble as it is proper for men in the presence of the gods, to ask their advice how best to avoid the impending calamities. The chief of the auspices is in the act of reading their decrees on the palpitating entrails of a fish. The sad expression on his face, that of humble resignation on that of the pontiff of deferential astonishment on that of the assistant, speak of the inevitable misfortunes which are to come in the near future.

"We pass over interesting battle scenes . . . in which the defenders have been defeated by the Mayas. Coh will return to his queen loaded with spoils that he will lay at her feet with his glory, which is also hers.

The Murder of Cob

"We next see him in a terrible altercation with his brother Aac. The figures in that scene are nearly life size, but so much disfigured and broken as to make it impossible to obtain good tracings. Coh is portrayed without weapons, his fists clenched, looking menacingly at his foe, who holds three spears, typical of the three wounds he inflicted in his brother's back when he killed him treacherously. Coh is now laid out, being prepared for cremation. His body has been opened at the ribs to extract the viscera and heart, which, after being charred, are to be preserved in a stone urn with cinnabar, where the writer found them in 1875. His sister-wife, Queen M'oo, in sad contemplation of the remain-, of the beloved, . . . kneels at his feet. . . . The winged serpent, protective genius of the country, is pictured without a head. The ruler of the country has been slain. He is dead. The people are without a chief."

The Widowhood of M'oo

The widowhood of M'oo is then said to be portrayed in subsequent pictures. Other suitors, among them Aac, make their proposals to her, but she refuses them all. "Aac's pride being humiliated, his love turned to hatred. His only wish henceforth was to usurp the supreme power, to wage war against the friend of his childhood. He made religious disagreement the pretext. He proclaimed that the worship of the sun was to be superior to that of the winged serpent, the genius of the country; also to that of the worship of ancestors, typified by the feathered serpent, with horns and a flame or halo on the head. . . . Prompted by such evil passions, he put himself at the head of his own vassals, and attacked those who had remained faithful to Queen M'oo and to Prince Coh's memory. At first M'oo's adherents successfully opposed her foes. The contending parties, forgetting in the strife that they were children of the same soil, blinded by their prejudices, let their passions have the better of their reason. At last Queen M'oo fell a prisoner in the hands of her enemy.

The Manuscript Troano

Dr. Le Plongeon here assumes that the story is taken up by the Manuscript Troano. As no one is able to decipher this manuscript completely, he is pretty safe in his assertion. Here is what the pintura alluded to says regarding Queen M'oo, according to our author:

"The people of Mayach having been whipped into submission and cowed., no longer opposing much resistance, the lord seized her by the hair, and, in common with others, caused her to suffer from blows. This happened on the ninth day of the tenth month of the year Kan. Being completely routed, she passed to the opposite sea-coast in the southern parts of the country, which had already suffered much injury."

Here we shall leave the Queen, and those who have been sufficiently credulous to create and believe in her and her companions. We do not aver that the illustrations on the walls of the temple at Chichen do not allude to some such incident, or series of incidents, as Dr. Le Plongeon describes, but to bestow names upon the dramatis persone in the face of almost complete inability to read the Maya script and a total dearth of accompanying historical manuscripts is merely futile, and we must regard Dr. Le Plongeon's narrative as a quite fanciful rendering of probability. At the same time, the light which he throws-if some obviously unscientific remarks be deducted-on the customs of the Maya renders his account of considerable interest, and that must be our excuse for presenting it here at some length.

[Next: CHAPTER VI: The Civilisation of Old Peru](#)

CHAPTER VI: The Civilisation of Old Peru

Old Peru

IF the civilisation of ancient Peru did not achieve the standard of general culture reached by the Mexicans and Maya, it did not fall far short of the attainment of these peoples. But the degrading despotism under which the peasantry groaned in Inca times, and the brutal and sanguinary tyranny of the Apu-Ccapac Incas, make the rulers of Mexico at their worst appear as enlightened when compared with the Peruvian governing classes. The Quichua-Aymara race which inhabited Peru was inferior to the Mexican in general mental culture, if not in mental capacity, is proved by its inability to invent any method of written communication or any adequate time-reckoning. In imitative art, too, the Peruvians were weak, save in pottery and rude modelling, and their religion savoured much more of the materialistic, and was altogether of a lower cultus.

The Country

The country in which the interesting civilisation of the Inca race was evolved presents physical features which profoundly affected the history of the race. In fact, it is probable that in no country in the world has the configuration of the land so modified the events in the life of the people dwelling within its borders. The chain of the Andes divides into two branches near the boundary between Bolivia and Chile, and, with the Cordillera de la Costa, encloses at a height of over 3000 feet the Desaguadero, a vast tableland with an area equal to France. To the north of this is Cuzco, the ancient capital of the Incas, to the south Potosi, the most elevated town in the world, whilst between them lies Lake Titicaca, the largest body of fresh water in South America. The whole country is dreary and desolate in the extreme. Cereals cannot ripen, and animals are rare. Yet it was in these desolate regions that the powerful and highly organised empire of Peru arose—an empire extending over an area 3000 miles long by 400 broad.

The Andeans

The prehistoric natives of the Andean region had evolved a civilisation long before the days of the Inca dynasties, and the cyclopean ruins of their edifices are to be found at intervals scattered over a wide field on the slopes of the range under the shadow of which they dwelt. Their most extraordinary achievement was probably the city of Tiahuanaco, on the southern shore of Lake Titicaca, built at a level 13,000 feet above the sea, occupying nearly half an acre in extent, and constructed of enormous megalithic blocks of trachytic rock. The great doorway, carved out of a single block of rock, is 7 feet in height by 131 feet wide, and 1½ feet thick. The upper portion of this massive portal is carved with symbolic figures. In the

centre is a figure in high relief, the head surrounded by solar rays, and in each hand a sceptre, the end of which terminates in the head of a condor. This figure is flanked on either side by three tiers of kneeling suppliants, each of whom is winged and bears a sceptre similar in design to the central ones. Elsewhere are mighty blocks of stone, some 36 feet long, remains of enormous walls, standing monoliths, and in earlier times colossal statues were seen on the site. When the Spanish conquerors arrived no tradition remained regarding the founders of these structures, and their origin still remains a mystery; but that they represent the remains of the capital of some mighty prehistoric kingdom is practically admitted.

A Strange Site

The greatest mystery of all regarding the ruins at Tiahuanaco is the selection of the site. For what reason did the prehistoric rulers of Peru build here? The surroundings are totally unsuitable for the raising of such edifices, and the tableland upon which they are placed is at once desolate and difficult of access. The snow-line is contiguous, and breathing at such a height is no easy matter. There is no reason to suppose that climatic conditions in the day of these colossal builders were different from those which obtain at the present time. In face of these facts the position of Tiahuanaco remains an insoluble riddle.

Sacsahuaman and Ollantay

Other remains of these prehistoric people are found in various parts of Peru. At Sacsahuaman, perched on a hill above the city of Cuzco, is an immense fortified work six hundred yards long, built in three lines of wall consisting of enormous stones, some of which are twenty-seven feet in length. Pissac is also the site of wonderful ruined masonry and an ancient observatory. At Ollantay-tampu, forty-five miles to the north of Cuzco, is another of these gigantic fortresses, built to defend the valley of the Yucay. This stronghold is constructed for the most part of red porphyry, and its walls average twenty-five feet in height. The great cliff on which Ollantay is perched is covered from end to end with stupendous walls which zigzag from point to point of it like the salient angles of some modern fortalice. At intervals are placed round towers of stone provided with loopholes, from which doubtless arrows were discharged at the enemy. This outwork embraces a series of terraces, world-famous because of their gigantic outline and the problem of the use to which they were put. It is now practically agreed that these terraces were employed for the production of maize, in order that during a prolonged investment the beleaguered troops and country-folk might not want for a sufficiency of provender. The stone of which this fortress was built was quarried at a distance of seven miles, in a spot upwards of three thousand feet above the valley, and was dragged up the steep declivity of Ollantay by sheer human strength. The nicety with which the stones were fitted is marvellous.

The Dramatic Legend of Ollantay

Among the dramatic works with which the ancient Incas were credited is that of *Apu-Ollanta*, which may recount the veritable story of a chieftain after whom the great stronghold was named. It was probably

divided into scenes and supplied with stage directions at a later period, but the dialogue and son-as are truly aboriginal. The period is that of the reign of the Inca Yupanqui Pachacutic., one of the most celebrated of the Peruvian monarchs. The central figure of the drama is a chieftain named Ollanta, who conceived a violent passion for a daughter of the Inca named Curi-Coyllur (Joyful Star). This passion was deemed unlawful, as no mere subject who was not of the blood-royal might aspire to the hand of a daughter of the Inca. As the play opens we overhear a dialogue between Ollanta and his man-servant Piqui-Chaquí (Flea-footed), who supplies what modern stage-managers would designate the "comic relief" They are talking of Ollanta's love for the princess, when they are confronted by the high-priest of the Sun, who tries to dissuade the rash chieftain from the dangerous course he is taking by means of a miracle. In the next scene Curi-Coyllur is seen in company with her mother, sorrowing over the absence of her lover. A harvest song is here followed by a love ditty of undoubtedly ancient origin. The third scene represents Ollanta's interview with the Inca in which he pleads his suit and is slighted by the scornful monarch. Ollanta defies the king in a resounding speech, with which the first act concludes. In the first scene of the second act we are informed that the disappointed chieftain has raised the standard of rebellion, and the second scene is taken up with the military preparations consequent upon the announcement of a general rising. In the third scene Rumihaui as general of the royal forces admits defeat by the rebels.

The Love Story of Curi-Coyllur

Curi-Coyllur gives birth to a daughter, and is imprisoned in the darksome Convent of Virgins. Her child, Yma Sumac (How Beautiful), is brought up in the same building, but is ignorant of the near presence of her mother. The little girl tells her guardian of groans and lamentations which she has heard in the convent garden, and of the tumultuous emotions with which these sad sounds fill her heart. The Inca Pachacutic's death is announced., and the accession of his son, Yupanqui. Rebellion breaks out once more, and the suppression of the malcontents is again entrusted to Rumi-fiaui. That leader, having tasted defeat already, resorts to cunning. He conceals his men in a valley close by, and presents himself covered with blood before Ollanta, who is at the head of the rebels. He states that he has been barbarously used by the royal troops, and that he desires to join the rebels. He takes part with Ollanta and his men in a drunken frolic, in which he incites them to drink heavily, and when they are overcome with liquor he brings up his troops and makes them prisoners.

Mother and Child

Yma Sumac, the beautiful little daughter of Curi-Coyllur, requests her guardian, Pitu Salla, so pitifully to be allowed to visit her mother in her dungeon that the woman consents, and mother and child are united. Ollanta is brought as a prisoner before the new Inca, who pardons him. At that juncture Yma Sumac enters hurriedly, and begs the monarch to free her mother, Curi-Coyllur. The Inca proceeds to the prison, restores the princess to her lover, and the drama concludes with the Inca bestowing his blessing upon the pair.

The play was first put into written form in the seventeenth century, has often been printed, and is now recognised as a genuine aboriginal production.

The Races of Peru

Many races went to make up the Peruvian people as they existed when first discovered by the conquering Spaniards. From the south came a civilising race which probably found a number of allied tribes, each existing separately in its own little valley, speaking a different dialect, or even language, from its neighbours, and in many instances employing different customs. Although tradition alleged that these invaders came from the north by sea within historical times, the more probable theory of their origin is one which states that they had followed the course of the affluents of the Amazon to the valleys where they dwelt when the more enlightened folk from the south came upon them. The remains of this aboriginal people-for, though they spoke diverse languages, the probability is that they were of one or not more than two stocks-are still found scattered over the coastal valleys in pyramidal mounds and adobe-built dwellings.

The Coming of the Incas

The arrival of the dominant race rudely broke in upon the peaceful existence of the aboriginal folk. This race, the Quichua-Aymara, probably had its place of origin in the Altaplantic highlands of Bolivia, the eastern cordillera of the Andes. This they designated Tucuman (World's End), just as the Kiche of Guatemala were wont to describe the land of their origin as Ki Pixab (Corner of the Earth). The present republic of Argentina was at a remote period covered by a vast, partially land-locked sea, and beside the shores of this the ancestors of the Quichua-Aymara race may have settled as fishers and fowlers. They found a more permanent settlement on the shores of Lake Titicaca, where their traditions state that they made considerable advances in the arts of civilisation. It was, indeed, from Titicaca that the sun emerged from the sacred rock where he had erstwhile hidden himself. Here, too, the llama and paco were domesticated and agricultural life initiated, or perfected. The arts of irrigation and terrace-building-so marked as features of Peruvian civilisation-were also invented in this region, and the basis of a composite advancement laid.

The Quichua-Aymara

This people consisted of two groups, the Quichua and Aymara, so called from the two kindred tongues spoken by each respectively. These possess a common grammatical structure, and a great number of words are common to both. They are in reality varying forms of one speech. From the valley of Titicaca the Aymara spread from the source of the Amazon river to the higher parts of the Andes range, so that in course of time they exhibited those qualities which stamp the mountaineer in every age and clime. The Quichua, on the other hand, occupied the warm valleys beyond the river Apurimac, to the north-west of the Aymara-speaking people-a tract equal to the central portion of the modern republic of Peru. The name

"Quichua " implies a warm valley or sphere, in contradistinction to the "Yunca," or tropical districts of the coast and low lands.

The Four Peoples

The metropolitan folk or Cuzco considered Peru to be divided into four sections—that of the Colla-suyu, with the valley of Titicaca as its centre, and stretching from the Bolivian highlands to Cuzco; the Contisuyu, between the Colla-suyu and the ocean; the Quichua Chinchay-suyu, of the north-west; and the Antisuyu, of the montaña region. The Inca people, coming suddenly into these lands, annexed them with surprising rapidity, and, making the aboriginal tribes dependent upon their rule, spread themselves over the face of the country. Thus the ancient chroniclers. But it is obvious that such rapid conquest was a practical impossibility, and it is now understood that the Inca power was consolidated only some hundred years before the coming of Pizarro.

The Coming of Manco Ccapac

Peruvian myth has its Quetzalcoatl in Manco Ccapac, a veritable son of the sun. The Life-giver, observing the deplorable condition of mankind, who seemed to exist for war and feasting alone, despatched his son, Manco Ccapac, and his sister-wife, Mama Oullo Huaca, to earth for the purpose of instructing the degraded peoples in the arts of civilised life. The heavenly pair came to earth in the neighbourhood of Lake Titicaca, and were provided with a golden wedge which they were assured would sink into the earth at the precise spot on which they should commence their missionary labours. This phenomenon occurred at Cuzco, where the wedge disappeared. The derivation of the name Cuzco, which means "Navel" or, in more modern terms, "Hub of the Universe," proves that it was regarded as a great culture-centre. On this spot the civilising agents pitched their camp, gathering the uncultured folk of the country around them. Whilst Manco taught the men the arts of agriculture, Mama Oullo instructed the women in those of weaving and spinning. Great numbers gathered in the vicinity of Cuzco, and the foundations of a city were laid. Under the mild rule of the heavenly pair the land of Peru abounded in every desirable thing, like the Eden of Genesis. The legend of Manco Ccapac as we have it from an old Spanish source is worth giving. It is as follows: "There [in Tiahuanaco] the creator began to raise up the people and nations that are in that region, making one of each nation in clay, and painting the dresses that each one was to wear; those that were to wear their hair, with hair, and those that were to be shorn, with hair cut. And to each nation was given the language that was to be spoken, and the songs to be sung, and the seeds and food that they were to sow. When the creator had finished painting and making the said nations and figures of clay, he gave life and soul to each one, as well man as woman, and ordered that they should pass under the earth. Thence each nation came up in the places to which he ordered them to go. Thus they say that some came out of caves, others issued from hills, others from fountains, others from the trunks of trees. From this cause and others, and owing to having come forth and multiplied from those places, and to having had the beginning of their lineage in them, they made huacas [sacred things] and places of worship of them, in memory of the origin of their lineage. Thus each nation uses the dress with which they invest their huana; and they say that the first that was born in that place was there turned into stone. Others say

that they were turned into falcons, condors, and other animals and birds. Hence the huacas they use are in different shapes."

The Peruvian Creation-Story

The Incan Peruvians believed that all things emanated from Pachacamac, the all-pervading spirit, who provided the plants and animals (which they believed to be produced from the earth) with "souls." The earth itself they designated Pachacamama (Earth-Mother). Here we observe that Pachacamac was more the maker and moulder than the originator of matter, a view common to many American mythologies. Pachacamac it was who breathed the breath of life into man, but the Peruvian conception of him was only evolved in later Inca times, and by no means existed in the early days of Inca rule, although he was probably worshipped before this under another and less exalted shape. The mere exercise of will or thought was sufficient, according to the Peruvians, to accomplish the creative act. In the prayers to the creator, and in other portions of Inca rite, we read such expressions as "Let a man be," "Let a woman be," and "The creative word," which go to prove that the Peruvian consciousness had fully grasped the idea of a creator capable of evolving matter out of nothingness. Occasionally we find the sun acting as a kind of demiurge or sub-creator. He it is who in later legend founds the city of Cuzco, and sends thither three eggs composed of gold, silver, and copper, from which spring the three classes of Peruvians, kings, priests, and slaves. The inevitable deluge occurs, after which we find the prehistoric town of Tiahuanaco regarded as the theatre of a new creation of man. Here the creator made man, and separated him into nations, making one of each nation out of the clay of the earth, painting the dresses that each was to wear, and endowing them with national songs, languages, seeds to sow suitable to the environment of each, and food such as they would require. Then he gave the peoples life and soul, and commanded them to enter the bowels of the earth, whence they came upward in the places where he ordered them to go. Perhaps this is one of the most complete ("wholesale" would be a better word) creation myths in existence, and we can glean from its very completeness that it is by no means of simple origin, but of great complexity. It is obviously an attempt to harmonise several conflicting creation-stories, notably those in which the people are spoken of as emanating from caves, and the later one of the creation of men at Tiahuanaco, probably suggested to the Incas by the immense ruins at that place, for which they could not otherwise account.

Local Creation-Myths

In some of the more isolated valleys of Peru we discover local creation-myths. For example, in the coastal valley of Irma Pachacamac was not considered to be the creator of the sun, but to be himself a descendant of it. The first human beings created by him were speedily separated, as the man died of hunger, but the woman supported herself by living on roots. The sun took compassion upon her and gave her a son whom Pachacamac slew and buried. But from his teeth there grew maize, from his ribs the long white roots of the manioc plant, and from his flesh various esculent plants.

The Character of Inca Civilisation

Apart from the treatment which they meted out to the subject races under their sway, the rule of the Inca monarchs was enlightened and contained the elements of high civilisation. It is scarcely clear whether the Inca race arrived in the country at such a date as would have permitted them to profit by adopting the arts and sciences of the Andean people who preceded them. But it may be affirmed that their arrival considerably post-dated the fall of the megalithic empire of the Andeans, so that in reality their civilisation was of their own manufacture. As architects they were by no means the inferiors of the prehistoric race, if the examples of their art did not bulk so massively, and the engineering skill with which they pushed long, straight tunnels through vast mountains and bridged seemingly impassable gorges still excites the wonder of modern experts. They also made long, straight roads after the most improved macadamised model. Their temples and palaces were adorned with gold and silver images and ornaments; sumptuous baths supplied with hot and cold water by means of pipes laid in the earth were to be found in the mansions of the nobility, and much luxury and real comfort prevailed.

An Absolute Theocracy

The empire of Peru was the most absolute theocracy the world has ever seen. The Inca was the direct representative of the sun upon earth, the head of a socio-religious edifice intricate and highly organised. This colossal bureaucracy had ramifications into the very homes of the people. The Inca was represented in the provinces by governors of the blood-royal. Officials were placed above ten thousand families, a thousand families, and even ten families, upon the principle that the rays of the sun enter everywhere, and that therefore the light of the Inca must penetrate to every corner of the empire. There was no such thing as personal freedom. Every man, woman, and child was numbered, branded, and under surveillance as much as were the llamas in the royal herds. Individual effort or enterprise was unheard of. Some writers have stated that a system of state socialism obtained in Peru. If so, then state surveillance in Central Russia might also be branded as socialism. A man's life was planned for him by the authorities from the age of five years, and even the woman whom he was to marry was selected for him by the Government officials. The age at which the people should marry was fixed at not earlier than twenty-four years for a man and eighteen for a woman. Coloured ribbons worn round the head indicated the place of a person's birth or the province to which he belonged.

A Golden Temple

One of the most remarkable monuments of the Peruvian civilisation was the Coricancha (Town of Gold) at Cuzco, the principal fane of the sun-god. Its inner and outer walls were covered with plates of pure gold. Situated upon an eminence eighty feet high, the temple looked down upon gardens filled, according to the conquering Spaniards, with treasures of gold and silver. The animals, insects, the very trees, say the chroniclers, were of the precious metals, as were the spades, hoes, and other implements employed for keeping the ground in cultivation. Through the pleasantries rippled the river Huatenay. Such was the glittering Intipampa (Field of the Sun). That the story is true, at least in part, is proved by the traveller Squier, who speaks of having seen in several houses in Cuzco sheets of gold preserved as relics which came from the Temple of the Sun. These, he says, were scarcely as thick as paper, and were stripped off

the walls of the Coricancha by the exultant Spanish soldiery.

The Great Altar

But this house of gold had but a roof of thatch! The Peruvians were ignorant of the principle of the arch, or else considered the feature unsuitable, for some reason best known to their architects. The doorways were formed of huge monoliths, and the entire aspect of the building was cyclopean. The interior displayed an ornate richness which impressed even the Spaniards, who had seen the wealth of many lands and Oriental kingdoms, and the gold-lust must have swelled within their hearts at sight of the great altar, behind which was a huge plate of the shining metal engraved with the features of the sun-god. The surface of this plate was enriched by a thousand gems, the scintillation of which was, according to eye-witnesses, almost insupportable. Around this dazzling sphere were seated the mummified corpses of the Inca kings, each on his throne, with sceptre in hand.

Planetary Temples

Surrounding the Coricancha several lesser temples clustered, all of them dedicated to one or other of the planetary bodies—to the moon, to Cuycha, the rainbow, to Chasca, the planet Venus. In the temple of the moon, the mythic mother of the Inca dynasty, a great plate of silver, like the golden one which represented the face of the sun-god, depicted the features of the moon-goddess, and around this the mummies of the Inca queens sat in a semicircle, like their spouses in the greater neighbouring fane. In the rainbow temple of Cuycha the seven-hued arch of heaven was depicted by a great arc of gold skilfully tempered or painted in suitable colours. All the utensils in these temples were of gold or silver. In the principal building twelve large jars of silver held the sacred grain, and even the pipes which conducted the water-supply through the earth to the sanctuary were of silver. Pedro Pizarro himself, besides other credible eye-witnesses, vouched for these facts. The colossal representation of the sun became the property of a certain Mancio Serra de Leguicano, a reckless cavalier and noted gambler, who lost it on a single throw of the dice! Such was the spirit of the adventurers who conquered this golden realm for the crown of Spain. The walls of the Coricancha are still standing, and this marvellous shrine of the chief luminary of heaven, the great god of the Peruvians, is now a Christian church.

The Mummies of Peru

The fact that the ancient Peruvians had a method of mummification has tempted many "antiquarians" to infer therefrom that they had some connection with ancient Egypt. These theories are so numerous as to give the unsophisticated reader the idea that a regular system of immigration was carried on between Egypt and America. As a matter of fact the method of mummification in vogue in Peru was entirely different from that employed by the ancient Egyptians.

Peruvian mummies are met with at apparently all stages of the history of the native races. Megalithic

tombs and monuments contain them in the doubled-up posture so common among early peoples all over the world. These megalithic tombs, or chulpas, as they are termed, are composed of a mass of rough stones and clay, faced with huge blocks of trachyte or basalt, so put together as to form a cist, in which the mummy was placed. The door invariably faces the east, so that it may catch the gleams of the rising sun—a proof of the prevalence of sun-worship. Squier alludes to one more than 24 feet high. An opening 18 inches square gave access to the sepulchral chamber, which was 11 feet square by 13 feet high. But the tomb had been entered before, and after getting in with much difficulty the explorer was forced to retreat empty-handed.

Many of these chulpas are circular, and painted in gay primary colours. They are very numerous in Bolivia, an old Peruvian province, and in the basin of Lake Titicaca they abound. The dead were wrapped in llama-skins, on which the outlines of the eyes and mouth were carefully marked. The corpse was then arrayed in other garments, and the door of the tomb walled up. In some parts of Peru the dead were mummified and placed in the dwelling-houses beside the living. In the rarefied air of the plateaus the bodies rapidly became innocuous, and the custom was not the insanitary one we might imagine it to be.

On the Pacific coast the method of mummification was somewhat different. The body was reduced to a complete state of desiccation, and was deposited in a tomb constructed of stone or adobe. Vases intended to hold maize or chicha liquor were placed beside the corpse, and copper hatchets, mirrors of polished stone, earrings, and bracelets have been discovered in these burial-places. Some of the remains are wrapped in rich cloth, and vases of gold and silver were placed beside them. Golden plaques are often discovered in the mouths, probably symbolic of the sun. The bodies exhibit no traces of embalming, and are usually in a sitting posture. Some of them have evidently been dried before inhumation, whilst others are covered with a resinous substance. They are generally accompanied by the various articles used during life; the men have their weapons and ornaments, women their household implements, and children their toys. The dryness of the climate, as in Egypt, keeps these relics in a wonderful state of preservation. In the grave of a woman were found not only vases of every shape, but also some cloth she had commenced to weave, which her death had perhaps prevented her from completing. Her light brown hair was carefully combed and plaited, and the legs from the ankle to the knee were painted red, after the fashion in vogue among Peruvian beauties, while little bladders of toilet-powder and gums were thoughtfully placed beside her for her use in the life to come.

Laws and Customs

The legal code of the Incas was severe in the extreme. Murderers and adulterers were punished by death, and the unpardonable sin appears to have been blasphemy against the sun, or his earthly representative, the Inca. The Virgin of the Sun (or nun) who broke her vow was buried alive, and the village from whence she came was razed to the ground. Flogging was administered for minor offences. A peculiar and very trying punishment must have been that of carrying a heavy stone for a certain time.

On marriage a home was apportioned to each couple, and land assigned to them sufficient for their support. When a child was born a separate allowance was given it—one *fanega* for a boy, and half that amount for a

girl, the *fanega* being equal to the area which could be sown with a hundred pounds of maize. There is something repulsive in the Inca code, with its grandmotherly legislation; and if this tyranny was beneficent, it was devised merely to serve its own ends and hound on the unhappy people under its control like dumb, driven cattle. The outlook of the average native was limited in the extreme. The Inca class of priests and warriors retained every vestige of authority; and that they employed their power unmercifully to grind down the millions beneath them was a sufficient excuse for the Spanish Conquistadores in dispossessing them of the empire they had so harshly administered.

The public ground was divided afresh every year according to the number of the members of each family, and agrarian laws were strictly fixed. Private property did not exist among the people of the lower classes, who merely farmed the lot which each year was placed at their disposal. Besides this, the people had perforce to cultivate the lands sacred to the Inca, and only the aged and the sick could evade this duty.

The Peruvian Calendar

The standard chronology known to the Peru of the Incas was a simple lunar reckoning. But the four principal points in the sun's course were denoted by means of the *intihuatana*, a device consisting of a large rock surmounted by a small cone, the shadow of which, falling on certain notches on the stone below, marked the date of the great sun-festivals. The Peruvians, however, had no definite calendar. At Cuzco, the capital, the solstices were gauged by pillars called *pachacta unanchac*, or indicators-of time, which were placed in four groups (two pillars to a group) on promontories, two in the direction of sunrise and two in that of sunset, to mark the extreme points of the sun's rising and setting. By this means they were enabled to distinguish the arrival and departure of the solstices, during which the sun never went beyond the middle pair of pillars. The Inca astronomer's approximation to the year was 360 days, which were divided into twelve moons of thirty days each. These moons were not calendar months in the correct sense, but simply a succession of lunations, which commenced with the winter solstice. This method, which must ultimately have proved confusing, does not seem to have been altered to co-ordinate with the reckoning of the succession of years. The names of the twelve moons, which had some reference to the daily life of the Peruvian, were as follows:

Huchuy Pucuy Quilla (Small Growing Moon), approximately January.

Hatun Pucuy Quilla (Great Growing Moon), approximately February.

Pancar Pucuy Quilla (Flower-growing Moon), approximately March.

Ayrihua Quilla (Twin Ears Moon), approximately April.

Aymuray Quilla (Harvest Moon), approximately May.

Auray Cusqui Quilla (Breaking Soil), approximately June.

Chahua Huarqui Quilla (Irrigation Moon), approximately July.

Tarpuy Quilla (Sowing Moon), approximately August.

Ccoya Raymi Quilla (Moon of the Moon Feast), approximately September.

Uma Raymi Quilla (Moon of the Feast of the Province of Uma), approximately October.

Ayamarca Raymi Quilla (Moon of the Feast of the Province of Ayamarca), approximately November.

Ccapac Raymi Quilla (Moon of the Great Feast of the Sun), approximately December.

The Festivals

That the Peruvian standard of time, as with all American people, was taken from the natural course of the moon is known chiefly from the fact that the principal religious festivals began on the new moon following a solstice or equinox. The ceremonies connected with the greatest festival, the Ccapac Raymi, were made to date near the lunar phases, the two stages commencing with the ninth day of the December moon and twenty-first day, or last quarter. But while these lunar phases indicated certain festivals, it very often happened that the civil authorities followed a reckoning of their own, in preference to accepting ecclesiastical rule. Considerable significance was attached to each month by the Peruvians regarding the nature of their festivals. The solstices and equinoxes were the occasions of established ceremonies. The arrival of the winter solstice, which in Peru occurs in June, was celebrated by the Intip Raymi (Great Feast of the Sun). The principal Peruvian feast, which took place at the summer solstice, when the new year was supposed to begin, was the national feast of the great god Pachacamac, and was called capac Raymi. Molina, Fernandez, and Garcilasso, however, date the new year from the winter solstice. The third festival of the Inca year, the Ccapac Situa, or Ccoya Raymi (Moon Feast), which is signalled by the beginning of the rainy season, occurred in September. In general character these festivals appear to have been simple, and even childlike. The sacrifice of animals taken from sacred herds of llamas was doubtless a principal feature of the ceremony, accompanied by the offering up of maguey, or maize spirit, and followed by the performance of symbolic dances.

The Llama

The llama was the chief domestic animal of Peru. All llamas were the property of the Inca. Like the camel, its distant relative, this creature can subsist for long periods upon little nourishment, and it is suitable for the carriage of moderate loads. Each year a certain amount of llama wool was given to the Peruvian family, according to the number of women it contained, and these wove it into garments, whatever was over being stored away in the public cloth-magazines for the general use. The large flocks of llamas and alpacas also afforded a supply of meat for the people such as the Mexicans never possessed.

Naturally much attention was given to the breeding of these animals, and the alpaca was as carefully regarded by the Peruvian as the sheep by the farmer of to-day. The guanacos and vicuñas, wild animals of the llama or auchenia family, were also sources of food- and wool-supply.

Architecture of the Incas

The art in which the Incan Peruvians displayed the greatest advance was that of architecture. The earlier style of Inca building shows that it was closely modelled, as has already been pointed out, on that of the megalithic masons of the Tiahuanaco district, but the later style shows stones laid in regular courses, varying in length. No cement or mortar of any kind was employed, the structure depending for stability upon the accuracy with which the stones were fitted to each other. An enormous amount of labour must have been expended upon this part of the work, for in the monuments of Peruvian architecture which still exist it is impossible to insert even a needle between the stones of which they are composed. The palaces and temples were built around a courtyard, and most of the principal buildings had a hall of considerable dimensions attached to them, which, like the baronial halls of the England of the Middle Ages, served for feasting or ceremony. In this style is built the front of the palace on the Colcampata, overlooking the city of Cuzco, under the fortress which is supposed to have been the dwelling of Manco Ccapac, the first Inca. Palaces at Yucay and Chinchero are also of this type.

Unsurpassed Workmanship

In an illuminating passage upon Inca architecture Sir Clements Markham., the greatest living authority upon matters Peruvian, says:

"In Cuzco the stone used is a dark trachyte, and the coarse grain secured greater adhesion between the blocks. The workmanship is unsurpassed, and the world has nothing to show in the way of stone-cutting and fitting to equal the skill and accuracy displayed in the Ynca structures of Cuzco. No cement is used, and the larger stones are in the lowest row, each ascending course being narrower, which presents a most pleasing effect. The edifices were built round a court, upon which the rooms opened, and some of the great halls were 200 paces long by 60 wide, the height being 35 to 40 feet, besides the spring of the roof. The roofs were thatch; and we are able to form an idea of their construction from one which is still preserved, after a lapse of three centuries. This is on a circular building called the Sondor-huasi, at Azangaro, and it shows that even thatch in the hands of tasteful builders will make a sightly roof for imposing edifices, and that the interior ornament of such a roo may be exceedingly beautiful."

The Temple of Viracocha

The temple of Viracocha, at Cacha, in the valley of the Vilcamayu, is built on a plan different from that of any other sacred building in Peru. Its ruins consist of a wall of adobe or clay 40 feet high and 330 long, built on stone foundations 8 feet in height. The roof was supported on twenty-five columns, and the width

of the structure was 87 feet. It was a place of pilgrimage, and the caravanserais where the Faithful were wont to be housed still stand around the ruined fane.

Titicaca

The most sacred of the Peruvian shrines, however, was Titicaca, an island on the lake of that name. The island of Coati, hard by, enjoyed an equal reverence. Terraced platforms on the ormer, reached by flights of steps, support two buildings provided for the use of pilgrims about to proceed to Coati. On Titicaca there are the ruins of an extensive palace which commands a splendid view of the surrounding barren country. A great bath or tank is situated half-way down a long range of terraces supported by cut stone masonry, and the Pool, 40 feet long by 10, and 5 feet deep, has similar walls on three sides. Below this tank the water is made to irrigate terrace after terrace until it falls into the lake.

Coati

The island of Coati is about six miles distant. The principal building is on one of the loftiest of seven terraces, once radiant with flowers and shrubs, and filled with rich loam transported from a more fertile region. It is placed on three sides of a square, 183 feet long by 80, and is of stone laid in clay and coated with plaster. "It has," says Markham, "thirty-five chambers, only one of which is faced with hewn stones. The ornament on the faqade consists of elaborate niches, which agreeably break the monotony of the wall, and above them runs a projecting cornice. The walls were painted yellow, and the niches red; and there was a high-pitched roof, broken here and there by gables. The two largest chambers are 20 long by 12, and loftier than the rest, each with a great niche in the wall facing the entrance. These were probably the holy places or shrines of the temple. The beautiful series of terraces falls off from the esplanade of the temple to the shores of the lake."

Mysterious Chimu

The coast folk, of a different race from the Incas, had their centre of civilisation near the city of Truxillo, on the plain of Chimu. Here the ruins of a great city litter the plain for many acres. Arising from the mass of ruin, at intervals stand huacas, or artificial hills. The city was supplied with water by means of small canals, which also served to irrigate the gardens. The mounds alluded to were used for sepulture, and the largest, at Moche, is 800 feet long by 470 feet in breadth, and 200 feet in height. It is constructed of adobes. Besides serving the purpose of a cemetery, this mound probably supported a large temple on its summit.

The Palace

A vast palace occupied a commanding position. Its great hall was 100 feet long by 52 broad, and its walls

were covered with a highly ornate series of arabesques in relief done in stucco, like the fretwork on the walls of Palenque. Another hall close at hand is ornamented in coloured stucco, and from it branch off many small rooms, which were evidently dormitories. From the first hall a long corridor leads to secret storehouses, where many vessels of gold and silver have been discovered hidden away, as if to secure them either from rrauding bands or the gaze of the vulgar. All of these structures are hollowed out of a vast mound covering several acres, so that the entire building may be said to be partially subterranean in character. "About a hundred yards to the westward of this palace there was a sepulchral mound where many relics were discovered. The bodies were wrapped in cloths, woven in ornamental figures and patterns of different colours. On some of the cloths were sewn plates of silver, and they were edged with borders of feathers, the silver being occasionally cut in the shape of fishes. Among the ruins of the city there are great rectangular areas enclosed by massive walls, and containing courts, streets, dwellings, and reservoirs for water. The largest is about a mile south of the mound-palace, and is 550 yards long by 400. The outer wall is about 30 feet high, io feet thick at the base, with sides inclining toward each other. Some of the interior walls are highly ornamented in stuccoed patterns; and in one part there is an edifice containing forty-five chambers or cells, in five rows of nine each, which is supposed to have been a prison. The enclosure also contained a reservoir 450 feet long by 195 broad, and 60 feet deep."

The Civilisation of Chimu

The ruins of Chimu are undoubtedly the outcome of a superior standard of civilisation. The buildings are elaborate, as are their internal arrangements. The extent of the city is great, and the art displayed in the manufacture of the utensils discovered within it and the taste evinced in the numerous wall-patterns show that a people of advanced culture inhabited it. The jeweller's work is in high relief, and the pottery and plaques found exhibit much artistic excellence.

Pachacamac

The famous ruins of the temple and city of Pachacamac, near the valley of Lurin, to the south of Lima, overlook the Pacific Ocean from a height of 500 feet. Four vast terraces still bear mighty perpendicular walls, at one time painted red. Here was found the only perfect Peruvian arch, built of large adobe bricks—a proof that the Peruvian mind did not stand still in matters architectural at least.

Irrigation Works

It was in works of irrigation, however., that the race exhibited its greatest engineering genius. In the valley of Nasca the Incas cut deep trenches to reinforce the irrigating power of a small river, and carried the system high up into the mountains, in order that the rainfall coming therefrom might be conducted into the needful channel. Lower down the valley the main watercourse is deflected into many branches, which irrigate each estate by feeding the small surface streams. This system adequately serves the fifteen estates of Nasca to-day! Another high-level canal for the irrigation of pasture-lands was led for more than

a hundred and fifty miles along the eastern slope of the central cordillera.

A Singular Discovery

In Peru, as in Mexico, it is probable that the cross was employed as a symbol of the four winds. An account of the expedition of Fuentes to the valley of Chichas recounts the discovery of a wooden cross as follows: [Skinner's State of Perm, p. 313 (1805).]

"When the settlers who accompanied Fuentes in his glorious expedition approached the valley they found a wooden cross, hidden, as if purposely, in the most intricate part of the mountains. As there is not anything more flattering to the vanity of a credulous man than to be enabled to bring forward his testimony in the relation of a prodigy, the devotion of these good conquerors was kindled to such a degree by the discovery of this sacred memorial that they instantly hailed it as miraculous and divine. They accordingly carried it in procession to the town, and placed it in the church belonging to the convent of San Francisco) where it is still worshipped. It appears next to impossible that there should not, at that time, have been any individual among them sufficiently enlightened to combat such a persuasion, since, in reality, there was nothing miraculous in the finding of this cross, there having been other Christian settlers, before the arrival of Fuentes, in the same valley. The opinion., notwithstanding, that the discovery was altogether miraculous, instead of having been abandoned at the commencement, was confirmed still more and more with the progress of time. The Jesuits Antonio Ruiz and Pedro Lozano, in their respective histories of the missions of Paraguay, &c., undertook to demonstrate that the Apostle St. Thomas had been in America. This thesis, which was so novel, and so well calculated to draw the public attention, required, more than any other, the aid of the most power of reasons, and of the most irrefragable documents, to be able to maintain itself, even in an hypothetical sense; but nothing of all this was brought forward. Certain miserable conjectures, prepossession, and personal interest, supplied the place of truth and criticism. The form of a human foot, which they fancied they saw imprinted on the rock, and the different fables of this description invented by ignorance at every step, were the sole foundations on which all the relations on this subject were made to repose. The one touching the peregrinations of St. Thomas from Brazil to Quito must be deemed apocryphal, when it is considered that the above reverend fathers describe the Apostle with the staff in the hand, the black cassock girt about the waist, and all the other trappings which distinguish the missionaries of the society. The credit which these histories obtained at the commencement was equal to that bestowed on the cross of Tarija, which remained in the predicament of being the one St. Thomas had planted in person, in the continent of America."

The Chibchas

A people called the Chibchas dwelt at a very high point of the Andes range. They were brave and industrious, and possessed a culture of their own. They defended themselves against much stronger native races, but after the Spanish conquest their country was included in New Granada, and is now part or the United States of Colombia. Less experienced than the Peruvians or Aztecs, they could, however, weave and dye, carve and engrave, make roads, build temples, and work in stone, wood, and metals. They also

worked in pottery and jewellery, making silver pendants and collars of shells and collars of precious stones. They were a wealthy folk, and their Spanish conquerors obtained much spoil. Little is known concerning them or their language, and there is not much of interest in the traditions relating to them.

Their mythology was simple. They believed the moon was the wife of Bochica, who represented the sun, and as she tried to destroy men Bochica only allowed her to give light during the night. When the aborigines were in a condition of barbarism Bochica taught them and civilised them. The legends about Bochica resemble in many points those about Quetzalcoatl or Manco Ccapac, as well as those relating to the founder of Buddhism and the first Inca of Peru. The Chibchas offered human sacrifices to their gods at certain intervals, and kept the wretched victim for some years in preparation for his doom. They venerated greatly the Lake of Quatavita, and are supposed to have flung their treasures into it when they were conquered. Although many attempts have been made to recover these, little of value has been found.

The Chibchas appear to have given allegiance to two leaders, one the Zippa, who lived at Bogota, the other the Zoque, who lived at Hunsa, now Tunja. These chiefs ruled supreme. Like the Incas, they could only have one lawful wife, and their sons did not succeed them-their power passed, as in some Central African tribes, to the eldest son of the sister.

When the Zippa died, sweet-smelling resin took the place of his internal parts, and the body was put in a wooden coffin, with sheets of gold for ornamentation. The coffin was hidden in an unknown sepulchre, and these tombs have never been discovered-at least, so say the Spaniards. Their weapons, garments, objects of daily use, even jars of *chicha*, were buried with these chiefs. It is very likely that a cave where rows of mummies richly dressed were found, and many jewels, was the secret burying-place of the Zippas and the Zoques. To these folk death meant only a continuation of the life on earth.

A Severe Legal Code

The laws of the Chibchas were severe-death was meted out to the murderer, and bodily punishment for stealing. A coward was made to look like a woman and do her work while to an unfaithful wife was administered a dose of red pepper, which, if swallowed, released the culprit from the penalty of death and entitled her to an apology from her husband. The Chibchas made no use of cattle, and lived on honey. Their houses were built of clay, and were set in the midst of an enclosure guarded by watch-towers. The roofs were of a conical shape, covered with reed mats, and skilfully interlaced rushes were used to close the openings.

The Chibchas were skilful in working bronze, lead, copper, tin, gold, and silver, but not iron. The Saint Germain Museum has many specimens of gold and silver articles made by these people. M. Uricachea, has still more uncommon specimens in his collection, such as two golden masks of the human face larger than life, and a great number of statuettes of men, and images of monkeys and frogs.

The Chibchas traded with what they made, exporting the rock salt they found in their own country and receiving in exchange cereals with which to cultivate their own poor soil. They also made curious little

ornaments which might have passed for money, but they are not supposed to have understood coinage. They had few stone columns-only large granite rocks covered with huge figures of tigers and crocodiles. Humboldt mentions these, and two very high columns, covered with sculpture, at the junction of the Carare and Magdalena, greatly revered by the natives, were raised probably by the Chibchas.

A Strange Mnemonic System

On the arrival of the Spaniards the Peruvians were unacquainted with any system of writing or numeration. The only means of recording events they possessed was that provided by *quipos*, knotted pieces of string or hide of varying length and colour. According to the length or colour of these cords the significance of the record varied; it was sometimes historical and sometimes mathematical. *Quipos* relating to the history of the Incas were carefully preserved by an officer called Quipo Camayol-literally, "The Guardian of the *Quipos*." The greater number were destroyed as monuments of idolatry by the fanatical Spanish monks who came over with the Conquistadores, but their loss is by no means important, as no study, however profound, could possibly unriddle the system upon which they were based. The Peruvians, however, long continued to use them in secret.

Practical Use of the Quipos

The Marquis de Nadaillac has placed on record a use to which the *quipos* were put in more modern times. He says: "A great revolt against the Spaniards was organised in 1792. As was found out later, the revolt had been organised by means of messengers carrying a piece of wood in which were enclosed threads the ends of which were formed of red, black, blue, or white fringes. The black thread had four knots, which signified that the messenger had started from Vladura, the residence of the chief of the conspiracy, four days after full moon. The white thread had ten knots, which signified that the revolt would break out ten days after the arrival of the messenger. The person to whom the keeper was sent had in his turn to make a knot in the red thread if he agreed to join the confederates; in the red and blue threads, on the contrary, if he refused." It was by means of these *quipos* that the Incas transmitted their instructions. On all the roads starting from the capital, at distances rarely exceeding five miles, rose *tambos*, or stations for the *chasquis* or couriers, who went from one post to another. The orders of the Inca thus became disseminated with great rapidity. Orders which emanated directly from the sovereign were marked with a red thread of the royal *llantu* (mantle), and nothing, as historians assure us, could equal the respect with which these messages were received.

The Incas as Craftsmen

The Incan Peruvians had made some progress in the metallurgic, ceramic, and textile arts. By washing the sands of the rivers of Caravaya they obtained large quantities of gold, and they extracted silver from the ore by means of blast-furnaces. Copper also was abundant, and was employed to manufacture bronze, of which most of their implements were made. Although it is difficult to know at what period their mining

operations were carried on, it is evident that they could only have learned the art through long experience. Many proofs are to be found of their skill in jewellery, and amongst these are wonderful statuettes which they made from an amalgam of gold and mercury, afterwards exposed to great heat. A number of curious little ornaments made of various substances, with a little hole bored through them, were frequently found under the huacas-probably talismans. The finest handiwork of the Incas was undoubtedly in jewellery; but unfortunately most of the examples of their work in this craft were melted down to assuage the insatiable avarice of the Spanish conquerors, and are therefore for ever lost to us. The spade and chisel employed in olden times by the Peruvians are much the same as the people use now, but some of their tools were clumsy. Their javelins, tomahawks, and other military arms were very futile weapons. Some found near the mines of Pasco were made of stone.

The spinning, weaving, and dyeing of the Peruvians were unequalled in aboriginal America, their cloths and tapestries being both graceful in design and strong in texture.

Stamps of bark or earthenware were employed to fix designs upon their woollen stuffs, and feathers were added to the garments made from these, the combination producing a gay effect much admired by the Spaniards. The British Museum possesses some good specimens of these manufactures.

Pottery

The Peruvians excelled in the potter's art. The pottery was baked in a kiln, and was varied in colour, red, black, and grey being the favourite shades. It was varnished outside, and the vases were moulded in two pieces and joined before heating. Much of the work is of great grace and elegance, and the shapes of animals were very skilfully imitated. Many drinking cups of elegant design have been discovered, and some vases are of considerable size, measuring over three feet in height. A simple geometric pattern is usually employed for decoration, but sometimes rows of birds and insects figure in the ceramics. The pottery of the coast people is more rich and varied than that of the Inca race proper, and among its types we find vases moulded in the form of human faces, many of them exhibiting so much character that we are forced to conclude that they are veritable portraits. Fine stone dishes are often found as well as platters of wood, and these frequently bear as ornament tasteful carvings representing serpents. On several cups and vases are painted representations of battles between the Inca forces and the savages of the eastern forests using bows and arrows; below wander the animals of the forest region, a brightly painted group.

The Archæological Museum of Madrid gives a representation of very varied kinds of Peruvian pottery, including some specimens modelled upon a series of plants, interesting to botanists. The Louvre collections have one or two interesting examples of earthenware, as well as the Ethnographical Museum of St. Petersburg, and in all these collections there are types which are believed to be peculiar to the Old World.

The Trocadero Museum has a very curious specimen with two necks called the "Salvador." A drawing on the vase represents a man with a tomahawk. The Peruvians, like the Mexicans, also made musical instruments out of earthenware, and heavy ornaments, principally for the ear.

Historical Sketch of the Incan Peruvians

The Inca dominion, as the Spaniards found it, was instituted only about a century before the coming of the white man. Before that time Inca sway held good over scattered portions of the country, but had not extended over the entire territory which in later times was connected with the Inca name. That it was founded on the wreck of a more ancient power which once existed in the district of Chinchay-suyu there can be little doubt. This power was wielded over a space bounded by the lake of Chinchay-cocha on the north and Abancay on the south, and extended to the Pacific at the valley of Chinchay. It was constituted by an alliance of tribes under the leadership of the chief of Pucara, in the Huanca country. A branch of this confederacy, the Chanca, pushing southward in a general movement, encountered the Inca people or Colla-suyu, who, under their leader, Pachacutic, a young but determined chieftain, defeated the invaders in a decisive battle near Cuzco. In consequence of this defeat the Chanca deserted their former allies and made common cause with their victors. Together the armies made a determined attack on the Huanca alliance, which they broke up, and conquered the northern districts of the Chinchay-suyu. Thus Central Peru fell to the Inca arms.

The Inca Monarchs

Inca history, or rather tradition, as we must call it in the light of an unparalleled lack of original documentary evidence, spoke of a series of eleven monarchs from Manco Ccapac to Huaina Ccapac, who died shortly before the Spanish conquest. These had reigned for a collective period of nearly 350 years. The evidence that these chiefs had reigned was of the best, for their mummified bodies were preserved in the great Temple of the Sun at Cuzco, already described. There they received the same daily service as when in the flesh. Their private herds of llamas and slaves were still understood to belong to them, and food and drink were placed before them at stated intervals. Clothes were made for them, and they were carried about in palanquins as if for daily exercise. The descendants of each at periodical intervals feasted on the produce of their ancestor's private estate, and his mummy was set in the centre of the diners and treated as the principal guest.

The First Incas

After Manco Ccapac and his immediate successor, Sinchi Roca (Wise Chief), Lloque Yupanqui comes third in the series. He died while his son was still a child. Concerning Mayta Ccapac, who commenced his reign while yet a minor, but little is known. He was followed by Ccapac Yupanqui, who defeated the Conti-suyu, who had grown alarmed at the great power recently attained by Cuzco. The Inca and his men were attacked whilst about to offer sacrifice. A second attempt to sack Cuzco and divide its spoil and the women attached to the great Temple of the Sun likewise ended in the total discomfiture of the jealous invaders. With Inca Roca, the next Inca, a new dynasty commences, but it is well-nigh impossible to trace the connection between it and the preceding one. Of the origin of Inca Roca nothing is related save that he claimed descent from Manco Ccapac. Roca, instead of waiting to be attacked in his own dominions,

boldly confronted the Conti-suyu in their own territory, defeated them decisively at Pumatampu, and compelled them to yield him tribute. His successor, Yahuarhuaccac, initiated a similar campaign against the Colla. suyu people, against whom he had the assistance of the conquered Conti-suyu. But at a feast which he held in Cuzco before setting out he was attacked by his allies, and fled to the Coricancha, or Golden Temple of the Sun, for refuge, along with his wives. Resistance was unavailing, and the Inca and many of his favourites were slaughtered. The allied tribes which had overrun Central Peru now threatened Cuzco, and had they advanced with promptitude the Inca dynasty would have been wiped out and the city reduced to ruins. A strong man was at hand, however, who was capable of dealing with the extremely dangerous situation which had arisen. This was Viracocha, a chieftain chosen by the vote of the assembled warriors of Cuzco. By a prudent conciliation of the Conti-suyu and Collasuyu he established a confederation which not only put an end to all threats of invasion, but so menaced the invaders that they were glad to return to their own territory and place it in a suitable state of defence.

Viracocha the Great

With Viracocha the Great, or "Godlike," the period of true Inca ascendancy commences. He was the real founder of the enlarged Inca dominion. He was elected Inca on his personal merits, and during a vigorous reign succeeded in making the influence of Cuzco felt in the contiguous southern regions. In his old age he retired to his country seats at Yucay and Xaquixahuana, and left the conduct of the realm to his son and successor, Urco-Inca, a weak-minded voluptuary, who neglected his royal duties, and was superseded by his younger brother, Pachacutic, a famous character in Inca history.

The Plain of Blood

The commencement of Pachacutic's reign witnessed one of the most sanguinary battles in the history of Peru. Hastu-huaraca., chief of the Antahuayllas, in the Chanca country, invaded the Inca territory, and encamped on the hills of Carmenca, which overlooks Cuzco. Pachacutic held a parley with him, but all to no purpose, for the powerful invader was determined to humble the Inca dynasty to the dust. Battle was speedily joined. The first day's fight was indecisive, but on the succeeding day Pachacutic won a great victory, the larger part of the invading force being left dead on the field of battle, and Hastuhuaraca retreating with five hundred followers only. The battle of Yahuar-pampa (Plain of Blood) was the turning-point in Peruvian history. The young Inca, formerly known as Yupanqui, was now called Pachacutic (He who changes the World). The warriors of the south made full submission to him, and came in crowds to offer him their services and seek his alliance and friendship, and he shortly found himself supreme in the territories over which his predecessors had exercised merely a nominal control.

The Conquest of Middle Peru

Hastu-huaraca, who had been commissioned by the allied tribesmen of Chinchay-suyu to reduce the Incas, now threw in his lot with them, and together conqueror and conquered proceeded to the liberation

of the district of Chinchay-suyu from the tyranny of the Huanca alliance. The reduction of the southern portion of that territory was speedily accomplished. In the valley of Xauxa the invaders came upon the army of the Huanca, on which they inflicted a final defeat. The Inca spared and liberated the prisoners of war, who were numerous. Once more, at Tarma, were the Huanca beaten, after which all resistance appears to have been overcome. The city-state of Cuzco was now the dominant power throughout the whole of Central Peru, a territory 300 miles in length, whilst it exercised a kind of suzerainty over a district of equal extent toward the south-east, which it shortly converted into actual dominion.

Fusion of Races

This conquest of Central Peru led to the fusing of the Quichua-speaking tribes on the left bank of the Apurimac with the Aymara-speaking folk on the right bank, with the result that the more numerous Quichua speedily gained linguistic ascendancy over their brethren the Aymara. Subsequently to this the peoples of Southern and Central Peru, led by Inca headmen, swept in a great wave of migration over Cerro de Pasco, where they met with little or no resistance, and Pachacutic lived to be lord over a dominion extending for a thousand miles to the northward, and founder of a great Inca colony south of the equator almost identical in outline with the republic of Ecuador.

Two Branches of the Incas

These conquests, or rather race-movements, split up the Inca people into two separate portions, the respective centres of which were well-nigh a thousand miles apart. The centre of the northern district was at Turnipampa, Riopampa, and Quito at different periods. The political separation of these areas was only a question of time. Geographical conditions almost totally divided the two portions of the empire, a sparsely populated stretch of country 400 miles in extent lying between them (see map, P. 333.)

The Laws of Pachacutic

Pachacutic united to his fame as a warrior the reputation of a wise and liberal ruler. He built the great Temple of the Sun at Cuzco, probably on the site of a still older building, and established in its walls the convent in which five hundred maidens were set apart for the service of the god. He also, it is said ' instituted the great rite of the Ccapac-cocha, at which maize, cloth, llamas, and children were sacrificed in honour of the sun-god. He devised a kind of census, by which governors were compelled periodically to render an account of the population under their rule. This statement was made by means of *quipos*. Agriculture was his peculiar care, and he was stringent in the enforcement of laws regarding the tilling of the soil, the foundation and upkeep of stores and granaries, and the regulation of labour in general. As an architect he took upon himself the task of personally designing the principal buildings of the city of Cuzco, which were rebuilt under his instructions and in accordance with models moulded from clay by his own hands. He appears to have had a passion for order, and to him we may be justified in tracing the rigorous and almost grandmotherly system under which the Peruvians were living at the time of the

arrival of their Spanish conquerors. To Pachacutic, too, is assigned the raising of the immense fortress of Sacsahuaman, already described. He further instituted the order of knighthood known as Auqui, or "Warrior," entrance to which was granted to suitable applicants at the great feast of Ccapac Raymi, or Festival of the Sun. He also named the succession of moons, and erected the pillars on the hill of Carmenca by which the season of solstice was found. In short, all law and order which had a place in the Peruvian social economy were attributed to him, and we may designate him the Alfred of his race.

Tupac-Yupanqui

Pachacutic's son, Tupac-Yupanqui, for some time before his father's death acted as his lieutenant. His name signifies "Bright" or "Shining." His activity extended to every portion of the Inca dominion, the borders of which he enlarged, suppressing revolts, subjugating tribes not wholly brought within the pale of Inca influence, and generally completing the work so ably begun by his father.

"The Gibbet"

A spirit of cruelty, and excess such as was unknown to Pachacutic marked the military exploits of Tupac. In the valley of Huarco, near the Pacific coast, for example, he was repulsed by the natives, who were well supplied with food and stores of all sorts, and whose town was well fortified and very strongly situated. Tupac constructed an immense camp, or rather town, the outlines of which recalled those of his capital of Cuzco, on a hill opposite the city, and here he calmly sat down to watch the gradual starvation of the enemy. This siege continued for three years, until the wretched defenders, driven to despair through want of food, capitulated, relying on the assurance of their conqueror that they should become a part of the Inca nation and that their daughters should become the wives of Inca youths. The submission of their chiefs having been made, Tupac ordered a general massacre of the warriors and principal civilians. At the conquest the Spaniards could still see the immense heaps of bones which littered the spot where this heartless holocaust took place, and the name Huarco (The Gibbet) became indissolubly associated with the district.

Huaina Ccapac

Tupac died in 1493, and was succeeded by his son Huaina Ccapac (The Young Chief). Huaina was about twenty-two years of age at the time of his father's death, and although the late Inca had named Ccapac-Huari, his son by another wife, as his successor, the claims of Huaina were recognised. His reign was peaceful, and was marked by wise administrative improvements and engineering effort. At the same time he was busily employed in holding the savage peoples who surrounded his empire in check. He favoured the northern colony, and rebuilt Tumipampa, but resided at Quito. Here he dwelt for some years with a favourite son by a wife of the lower class, named Tupac-atau-huallpa (The Sun makes Good Fortune). Huaina was the victim of an epidemic raging in Peru at the time. He was greatly feared by his subjects, and was the last Inca who held undisputed sway over the entire dominion. Like Nezahualcoyotl in

Mexico, he attempted to set up the worship of one god in Peru, to the detriment of all other huacas, or sacred beings.

The Inca Civil War

On the death of Huaina his two sons, Huascar and Atahuallpa, [This is the name by which he is generally alluded to in Peruvian history.] strove for the crown. Before his demise Huaina had divided his dominion between his two sons, but it was said that he had wrested Quito from a certain chieftain whose daughter he had married, and by whom he had Atahuallpa, who was therefore rightful heir to that province. The other son, Huascar, or Tupac-cusi-huallpa (The Sun makes Joy), was born to his principal sister-wife-for, according to Inca custom, the monarchs of Peru, like those of certain Egyptian dynasties, filled with pride of race, and unwilling to mingle their blood with that of plebeians, took spouses from among their sisters. This is the story as given by many Spanish chroniclers, but it has no foundation in fact. Atahuallpa was in reality the son of a woman of the people, and Huascar was not the son of Huaina's sister-wife, but of a wife of less intimate relationship. Therefore both sons were on an equality as regards descent. Huascar, however, was nearer the throne by virtue of his mother's status, which was that of a royal princess, whereas the mother of Atahuallpa was not officially recognised. Huascar by his excesses and his outrages on religion and public decency aroused the people to revolt against his power, and Atahuallpa, discerning his opportunity in this *émeute*, made a determined attack on the royal forces, and succeeded in driving them slowly back, until at last Turnipampa was razed to the ground, and shortly afterwards the important southerly fortress of Caxamarca fell into the hands of the rebels.

A Dramatic Situation

Atahuallpa remained at Caxamarca, and despatched the bulk of his forces into the enemy's country. These drove the warriors of Huascar back until the upper courses of the Apurimac were reached. Huascar fled from Cuzco, but was captured, and carried a prisoner with his mother, wife, and children to Atahuallpa. Not many days afterwards news of the landing of the Spaniards was received by the rebel Inca. The downfall of the Peruvian Empire was at hand.

A Worthless Despotism

If the blessings of a well-regulated government were dispensed by the Incas, these benefits were assuredly counterbalanced by the degrading despotism which accompanied them. The political organisation of the Peruvian Empire was in every sense more complete than that of Mexico. But in a state where individual effort and liberty are entirely crushed even such an effective organisation as the Peruvian can avail the people little, and is merely a device for the support of a calculated tyranny.

[Next: CHAPTER VII; The Mythology of Peru](#)

CHAPTER VII; The Mythology of Peru

The Religion of Ancient Peru

THE religion of the ancient Peruvians had obviously developed in a much shorter time than that of the Mexicans. The more ancient character inherent in it was displayed in the presence of deities many of which were little better than mere totems, and although a definite monotheism or worship of one god appears to have been reached, it was not by the efforts of the priestly caste that this was achieved, but rather by the will of the Inca Pachacutic, who seems to have been a monarch gifted with rare insight and ability—a man much after the type of the Mexican Nezahualcoyotl.

In Inca times the religion of the people was solely directed by the state, and regulated in such a manner that independent theological thought was permitted no outlet. But it must not be inferred from this that no change had ever come over the spirit of Peruvian religion. As a matter of fact sweeping changes had been effected, but these had been solely the work of the Inca race, the leaders of which had amalgamated the various faiths of the peoples whom they had conquered into one official belief.

Totemism

Garcilasso el Inca de la Vega, an early Spanish writer on matters Peruvian, states that tradition ran that in ante-Inca times every district, family, and village possessed its own god, each different from the others. These gods were usually such objects as trees, mountains, flowers, herbs, caves, large stones, pieces of jasper, and animals. The jaguar, puma, and bear were worshipped for their strength and fierceness, the monkey and fox for their cunning, the condor for its size and because several tribes believed themselves to be descended from it. The screech-owl was worshipped for its beauty, and the common owl for its power of seeing in the dark. Serpents, particularly the larger and more dangerous varieties, were especially regarded with reverence.

Although Payne classes all these gods together as totems, it is plain that those of the first class—the flowers, herbs, caves, and pieces of jasper—are merely fetishes. A fetish is an object in which the savage believes to be resident a spirit which, by its magic, will assist him in his undertakings. A totem is an object or an animal, usually the latter, with which the people of a tribe believe themselves to be connected by ties of blood and from which they are descended. It later becomes the type or symbol of the tribe.

Paccariscas

Lakes, springs, rocks, mountains, precipices, and caves were all regarded by the various Peruvian tribes as *paccariscas*-places whence their ancestors had originally issued to the upper world. The *paccarisca* was usually saluted with the cry, "Thou art my birthplace, thou art my life-spring. Guard me from evil, O Paccarisca!" In the holy spot a spirit was supposed to dwell which served the tribe as a kind of oracle. Naturally the *paccarisca* was looked upon with extreme reverence. It became, indeed, a sort of life-centre for the tribe, from which they were very unwilling to be separated.

Worship of Stones

The worship of stones appears to have been almost as universal in ancient Peru as it was in ancient Palestine. Man in his primitive state believes stones to be the framework of the earth, its bony structure. He considers himself to have emerged from some cave-in fact, from the entrails of the earth. Nearly all American creation-myths regard man as thus emanating from the bowels of the great terrestrial mother. Rocks which were thus chosen as *paccariscas* are found, among many other places, at Calca, in the valley of the Yucay, and at Titicaca there is a great mass of red sandstone on the top of a high ridge with almost inaccessible slopes and dark, gloomy recesses where the sun was thought to have hidden himself at the time of the great deluge which covered all the earth. The rock of Titicaca was, in fact, the great *paccarisca* of the sun itself.

We are thus not surprised to find that many standing stones were worshipped in Peru in aboriginal times. Thus Arriaga states that rocks of great size which bore some resemblance to the human figure were imagined to have been at one time gigantic men or spirits who, because they disobeyed the creative power, were turned into stone. According to another account they were said to have suffered this punishment for refusing to listen to the words of Thonapa, the son of the creator, who, like Quetzalcoatl or Manco Ccapac, had taken upon himself the guise of a wandering Indian, so that he might have an opportunity of bringing the arts of civilisation to the aborigines. At Tiahuanaco a certain group of stones was said to represent all that remained of the villagers of that place, who, instead of paying fitting attention to the wise counsel which Thonapa the Civiliser bestowed upon them, continued to dance and drink in scorn of the teachings he had brought to them.

Again, some stones were said to have become men, as in the old Greek creation-legend of Deucalion and Pyrrha. In the legend of Ccapac Inca Pachacutic, when Cuzco was attacked in force by the Chancas an Indian erected stones to which he attached shields and weapons so that they should appear to represent so many warriors in hiding. Pachacutic, in great need of assistance, cried to them with such vehemence to come to his help that they became men, and rendered him splendid service.

Huacas

Whatever was sacred, of sacred origin, or of the nature of a relic the Peruvians designated a *huaca*, from the root *huacan*, to howl, native worship invariably taking the form of a kind of howl, or weird, dirge-like wailing. All objects of reverence were known as *huacas*, although those of a higher class were also

alluded to as *viracochas*. The Peruvians had, naturally, many forms of *huaca*, the most popular of which were those of the fetish class which could be carried about by the individual. These were usually stones or pebbles, many of which were carved and painted, and some made to represent human beings. The llama and the ear of maize were perhaps the most usual forms of these sacred objects. Some of them had an agricultural significance. In order that irrigation might proceed favourably a *huaca* was placed at intervals in proximity to the acequias, or irrigation canals, which was supposed to prevent them leaking or otherwise failing to supply a sufficiency of moisture to the parched maize-fields. *Huacas* of this sort were known as *ccompas*, and were regarded as deities of great importance, as the food supply of the community was thought to be wholly dependent upon their assistance. Other *huacas* of a similar kind were called *chichics* and *huancas*, and these presided over the fortunes of the maize, and ensured that a sufficient supply of rain should be forthcoming. Great numbers of these agricultural fetishes were destroyed by the zealous commissary Hernandez de Avendaño.

The Mamas

Spirits which were supposed to be instrumental in forcing the growth of the maize or other plants were the *mamas*. We find a similar conception among many Brazilian tribes to-day, so that the idea appears to have been a widely accepted one in South American countries. The Peruvians called such agencies "mothers," adding to the generic name that of the plant or herb with which they were specially associated. Thus *acsumama* was the potato-mother, *quinuamama* the quinoa-mother, *saramama* the maize-mother, and *cocamama* the mother of the coca-shrub. Of these the *saramama* was naturally the most important, governing as it did the principal source of the food-supply of the community. Sometimes an image of the *saramama* was carved in stone, in the shape of an ear of maize. The *saramama* was also worshipped in the form of a doll, or *huantay*. *sara*, made out of stalks of maize, renewed at each harvest, much as the idols of the great corn-mother of Mexico were manufactured at each harvest-season. After having been made, the image was watched over for three nights, and then sacrifice was done to it. The priest or medicine-man of the tribe would then inquire of it whether or not it was capable of existing until that time in the next year. If its spirit replied in the affirmative it was permitted to remain where it was until the following harvest. If not it was removed, burnt, and another figure took its place, to which similar questions were put.

The Huamantantac

Connected with agriculture in some degree was the Huamantantac (He who causes the Cormorants to gather themselves together). This was the agency responsible for the gathering of sea-birds, resulting in the deposits of guano to be found along the Peruvian coast which are so valuable in the cultivation of the maize-plant. He was regarded as a most beneficent spirit, and was sacrificed to with exceeding fervour.

Huaris

The *huaris*, or "great ones," were the ancestors of the aristocrats of a tribe, and were regarded as specially favourable toward agricultural effort, possibly because the land had at one time belonged to them personally. They were sometimes alluded to as the "gods of strength," and were sacrificed to by libations of *chicha*. Ancestors in general were deeply revered, and had an agricultural significance, in that considerable tracts of land were tilled in order that they might be supplied with suitable food and drink offerings. As the number of ancestors increased more and more land was brought into cultivation, and the hapless people had their toil added to immeasurably by these constant demands upon them.

Huillcas

The *huillcas* were *huacas* which partook of the nature of oracles. Many of these were serpents, trees, and rivers, the noises made by which appeared to the primitive Peruvians-as, indeed, they do to primitive folk all over the world-to be of the quality of articulate speech. Both the Huillcamayu and the Apurimac rivers at Cuzco were *huillca* oracles of this kind, as their names, "Huillca-river " and "Great Speaker," denote. These oracles often set the mandate of the Inca himself at defiance, occasionally supporting popular opinion against his policy.

The Oracles of the Andes

The Peruvian Indians of the Andes range within recent generations continued to adhere to the superstitions they had inherited from their fathers. A rare and interesting account of these says that they "admit an evil being, the inhabitant of the centre of the earth, whom they consider as the author of their misfortunes, and at the mention of whose name they tremble. The most shrewd among them take advantage of this belief to obtain respect, and represent themselves as his delegates. Under the denomination of *mohanes*, or *agoreros*, they are consulted even on the most trivial occasions. They preside over the intrigues of love, the health of the community, and the taking of the field. Whatever repeatedly occurs to defeat their prognostics, falls on themselves; and they are wont to pay for their deceptions very dearly. They chew a species of vegetable called *piripiti*, and throw it into the air, accompanying this act by certain recitals and incantations, to injure some, to benefit others, to procure rain and the inundation of the rivers, or, on the other hand, to occasion settled weather, and a plentiful store of agricultural productions. Any such result, having been casually verified on a single occasion, suffices to confirm the Indians in their faith, although they may have been cheated a thousand times. Fully persuaded that they cannot resist the influence of the *piripiri*, as soon as they know that they have been solicited in love by its means, they fix their eyes on the impassioned object, and discover a thousand amiable traits, either real or fanciful, which indifference had before concealed from their view. But the principal power, efficacy, and it may be said misfortune of the *mohanes* consist in the cure of the sick. Every malady is ascribed to their enchantments, and means are instantly taken to ascertain by whom the mischief may have been wrought. For this purpose, the nearest relative takes a quantity of the juice of *floripondium*, and suddenly falls intoxicated by the violence of the plant. He is placed in a fit posture to prevent suffocation, and on his coming to himself, at the end of three days, the *mohane* who has the greatest resemblance to the sorcerer he saw in his visions is to undertake the cure, or if, in the interim, the

sick man has perished, it is customary to subject him to the same fate. When not any sorcerer occurs in the visions, the first mohane they encounter has the misfortune to represent his image." [Skinner, *State of Peru*, p. 275]

Lake-Worship in Peru

At Lake Titicaca the Peruvians believed the inhabitants of the earth, animals as well as men, to have been fashioned by the creator, and the district was thus sacrosanct in their eyes. The people of the Collao called it Mamacota (Mother-water), because it furnished them with supplies of food. Two great idols were connected with this worship. One called Copacahuana was made of a bluish-green stone shaped like a fish with a human head, and was placed in a commanding position on the shores of the lake. On the arrival of the Spaniards so deeply rooted was the worship of this goddess that they could only suppress it by raising an image of the Virgin in place of the idol. The Christian emblem remains to this day. Mamacota was venerated as the giver of fish, with which the lake abounded. The other image, Copacati (Serpent-stone), represented the element of water as embodied in the lake itself in the form of an image wreathed in serpents, which in America are nearly always symbolical of water.

The Lost Island

A strange legend is recounted of this lake-goddess. She was chiefly worshipped as the giver of rain, but Huaina Ccapac, who had modern ideas and journeyed through the country casting down *huacas* had determined to raise on an island of Lake Titicaca a temple to Yatiri (The Ruler), the Aymara name of the god Pachacamac in his form of Pachayachachic. He commenced by raising the new shrine on the island of Titicaca itself. But the deity when called upon refused to vouchsafe any reply to his worshippers or priests. Huaina then commanded that the shrine should be transferred to the island of Apinguela. But the same thing happened there. He then inaugurated a temple on the island of Paapiti, and lavished upon it many sacrifices of llamas, children, and precious metals. But the offended tutelary goddess of the lake, irritated beyond endurance by this invasion of her ancient domain, lashed the watery waste into such a frenzy of storm that the island and the shrine which covered it disappeared beneath the waves and were never thereafter beheld by mortal eye.

The Thunder God of Peru

The rain-and-thunder god of Peru was worshipped in various parts of the country under various names. Among the Collao he was known as Con, and in that part of the Inca dominions now known as Bolivia he was called Churoquilla. Near the cordilleras of the coast he was probably known as Pariacaca, who expelled the *huaca* of the district by dreadful tempests, hurling rain and hail at him for three days and nights in such quantities as to form the great lake of Pariacaca. Burnt llamas were offered to him. But the Incas, discontented with this local worship, which by no means suited their system of central government, determined to create one thunder-deity to whom all the tribes in the empire must bow as the only god of

his class. We are not aware what his name was, but we know from mythological evidence that he was a mixture of all the other gods of thunder in the Peruvian Empire, first because he invariably occupied the third place in the triad of greater deities, the creator, sun, and thunder, all of whom were more or less amalgamations of provincial and metropolitan gods, and secondly because a great image of him was erected in the Coricancha at Cuzco, in which he was represented in human form, wearing a headdress which concealed his face, symbolic of the clouds, which ever veil the thunder-god's head. He had a special temple of his own, moreover, and was assigned a share in the sacred lands by the Inca Pachacutic. He was accompanied by a figure of his sister, who carried jars of water. An unknown Quichuan poet composed on the myth the following graceful little poem, which was translated by the late Daniel Garrison Brinton, an enthusiastic Americanist and professor of American archæology in the University of Pennsylvania:

Bounteous Princess,
 Lo, thy brother
 Breaks thy vessel
 Now in fragments.
 From the blow come
 Thunder, lightning,
 Strokes of lightning;
 And thou, Princess,
 Tak'st the water,
 With it rainest,
 And the hail or
 Snow dispensest,
 Viracocha,
 World-constructor.

It will be observed that the translator here employs the name Viracocha as if it were that of the deity. But it was merely a general expression in use for a more than usually sacred being. Brinton, commenting upon the legend, says: "In this pretty waif that has floated down to us from the wreck of a literature now for ever lost there is more than one point to attract the notice of the antiquary. He may find in it a hint to decipher those names of divinities so common in Peruvian legends, Contici and Illatici. Both mean 'the Thunder Vase,' and both doubtless refer to the conception here displayed of the phenomena of the thunderstorm." Alluding to Peruvian thunder-myth elsewhere, he says in an illuminating passage: "Throughout the realms of the Incas the Peruvians venerated as maker of all things and ruler of the firmament the god Ataguju. The legend was that from him proceeded the first of mortals, the man Guamansuri, who descended to the earth and there wedded the sister of certain Guachimines, rayless ones or Darklings, who then possessed it. They destroyed him, but their sister gave birth to twin sons, Apocatequil and Piguerao. The former was the more powerful. By touching the corpse of his mother he brought her to life, he drove off and slew the Guachimines, and, directed by Ataguju, released the race of Indians from the soil by turning it up with a spade of gold. For this reason they adored him as their maker. He it was, they thought, who produced the thunder and the lightning by hurling stones with his sling. And the thunderbolts that fall, said they, are his children. Few villages were willing to be without one or more

of these. They were in appearance small, round stones, but had the admirable properties of securing fertility to the fields, protecting from lightning, and, by a transition easy to understand, were also adored as gods of fire as well material as of the passions, and were capable of kindling the dangerous flames of desire in the most frigid bosoms. Therefore they were in great esteem as love-charms. Apocatequil's statue was erected on the mountains, with that of his mother on one hand and his brother on the other. 'He was Prince of Evil, and the most respected god of the Peruvians. From Quito to Cuzco not an Indian but would give all he possessed to conciliate him. Five priests, two stewards, and a crowd of slaves served his image. And his chief temple was surrounded by a very considerable village, whose inhabitants had no other occupation but to wait on him.'" In memory of these brothers twins in Peru were always deemed sacred to the lightning.

There is an instance on record of how the *huillca* could refuse on occasion to recognise even royalty itself. Manco, the Inca who had been given the kingly power by Pizarro, offered a sacrifice to one of these oracular shrines. The oracle refused to recognise him, through the medium of its guardian priest, stating that Manco was not the rightful Inca. Manco there fore caused the oracle, which was in the shape of a rock, to be thrown down, whereupon its guardian spirit emerged in the form of a parrot and flew away. It is probable that the bird thus liberated had been taught by the priests to answer to the questions of those who came to consult the shrine. But we learn that on Manco commanding that the parrot should be pursued it sought another rock, which opened to receive it, and the spirit of the *huillca* was transferred to this new abode.

The Great God Pachacamac

Later Peruvian mythology recognised only three gods of the first rank, the earth, the thunder, and the creative agency. Pachacamac, the great spirit of earth, derived his name from a word *pacha*, which may be best translated as "things." In its sense of visible things it is equivalent to "world," applied to things which happen in succession it denotes "time," and to things connected with persons "property," especially clothes. The world of visible things is thus Mamapacha (Earth-Mother), under which name the ancient Peruvians worshipped the earth. Pachacamac, on the other hand, is not the earth itself, the soil, but the spirit which animates all things that emerge therefrom. From him proceed the spirits of the plants and animals which come from the earth. Pachamama is the motherspirit of the mountains, rocks, and plains, Pachacamac the father-spirit of the grain-bearing plants, animals, birds, and man. In some localities Pachacamac and Pachamama were worshipped as divine mates. Possibly this practice was universal in early times, gradually lapsing into desuetude in later days. Pachamama was in another phase intended to denote the land immediately contiguous to a settlement, on which the inhabitants depended for their food-supply.

Peruvian Creation-Stories

It is easy to see how such a conception as Pachacamac, the spirit of animated nature, would become one with the idea of a universal or even a partial creator. That there was a pre-existing conception of a

creative agency can be proved from the existence of the Peruvian name Conticsi-viracocha (He who gives Origin, or Beginning). This conception and that of Pachacamac must at some comparatively early period have clashed, and been amalgamated probably with ease when it was seen how nearly akin were the two ideas. Indeed, Pachacamac was alternatively known as Pacharurac, the "maker" of all things-sure proof of his amalgamation with the conception of the creative agency. As such he had his symbol in the great Coricancha at Cuzco, an oval plate of gold, suspended between those of the sun and the moon, and placed vertically, it may be hazarded with some probability, to represent in symbol that universal matrix from which emanated all things. Elsewhere in Cuzco the creator was represented by a stone statue in human form.

Pachayachachic

In later Inca days this idea of a creator assumed that of a direct ruler of the universe, known as Pachayachachic. This change was probably due to the influence of the Inca Pachacutic, who is known to have made several other doctrinal innovations in Peruvian theology. He commanded a great new temple to the creator-god to be built at the north angle of the city of Cuzco, in which he placed a statue of pure gold, of the size of a boy of ten years of age. The small size was to facilitate its removal, as Peruvian worship was nearly always carried out in the open air, In form it represented a man with his right arm elevated, the hand partially closed and the forefinger and thumb raised, as if in the act of uttering the creative word. To this god large possessions and revenues were assigned, for previously service rendered to him had been voluntary only.

Ideas of Creation

It is from aboriginal sources as preserved by the first Spanish colonists that we glean our knowledge of what the Incas believed the creative process to consist. By means of his word (*ñisca*) the creator, a spirit, powerful and opulent, made all things. We are provided with the formulæ of his very words by the Peruvian prayers still extant: "Let earth and heaven be," "Let a man be; let a woman be," "Let there be day," "Let there be night," "Let the light shine." The sun is here regarded as the creative agency, and the ruling caste as the objects of a special act of creation.

Pacari Tampu

Pacari Tampu (House of the Dawn) was the place of origin, according to the later Inca theology, of four brothers and sisters who initiated the four Peruvian systems of worship. The eldest climbed a neighbouring mountain, and cast stones to the four points of the compass, thus indicating that he claimed all the land within sight. But his youngest brother succeeded in enticing him into a cave, which he sealed up with a great stone, thus imprisoning him for ever. He next persuaded his second brother to ascend a lofty mountain, from which he cast him, changing him into a stone in his descent. On beholding the fate of his brethren the third member of the quartette fled. It is obvious that we have here a legend concocted

by the later Inca priesthood to account for the evolution of Peruvian religion in its different stages. The first brother would appear to represent the oldest religion in Peru, that of the paccariscas, the second that of a fetishistic stone worship, the third perhaps that of Viracocha, and the last sun-worship pure and simple. There was, however, an "official" legend, which stated that the sun had three sons, Viracocha, Pachacamac, and Manco Ccapac. To the last the dominion of mankind was given, whilst the others were concerned with the workings of the universe. This politic arrangement placed all the power, temporal and spiritual, in the hands of the reputed descendants of Manco Ccapac the Incas.

Worship of the Sea

The ancient Peruvians worshipped the sea as well as the earth, the folk inland regarding it as a menacing deity, whilst the people of the coast revered it as a god of benevolence, calling it Mama-cocha, or Mother-sea, as it yielded them subsistence in the form of fish on which they chiefly lived. They worshipped the whale, fairly common on that coast, because of its enormous size, and various districts regarded with adoration the species of fish most abundant there. This worship can have partaken in no sense of the nature of totemism, as the system forbade that the totem animal should be eaten. It was imagined that the prototype of each variety of fish dwelt in the upper world, just as many tribes of North American Indians believe that the eponymous ancestors of certain animals dwell at the four points of the compass or in the sky above them. This great fish-god engendered the others of his species, and sent them into the waters of the deep that they might exist there until taken for the use of man. Birds, too, had their eponymous counterparts among the stars, as had animals. Indeed, among many of the South American races, ancient and modern, the constellations were called after certain beasts and birds.

Viracocha

The Aymara-Quichua race worshipped Viracocha as a great culture hero. They did not offer him sacrifices or tribute, as they thought that he, being creator and possessor of all things, needed nothing from men, so they only gave him worship. After him they idolised the sun. They believed, indeed, that Viracocha had made both sun and moon, after emerging from Lake Titicaca, and that then he made the earth and peopled it. On his travels westward from the lake he was sometimes assailed by men, but he revenged himself by sending terrible storms upon them and destroying their property, so they humbled themselves and acknowledged him as their lord. He forgave them and taught them everything, obtaining from them the name of Pachayachachic. In the end he disappeared in the western ocean. He either created or there were born with him four beings who, according to mythical beliefs, civilised Peru. To them he assigned the four quarters of the earth, and they are thus known as the our winds, north, south, east, and west. One legend avers they came from the cave Pacari, the Lodging of the Dawn.

Sun-Worship in Peru

The name "Inca" means "People of the Sun," which luminary the Incas regarded as their creator. But they

did not worship him totemically—that is, they did not claim him as a progenitor, although they regarded him as possessing the attributes of a man. And here we may observe a difference between Mexican and Peruvian sun-worship, For whereas the Nahua primarily regarded the orb as the abode of the Man of the Sun, who came to earth in the shape of Quetzalcoatl, the Peruvians looked upon the sun itself as the deity. The Inca race did not identify their ancestors as children of the sun until a comparatively late date. Sun-worship was introduced by the Inca Pachacutic, who averred that the sun appeared to him in a dream and addressed him as his child. Until that time the worship of the sun had always been strictly subordinated to that of the creator, and the deity appeared only as second in the trinity of creator, sun, and thunder. But permanent provision was made for sacrifices to the sun before the other deities were so recognised, and as the conquests of the Incas grew wider and that provision extended to the new territories they came to be known as "the Lands of the Sun, the natives observing the dedication of a part of the country to the luminary, and concluding therefrom that it applied to the whole. The material reality of the sun would enormously assist his cult among a people who were too barbarous to appreciate an unseen god, and this colonial conception reacting upon the mother-land would undoubtedly inspire the military class with a resolve to strengthen a worship so popular in the conquered provinces, and of which they were in great measure the protagonists and missionaries.

The Sun's Possessions

In every Peruvian village the sun had considerable possessions. His estates resembled those of a territorial chieftain, and consisted of a dwelling-house, a *chacra*, or portion of land, flocks of llamas and *pacos*, and a number of women dedicated to his service. The cultivation of the soil within the solar enclosure devolved upon the inhabitants of the neighbouring village, the produce of their toil being stored in the *intihuasi*, or sun's house. The Women of the Sun prepared the daily food and drink of the luminary, which consisted of maize and *chicha*. They also spun wool and wove it into fine stuff, which was burned in order that it might ascend to the celestial regions, where the deity could make use of it. Each village reserved a portion of its solar produce for the great festival at Cuzco, and it was carried thither on the backs of llamas which were destined for sacrifice.

Inca Occupation of Titicaca

The Rock of Titicaca, the renowned place of the sun's origin, naturally became an important centre of his worship. The date at which the worship of the sun originated at this famous rock is extremely remote, but we may safely assume that it was long before the conquest of the Collao by the Apu-Ccapac-Inca Pachacutic, and that reverence for the luminary as a war-god by the Colla chiefs was noticed by Tupac, who in suppressing the revolt concluded that the local observance at the rock had some relationship to the disturbance. It is, however, certain that Tupac proceeded after the reconquest to establish at this natural centre of sun-worship solar rites on a new basis, with the evident intention of securing on behalf of the Incas of Cuzco such exclusive benefit as might accrue from the complete possession of the sun's *paccarisca*. According to a native account, a venerable *colla* (or hermit), consecrated to the service of the sun, had proceeded on foot from Titicaca to Cuzco for the purpose of commending this ancient seat of

sun-worship to the notice of Tupac. The consequence was that Apu-Ccapac-Inca, after visiting the island and inquiring into the ancient local customs, re-established them in a more regular form. His accounts can hardly be accepted in face of the facts which have been gathered. Rather did it naturally follow that Titicaca became subservient to Tupac after the revolt of the Collao had been quelled. Henceforth the worship of the sun at the place of his origin was entrusted to Incas resident in the place, and was celebrated with Inca rites. The island was converted into a solar estate and the aboriginal inhabitants removed. The land was cultivated and the slopes of the hills levelled, maize was sown and the soil consecrated, the grain being regarded as the gift of the sun. This work produced considerable change in the island. Where once was waste and idleness there was now fertility and industry. The harvests were skilfully apportioned, so much being reserved for sacrificial purposes, the remainder being sent to Cuzco, partly to be sown in the *chacras*, or estates of the sun, throughout Peru, partly to be preserved in the granary of the Inca and the huacas as a symbol that there would be abundant crops in the future and that the grain already stored would be preserved. A building of the Women of the Sun was erected about a mile from the rock, so that the produce might be available for sacrifices. For their maintenance, tribute of potatoes, oca, and quinoa was levied upon the inhabitants of the villages on the shores of the lake, and of maize upon the people of the neighbouring valleys.

Pilgrimages to Titicaca

Titicaca at the time of the conquest was probably more frequented than Pachacamac itself. These two places were held to be the cardinal shrines of the two great huacas, the creator and the sun respectively. A special reason for pilgrimage to Titicaca was to sacrifice to the sun, as the source of physical energy and the giver of long life; and he was especially worshipped by the aged, who believed he had preserved their lives.

Then followed the migration of pilgrims to Titicaca, for whose shelter houses were built at Capacahuana, and large stores of maize were provided for their use. The ceremonial connected with the sacred rites of the rock was rigorously observed. The pilgrim ere embarking on the raft which conveyed him to the island must first confess his sins to a *huillac* (a seaker to an object of worship); then further confessions were required at each of the three sculptured doors which had successively to be passed before reaching the sacred rock. The first door (Puma-puncu) was surmounted by the figure of a puma; the others (Quenti-puncu and Pillco-puncu) were ornamented with feathers of the different species of birds commonly sacrificed to the sun. Having passed the last portal, the traveller beheld at a distance of two hundred paces the sacred rock itself, the summit glittering with gold-leaf. He was permitted to proceed no further, for only the officials were allowed entry into it. The pilgrim on departing received a few grains of the sacred maize grown on the island. These he kept with care and placed with his own store, believing they would preserve his stock. The confidence the Indian placed in the virtue of the Titicaca maize may be judged from the prevalent belief that the possessor of a single grain would not suffer from starvation during the whole of his life.

Sacrifices to the New Sun

The Intip-Raymi, or Great Festival of the Sun, was celebrated by the Incas at Cuzco at the winter solstice. In connection with it the Tarpuntaita-cuma, or sacrificing Incas, were charged with a remarkable duty, the worshippers journeying eastward to meet one of these functionaries on his way. On the principal hill-tops between Cuzco and Huillcanuta, on the road to the rock of Titicaca, burnt offerings of llamas, coca, and maize were made at the feast to greet the arrival of the young sun from his ancient birthplace. Molina has enumerated more than twenty of these places of sacrifice. The striking picture of the celebration of the solar sacrifice on these bleak mountains in the depth of the Peruvian winter has, it seems, no parallel in the religious rites of the ancient Americans. Quitting their thatched houses at early dawn, the worshippers left the valley below, carrying the sacrificial knife and brazier, and conducting the white llama, heavily laden with fuel, maize, and coca leaves, wrapped in fine cloth, to the spot where the sacrifice was to be made. When sunrise appeared the pile was lighted. The victim was slain and thrown upon it. The scene then presented a striking contrast to the bleak surrounding wilderness. As the flames grew in strength and the smoke rose higher and thicker the clear atmosphere was gradually illuminated from the east. When the sun advanced above the horizon the sacrifice was at its height. But for the crackling of the flames and the murmur of a babbling stream on its way down the hill to join the river below, the silence had hitherto been unbroken. As the sun rose the Incas marched slowly round the burning mass, plucking the wool from the scorched carcase, and chanting monotonously: "O Creator, Sun and Thunder, be for ever young! Multiply the people; let them ever be in peace!"

The Citoc Raymi

The most picturesque if not the most important solar festival was that of the Citoc Raymi (Gradually Increasing Sun), held in June, when nine days were given up to the ceremonial. A rigorous fast was observed for three days previous to the event, during which no fire must be kindled. On the fourth day the Inca, accompanied by the people *en masse*, proceeded to the great square of Cuzco to hail the rising sun, which they awaited in silence. On its appearance they greeted it with a joyous tumult, and joining in procession, marched to the Golden Temple of the Sun, where llamas were sacrificed, and a new fire was kindled by means of an arched mirror, followed by sacrificial offerings of grain, flowers, animals, and aromatic gums. This festival may be taken as typical of all the seasonal celebrations. The Inca calendar was purely agricultural in its basis, and marked in its great festivals the renewal or abandonment of the labours of the field. Its astronomical observations were not more advanced than those of the calendars of many American races otherwise inferior in civilisation.

Human Sacrifice in Peru

Writers ignorant of their subject have often dwelt upon the absence of human sacrifice in ancient Peru, and have not hesitated to draw comparisons between Mexico and the empire of the Incas in this respect, usually not complimentary to the former. Such statements are contradicted by the clearest evidence. Human sacrifice was certainly not nearly so prevalent in Peru, but that it was regular and by no means rare is well authenticated. Female victims to the sun were taken from the great class of Acllacuna (Selected Ones), a general tribute of female children regularly levied throughout the Inca Empire.

Beautiful girls were taken from their parents at the age of eight by the Inca officials, and were handed over to certain female trainers called *mamacuna* (mothers). These matrons systematically trained their protégées in housewifery and ritual. Residences or convents called *aclla-huasi* (houses of the Selected) were provided for them in the principal cities.

Methods of Medicine-Men

A quaint account of the methods of the medicinemen of the Indians of the Peruvian Andes probably illustrates the manner in which the superstitions of a barbarian people evolve into a more stately ritual.

"It cannot be denied," it states, "that the *mohanes* [priests] have, by practice and tradition, acquired a knowledge of many plants and poisons, with which they effect surprising cures on the one hand, and do much mischief on the other, but the mania of ascribing the whole to a preternatural virtue occasions them to blend with their practice a thousand charms and superstitions. The most customary method of cure is to place two hammocks close to each other, either in the dwelling, or in the open air: in one of them the patient lies extended, and in the other the *mohane*, or *agorero*. The latter, in contact with the sick man, begins by rocking himself, and then proceeds, by a strain in falsetto, to call on the birds, quadrupeds, and fishes to give health to the patient. From time to time he rises on his seat, and makes a thousand extravagant gestures over the sick man, to whom he applies his powders and herbs, or sucks the wounded or diseased parts. If the malady augments, the *agorero*, having been joined by many of the people, chants a short hymn, addressed to the soul of the patient, with this burden: 'Thou must not go, thou must not go.' In repeating this he is joined by the people, until at length a terrible clamour is raised, and augmented in proportion as the sick man becomes still fainter and fainter, to the end that it may reach his ears. When all the charms are unavailing, and death approaches, the *mohane* leaps from his hammock, and betakes himself to flight, amid the multitude of sticks, stones, and clods of earth which are showered on him. Successively all those who belong to the nation assemble, and, dividing themselves into bands, each of them (if he who is in his last agonies is a warrior) approaches him, saying: 'Whither goest thou? Why dost thou leave us? With whom shall we proceed to the aucas [the enemies]?' They then relate to him the heroic deeds he has performed, the number of those he has slain, and the pleasures he leaves behind him. This is practised in different tones while some raise the voice, it is lowered by others and the poor sick man is obliged to support these importunities without a murmur, until the first symptoms of approaching dissolution manifest themselves. Then it is that he is surrounded by a multitude of females, some of whom forcibly close the mouth and eyes, others envelop him in the hammock, oppressing him with the whole of their weight, and causing him to expire before his time, and others, lastly, run to extinguish the candle, and dissipate the smoke, that the soul, not being able to perceive the hole through which it may escape, may remain entangled in the structure of the roof. That this may be speedily effected, and to prevent its return to the interior of the dwelling, they surround the entrances with filth, by the stench of which it may be expelled.

Death by Suffocation

"As soon as the dying man is suffocated by the closing of the mouth, nostrils, &c., and wrapt up in the covering of his bed, the most circumspect Indian, whether male or female, takes him in the arms in the best manner possible, and gives a *gentle* shriek, which echoes to the bitter lamentations of the immediate relatives, and to the cries of a thousand old women collected for the occasion. As long as this dismal howl subsists, the latter are subjected to a constant fatigue, raising the palm of the hand to wipe away the tears, and lowering it to dry it on the ground. The result of this alternate action is, that a circle of earth, which gives them a most hideous appearance, is collected about the eyelids and brows, and they do not wash themselves until the mourning is over. These first clamours conclude by several good pots of *masato*, to assuage the thirst of sorrow, and the company next proceed to make a great clatter among the utensils of the deceased: some break the kettles, and others the earthen pots, while others, again, burn the apparel, to the end that his memory may be the sooner forgotten. If the defunct has been a *cacique*, or powerful warrior, his exequies are performed after the manner of the Romans: they last for many days, all the people weeping in concert for a considerable space of time, at daybreak, at noon, in the evening, and at midnight. When the appointed hour arrives, the mournful music begins in front of the house of the wife and relatives, the heroic deeds of the deceased being chanted to the sound of instruments. All the inhabitants of the vicinity unite in chorus from within their houses, some chirping like birds, others howling like tigers, and the greater part of them chattering like monkeys, or croaking like frogs. They constantly leave off by having recourse to the *masato*, and by the destruction of whatever the deceased may have left behind him, the burning of his dwelling being that which concludes the ceremonies. Among some of the Indians, the nearest relatives cut off their hair as a token of their grief, agreeably to the practice of the Moabites, and other nations. . . .

The Obsequies of a Chief

"On the day of decease, they put the body, with its insignia, into a large earthen vessel, or painted jar) which they bury in one of the angles of the quarter, laying over it a covering of potter's clay, and throwing in earth until the grave is on a level with the surface of the ground. When the obsequies are over, they forbear to pay a visit to it, and lose every recollection of the name of the warrior. The Roamaynas disenterre their dead, as soon as they think that the fleshy parts have been consumed, and having washed the bones from the skeleton, which they place in a coffin of potter's clay, adorned with various symbols of death, like the hieroglyphics on the wrappers of the Egyptian mummies. In this state the skeleton is carried home, to the end that the survivors may bear the deceased in respectful memory, and not in imitation of those extraordinary voluptuaries of antiquity, who introduced into their most splendid festivals a spectacle of this nature, which, by reminding them of their dissolution, might stimulate them to taste, before it should overtake them, all the impure pleasures the human passions could afford them. A space of time of about a year being elapsed, the bones are once more inhumed, and the individual to whom they belonged forgotten for ever." [Skinner, *State of Peru*, pp. 271 *et seq.*]

Peruvian Myths

Peru is not so rich in myths as Mexico, but the following legends well illustrate the mythological ideas of

the Inca race:

The Vision of Yupanqui

The Inca Yupanqui before he succeeded to the sovereignty is said to have gone to visit his father, Viracocha Inca. On his way he arrived at a fountain called Susur-pugaio. There he saw a piece of crystal fall into the fountain, and in this crystal he saw the figure of an Indian, with three bright rays as of the sun coming from the back of his head. He wore a *hauiu*, or royal fringe, across the forehead like the Inca. Serpents wound round his arms and over his shoulders. He had ear-pieces in his ears like the Incas, and was also dressed like them. There was the head of a lion between his legs, and another lion was about his shoulders. Inca Yupanqui took fright at this strange figure, and was running away when a voice called to him by name telling him not to be afraid, because it was his father, the sun, whom he beheld, and that he would conquer many nations, but he must remember his father-in his sacrifices and raise revenues for him, and pay him great reverence. Then the figure vanished, but the crystal remained, and the Inca afterwards saw all he wished in it. When he became king he had a statue of the sun made, resembling the figure as closely as possible, and ordered all the tribes he had conquered to build splendid temples and worship the new deity instead of the creator.

The Bird Bride

The Canaris Indians are named from the province of Canaribamba, in Quito, and they have several myths regarding their origin. One recounts that at the deluge two brothers fled to a very high mountain called Huacaquan, and as the waters rose the hill ascended simultaneously, so that they escaped drowning. When the flood was over they had to find food in the valleys, and they built a tiny house and lived on herbs and roots. They were surprised one day when they went home to find food already prepared for them and *chicha* to drink. This continued for ten days. Then the elder brother decided to hide himself and discover who brought the food. Very soon two birds, one Aqua, the other Torito (otherwise *quacamayo* birds), appeared dressed as Canaris, and wearing their hair fastened in the same way. The larger bird removed the *Ilicella*, or mantle the Indians wear, and the man saw that they had beautiful faces and discovered that the bird-like beings were in reality women. When he came out the bird-women were very angry and flew away. When the younger brother came home and found no food he was annoyed, and determined to hide until the bird-women returned. After ten days the *quacamayos* appeared again on their old mission, and while they were busy the watcher contrived to close the door, and so prevented the younger bird from escaping. She lived with the brothers for a long time, and became the mother of six sons and daughters, from whom all the Canaris proceed. Hence the tribe look upon the *quacamayo* birds with reverence) and use their feathers at their festivals.

Thonapa

Some myths tell of a divine personage called Thonapa, who appears to have been a hero-god or civilising

agent like Quetzalcoatl. He seems to have devoted his life to preaching to the people in the various villages, beginning in the provinces of Colla-suya. When he came to Yamquisupa he was treated so badly that he would not remain there. He slept in the open air, clad only in a long shirt and a mantle, and carried a book. He cursed the village. It was soon immersed in water, and is now a lake. There was an idol in the form of a woman to which the people offered sacrifice at the top of a high hill, Cachapucara. This idol Thonapa detested, so he burnt it, and also destroyed the hill. On another occasion Thonapa cursed a large assembly of people who were holding a great banquet to celebrate a wedding, because they refused to listen to his preaching. They were all changed into stones, which are visible to this day. Wandering through Peru, Thonapa came to the mountain of Caravaya, and after raising a very large cross he put it on his shoulders and took it to the hill Carapucu, where he preached so fervently that he shed tears. A chief's daughter got some of the water on her head, and the Indians, imagining that he was washing his head (a ritual offence), took him prisoner near the Lake of Carapucu. Very early the next morning a beautiful youth appeared to Thonapa, and told him not to fear, for he was sent from the divine guardian who watched over him. He released Thonapa, who escaped, though he was well guarded. He went down into the lake, his mantle keeping him above the water as a boat would have done. After Thonapa had escaped from the barbarians he remained on the rock of Titicaca, afterwards going to the town of Tiya-manacu, where again he cursed the people and turned them into stones. They were too bent upon amusement to listen to his preaching. He then followed the river Chacamarca till it reached the sea, and, like Quetzalcoatl, disappeared. This is good evidence that he was a solar deity, or man of the sun, who, his civilising labours completed, betook himself to the house of his father.

A Myth of Manco Ccapac Inca

When Manco Ccapac Inca was born a staff which had been given to his father turned into gold. He had seven brothers and sisters, and at his father's death he assembled all his people in order to see how much he could venture in making fresh conquests. He and his brothers supplied themselves with rich clothing, new arms, and the golden staff called *tapac-yauri* (royal sceptre). He had also two cups of gold from which Thonapa had drunk, called *tapacusi*. They proceeded to the highest point in the country, a mountain where the sun rose, and Manco Ccapac saw several rainbows, which he interpreted as a sign of good fortune. Delighted with the favouring symbols, he sang the song of Chamayhuarisca (The Song of Joy). Manco Ccapac: wondered why a brother who had accompanied him did not return, and sent one of his sisters in search of him, but she also did not come back, so he went himself, and found both nearly dead beside a *huaca*. They said they could not move, as the *huaca*, a stone, retarded them. In a great rage Manco struck this stone with his *tapac-yauri*. It spoke, and said that had it not been for his wonderful golden staff he would have had no power over it. It added that his brother and sister had sinned, and therefore must remain with it (the *huaca*) in the lower regions, but that Manco was to be "greatly honoured." The sad fate of his brother and sister troubled Manco exceedingly, but on going back to the place where he first saw the rainbows he got comfort from them and strength to bear his grief.

Coniraya Viracocha

Coniraya Viracocha was a tricky nature spirit who declared he was the creator, but who frequently appeared attired as a poor ragged Indian. He was an adept at deceiving people. A beautiful woman, Cavillaca, who was greatly admired, was one day weaving a mantle at the foot of a *lucma* tree. Coniraya, changing himself into a beautiful bird, climbed the tree, took some of his generative seed, made it into a ripe *lucma*, and dropped it near the beautiful virgin, who saw and ate the fruit. Some time afterwards a son was born to Cavillaca. When the child was older she wished that the *huacas* and gods should meet and declare who was the father of the boy. All dressed as finely as possible, hoping to be chosen as her husband. Coniraya was there, dressed like a beggar, and Cavillaca never even looked at him. The maiden addressed the assembly, but as no one immediately answered her speech she let the child go, saying he would be sure to crawl to his father. The infant went straight up to Coniraya, sitting in his rags, and laughed up to him. Cavillaca, extremely angry at the idea of being associated with such a poor, dirty creature, fled to the seashore. Coniraya then put on magnificent attire and followed her to show her how handsome he was, but still thinking of him in his ragged condition she would not look back. She went into the sea at Pachacamac and was changed into a rock. Coniraya, still following her, met a condor, and asked if it had seen a woman. On the condor replying that it had seen her quite near, Coniraya blessed it, and said whoever killed it would be killed himself. He then met a fox, who said he would never meet Cavillaca, so Coniraya told him he would always retain his disagreeable odour, and on account of it he would never be able to go abroad except at night, and that he would be hated by every one. Next came a lion, who told Coniraya he was very near Cavillaca, so the lover said he should have the power of punishing wrongdoers, and that whoever killed him would wear the skin without cutting off the head, and by preserving the teeth and eyes would make him appear still alive; his skin would be worn at festivals, and thus he would be honoured after death. Then another fox who gave bad news was cursed, and a falcon who said Cavillaca was near was told he would be highly esteemed, and that whoever killed him would also wear his skin at festivals. The parrots, giving bad news, were to cry so loud that they would be heard far away, and their cries would betray them to enemies. Thus Coniraya blessed the animals which gave him news he liked, and cursed those which gave the opposite. When at last he came to the sea he found Cavillaca and the child turned into stone, and there he encountered two beautiful young daughters of Pachacamac, who guarded a great serpent. He made love to the elder sister, but the younger one flew away in the form of a wild pigeon. At that time there were no fishes in the sea, but a certain goddess had reared a few in a small pond, and Coniraya emptied these into the ocean and thus peopled it. The angry deity tried to outwit Coniraya and kill him, but he was too wise and escaped. He returned to Huarochiri, and played tricks as before on the villagers.

Coniraya slightly approximates to the Jurupari of the Uapès Indians of Brazil, especially as regards his impish qualities. [See Spence, article "Brazil" in *Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics* vol. ii.]

The Llama's Warning

An old Peruvian myth relates how the world was nearly left without an inhabitant. A man took his llama to a fine place for feeding, but the beast moaned and would not eat, and on its master questioning it, it said there was little wonder it was sad, because in five days the sea would rise and engulf the earth. The man, alarmed, asked if there was no way of escape, and the llama advised him to go to the top of a high

mountain, Villa-Coto, taking food for five days. When they reached the summit of the hill all kinds of birds and animals were already there. When the sea rose the water came so near that it washed the tail of a fox, and that is why foxes' tails are black! After five days the water fell, leaving only this one man alive, and from him the Peruvians believed the present human race to be descended.

The Myth of Huathlacuri

After the deluge the Indians chose the bravest and richest man as leader. This period they called Purunpacha (the time without a king). On a high mountain-top appeared five large eggs, from one of which Paricaca, father of Huathiacuri, later emerged. Huathiacuri, who was so poor that he had not means to cook his food properly, learned much wisdom from his father, and the following story shows how this assisted him. A certain man had built a most curious house, the roof being made of yellow and red birds' feathers. He was very rich, possessing many llamas, and was greatly esteemed on account of his wealth. So proud did he become that he aspired to be the creator himself; but when he became very ill and could not cure himself his divinity seemed doubtful. Just at this time Huathiacuri was travelling about, and one day he saw two foxes meet and listened to their conversation. From this he heard about the rich man and learned the cause of his illness, and forthwith he determined to go on to find him. On arriving at the curious house he met a lovely young girl, one of the rich man's daughters. She told him about her father's illness, and Huathiacuri, charmed with her, said he would cure her father if she would only give him her love. He looked so ragged and dirty that she refused, but she took him to her father and informed him that Huathiacuri said he could cure him. Her father consented to give him an opportunity to do so. Huathiacuri began his cure by telling the sick man that his wife had been unfaithful, and that there were two serpents hovering above his house to devour it, and a toad with two heads under his grinding-stone. His wife at first indignantly denied the accusation, but on Huathiacuri reminding her of some details, and the serpents and toad being discovered, she confessed her guilt. The reptiles were killed, the man recovered, and the daughter was married to Huathiacuri.

Huathiacuri's poverty and raggedness displeased the girl's brother-in-law, who suggested to the bridegroom a contest in dancing and drinking. Huathiacuri went to seek his father's advice, and the old man told him to accept the challenge and return to him. Paricaca then sent him to a mountain, where he was changed into a dead llama. Next morning a fox and its vixen carrying a jar of *chicha* came, the fox having a flute of many pipes. When they saw the dead llama they laid down their things and went toward it to have a feast, but Huathiacuri then resumed his human form and gave a loud cry that frightened away the foxes, whereupon he took possession of the jar and flute. By the aid of these, which were magically endowed, he beat his brother-in-law in dancing and drinking.

Then the brother-in-law proposed a contest to prove who was the handsomer when dressed in festal attire. By the aid of Paricaca Huathiacuri found a red lion-skin, which gave him the appearance of having a rainbow round his head, and he again won.

The next trial was to see who could build a house the quickest and best. The brother-in-law got all his men to help, and had his house nearly finished before the other had his foundation laid. But here again

Paricaca's wisdom proved of service, for Huathiacuri got animals and birds of all kinds to help him during the night, and by morning the building was finished except the roof. His brother-in-law got many llamas to come with straw for his roof, but Huathiacuri ordered an animal to stand where its loud screams frightened the llamas away, and the straw was lost. Once more Huathiacuri won the day. At last Paricaca advised Huathiacuri to end this conflict, and he asked his brother-in-law to see who could dance best in a blue shirt with white cotton round the loins. The rich man as usual appeared first, but when Huathiacuri came in he made a very loud noise and frightened him, and he began to run away. As he ran Huathiacuri turned him into a deer. His wife, who had followed him, was turned into a stone, with her head on the ground and her feet in the air, because she had given her husband such bad advice.

The four remaining eggs on the mountain-top then opened, and four falcons issued, which turned into four great warriors. These warriors performed many miracles, one of which consisted in raising a storm which swept away the rich Indian's house in a flood to the sea.

Paricaca

Having assisted in the performance of several miracles, Paricaca set out determined to do great deeds. He went to find Caruyuchu Huayallo, to whom children were sacrificed. He came one day to a village where a festival was being celebrated, and as he was in very poor clothes no one took any notice of him or offered him anything, till a young girl, taking pity on him, brought him *chicha* to drink. In gratitude Paricaca told her to seek a place of safety for herself, as the village would be destroyed after five days, but she was to tell no one of this. Annoyed at the inhospitality of the people, Paricaca then went to a hill-top and sent down a fearful storm and flood, and the whole village was destroyed. Then he came to another village, now San Lorenzo. He saw a very beautiful girl, Choque Suso, crying bitterly. Asking her why she wept, she said the maize crop was dying for want of water. Paricaca at once fell in love with this girl, and after first damming up the little water there was, and thus leaving none for the crop, he told her he would give her plenty of water if she would only return his love. She said he must get water not only for her own crop but for all the other farms before she could consent. He noticed a small rill, from which, by opening a dam, he thought he might get a sufficient supply of water for the farms. He then got the assistance of the birds in the hills, and animals such as snakes, lizards, and so on, in removing any obstacles in the way, and they widened the channel so that the water irrigated all the land. The fox with his usual cunning managed to obtain the post of engineer, and carried the canal to near the site of the church of San Lorenzo. Paricaca, having accomplished what he had promised, begged Choque Suso to keep her word, which she willingly did, but she proposed living at the summit of some rocks called Yanacaca. There the lovers stayed very happily, at the head of the channel called Coccohallo, the making of which had united them; and as Choque Suso wished to remain there always, Paricaca eventually turned her into a stone.

In all likelihood this myth was intended to account for the invention of irrigation among the early Peruvians, and from being a local legend probably spread over the length and breadth of the country.

Conclusion

The advance in civilisation attained by the peoples of America must be regarded as among the most striking phenomena in the history of mankind, especially if it be viewed as an example of what can be achieved by isolated races occupying a peculiar environment. It cannot be too strongly emphasised that the cultures and mythologies of old Mexico and Peru were evolved without foreign assistance or intervention, that, in fact, they were distinctively and solely the fruit of American aboriginal thought evolved upon American soil. An absorbing chapter in the story of human advancement is provided by these peoples, whose architecture, arts, graphic and plastic, laws and religions prove them to have been the equals of most of the Asiatic nations of antiquity, and the superiors of the primitive races of Europe, who entered into the heritage of civilisation through the gateway of the East. The aborigines of ancient America had evolved for themselves a system of writing which at the period of their discovery was approaching the alphabetic type, a mathematical system unique and by no means despicable, and an architectural science in some respects superior to any of which the Old World could boast. Their legal codes were reasonable and founded upon justice; and if their religions were tainted with cruelty, it was a cruelty which they regarded as inevitable, and as the doom placed upon them by sanguinary and insatiable deities and not by any human agency.

In comparing the myths of the American races with the deathless stories of Olympus or the scarcely less classic tales of India, frequent resemblances and analogies cannot fail to present themselves, and these are of value as illustrating the circumstance that in every quarter of the globe the mind of man has shaped for itself a system of faith based upon similar principles. But in the perusal of the myths and beliefs of Mexico and Peru we are also struck with the strangeness and remoteness alike of their subject-matter and the type of thought which they present. The result of centuries of isolation is evident in a profound contrast of "atmosphere." It seems almost as if we stood for a space upon the dim shores of another planet, spectators of the doings of a race of whose modes of thought and feeling we were entirely ignorant.

For generations these stories have been hidden, along with the memory of the gods and folk of whom they tell, beneath a thick dust of neglect, displaced here and there only by the efforts of antiquarians working singly and unaided. Nowadays many well-equipped students are striving to add to our knowledge of the civilisations of Mexico and Peru. To the mythical stories of these peoples, alas! we cannot add. The greater part of them perished in the flames of the Spanish *autos-de-fé*. But for those which have survived we must be grateful, as affording so many casements through which we may catch the glitter and gleam of civilisations more remote and bizarre than those of the Orient, shapes dim yet gigantic, misty yet many-coloured, the ghosts of peoples and beliefs not the least splendid and solemn in the roll of dead nations and vanished faiths.

Myths of Mexican and Peru: Illustrations

[Map of the Valley of Mexico](#)

mmp2a.gif 185,454 bytes

[Ethnographical Map of Mexico from Manuel Orozco Y Berra](#) *mmp2b.jpg (44,666 bytes) and mmp2c.jpg (58,812 bytes)*

[Map of Inca Empire](#) *mmp3.jpg (59,159 bytes)*

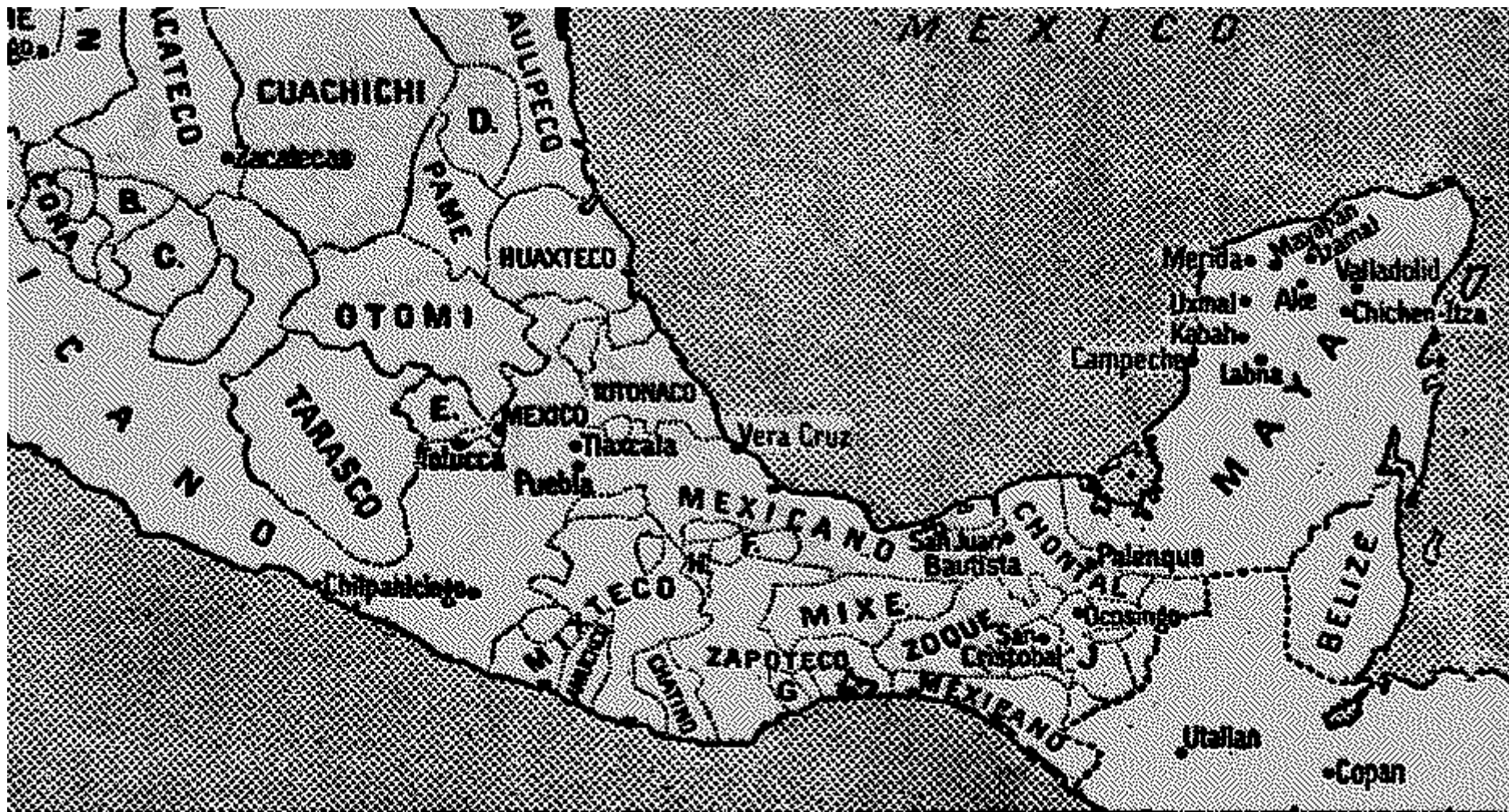


MAP OF THE VALLEY OF MEXICO

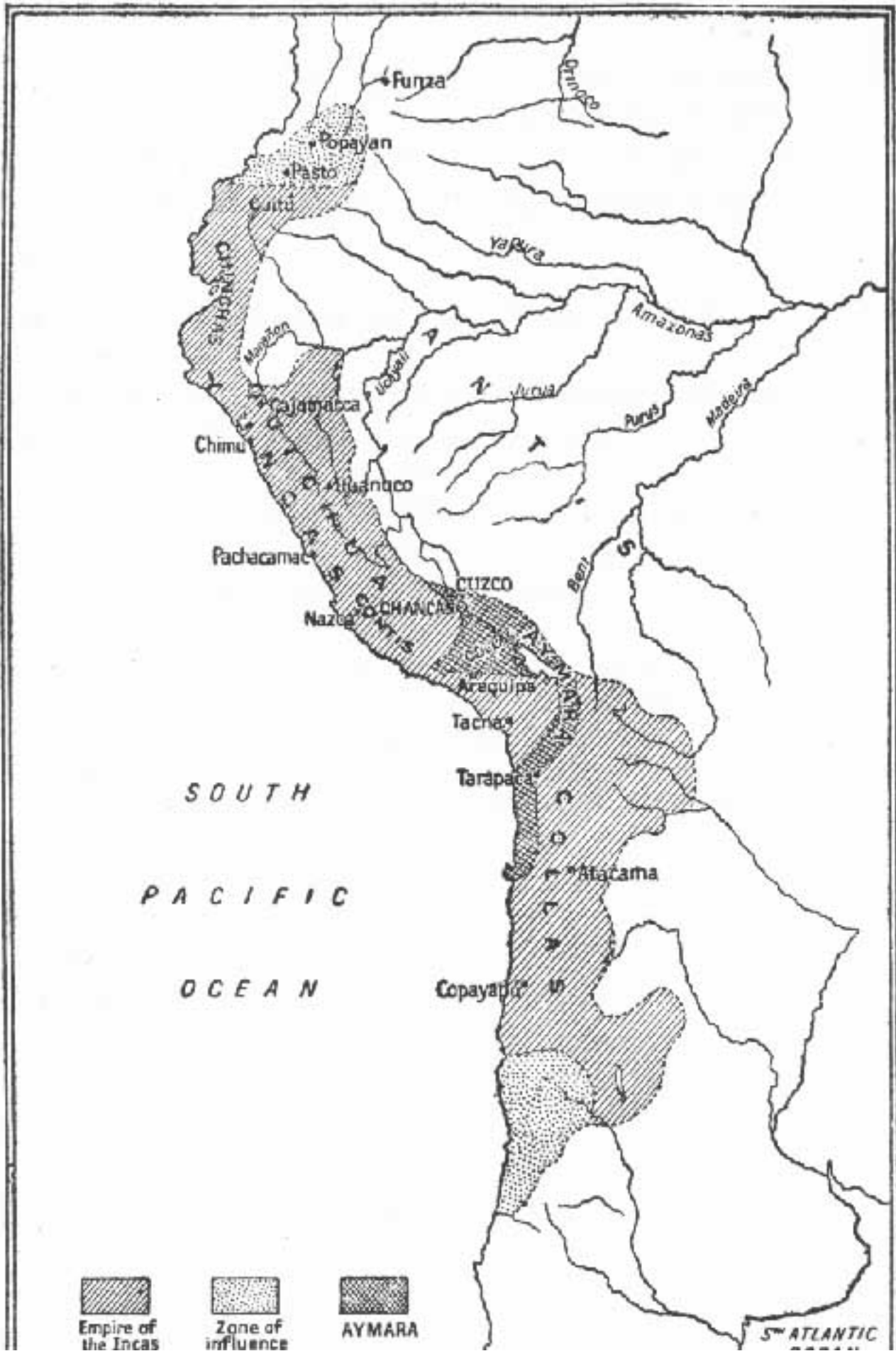
ETHNOGRAPHICAL MAP OF MEXICO FROM MANUEL OROZCO Y BERRA

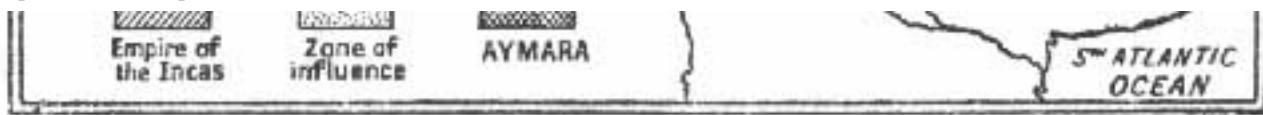


The names of the smaller areas are shown in the margin, with indicators A, B, C, &c.



This is an enlargement of the southeastern area of the map above.





DISTRIBUTION OF THE RACES UNDER THE EMPIRE OF THE INCAS

The Internet Sacred Text Archive

Open Source for the Human Soul



A thousand books on one disk!
 Your purchase of the Sacred Texts CD-ROM
 keeps this site online for continued free access
 worldwide.

[World Religions](#) [Traditions](#) [Mysteries](#)

What's New?

(Updated 1/28/2004)

most recent texts:

[Mahabharata Book 15: Asramavasika Parva](#)

[Mahabharata Book 14: Aswamedha Parva](#)

[Mahabharata Book 6: Bhishma Parva](#)

[How I Found the Lost Atlantis, by Paul Schliemann](#)

[The Fairy-Faith in Celtic Countries \(updated\)](#)

Works in Progress (1/28/2004)

The complete overhaul of [The Fairy Faith in Celtic Countries](#) is done. This is a greatly improved version of this text, with numerous corrections

This is a quiet place in cyberspace devoted to religious tolerance and scholarship



HELP KEEP SACRED-TEXTS ONLINE

It costs hundreds of dollars a month to pay for this sites' bandwidth and maintenance. Your continued support is vital to keeping this site online without subscription fees or advertising.



The best way to support the site is to [purchase the CD-ROM](#). If you've already purchased the CD-ROM, or you can't afford it, you can also [donate directly using PayPal](#) in any amount. The Sacred-texts CD-ROM has hundreds of books on it that are extremely hard to locate, including all of the major world scriptures. If you buy a copy, you can feel good knowing that you are helping keep this

Topics

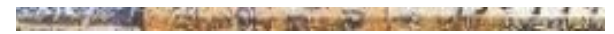
- [African](#)
- [Age of Reason](#)
- [Alchemy](#)
- [Americana](#)
- [Ancient Near East](#)
- [Atlantis](#)
- [Asia](#)
- [Australia](#)
- [Baha'i](#)

[Bible](#)
[Book of Shadows](#)
[Buddhism](#)
[Christianity](#)
[Celtic](#)
[Classics](#)
[Confucianism](#)
[DNA](#)
[Egyptian](#)
[England](#)
[Esoteric & Occult](#)
[Evil](#)
[Fortean](#)
[Goddesses](#)
[Gothic](#)
[Grimoires](#)
[Hinduism](#)
[I Ching](#)
[Islam](#)
[Jainism](#)
[Journals](#)
[Judaism](#)
[Legends and Sagas](#)
[Miscellaneous](#)
[Mormonism](#)
[Native American](#)
[Neopaganism/Wicca](#)
[Nostradamus](#)
[Oahspe](#)
[Pacific](#)
[Paleolithic](#)
[Piri Re'is Map](#)
[Prophecy](#)
[Sacred Books of the East](#)
[Sacred Sexuality](#)
[Sacred Time](#)
[Shamanism](#)
[Shinto](#)
[Sikhism](#)
[Sky Lore](#)

(and one previously missing chapter), formatted to current site standards.

Sales of the CD-ROM have been a bit slow lately. Two points to note: 1) if your credit card is maxed out post-xmas, you can buy it via PayPal using your checking account; 2) If you can't afford the 3.0 CD-ROM, you can also [donate \\$20 or more](#) and I'll send you the previous (2.0) version (see the sidebar to the right). Either way, the support would be appreciated; there is another quarterly hosting fee payment coming up next month, and it's liable to be a big one, as bandwidth usage at the site continued to rise in the last three months.

site online.



I still have a few dozen copies of older versions of the CD-ROM in stock. For a limited time only, make a [donation of \\$20 or more via PayPal](#), and I'll send you an copy of the 2.0 version of the CD-ROM. Hurry, supplies are limited! This offer will end when supplies run out.

--J.B. Hare

[Sufi](#)

[Tantra](#)

[Taoism](#)

[Tarot](#)

[Thelema](#)

[Theosophy](#)

[Timeline](#)

[Tolkien](#)

[UFOs](#)

[Utopia](#)

[Women](#)

[Zoroastrianism](#)